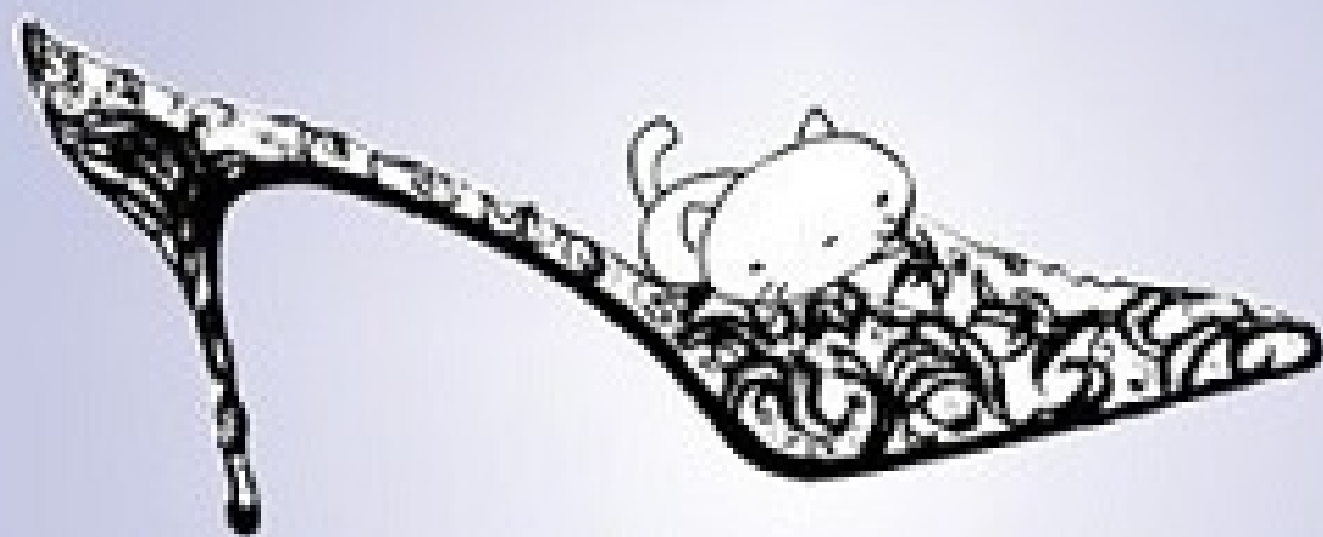




作茧自縛

飄阿兮著

這不是一個令人感到安全的地方，
危險的角落；誰和誰需要守著一生，
誰和誰約好：我未來的人生，誰都沒有意義。

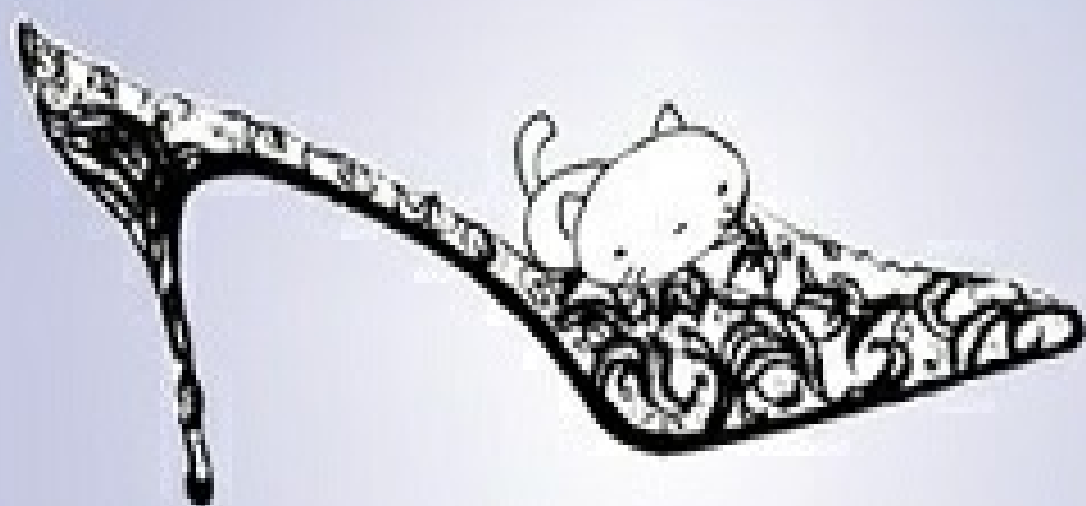




作茧自縛

飄阿兮 著

燕子是能夠令人感到安全的地方，
飛舞的雀：飛和飛是萬物導引一生的標誌。只是最後，
飛和飛的雀：飛和飛是萬物導引一生的標誌。只是最後，
飛和飛的雀：飛和飛是萬物導引一生的標誌。只是最後，



Caught in My Own Trap

Table of Contents

- 1. [Chapter 1.1 : Awkward Tanabata Night](#)
- 2. [Chapter 1.2 : Awkward Tanabata Night](#)
- 3. [Chapter 2.1 : Just like a brother, collected for nothing](#)
- 4. [Chapter 2.2 : Just like a brother, collected for nothing](#)
- 5. [Chapter 3.1: Before the Peach Blossom](#)
- 6. [Chapter 3.2: Before the Peach Blossom](#)
- 7. [Chapter 4.1: Just brothers and sisters](#)
- 8. [Chapter 4.2: Just brothers and sisters](#)
- 9. [Chapter 5.1: We are all already born with our Fate](#)
- 10. [Chapter 5.2: We are all already born with our Fate](#)
- 11. [Chapter 6.1 : Don't care is a good punishment](#)
- 12. [Chapter 6.2 : Don't care is a good punishment](#)
- 13. [Chapter 7.1 : The force is mutual](#)
- 14. [Chapter 7.2 : The force is mutual](#)
- 15. [Chapter 8.1 : Boring and harmonious pair](#)
- 16. [Chapter 8.2 : Boring and harmonious pair](#)
- 17. [Chapter 9.1 : You should have a girlfriend](#)
- 18. [Chapter 9.2 : You should have a girlfriend](#)
- 19. [Chapter 10.1 : The Premature Aging](#)
- 20. [Chapter 10.2 : The Premature Aging](#)
- 21. [Chapter 11.1 : Psychologically low tide](#)

- 22. [Chapter 11.2 : Psychologically low tide](#)
- 23. [Chapter 11.3 : Psychologically low tide](#)
- 24. [Chapter 12.1 : Knowing about the past](#)

25. [Chapter 12.2 : Knowing about the past](#)
26. [Chapter 12.3 : Knowing about the past](#)
27. [Chapter 12.4 : Knowing about the past](#)
28. [Chapter 12.5 : Knowing about the past](#)
29. [Chapter 13.1 : Turn left and Turn Right](#)
30. [Chapter 13.2 : Turn left and Turn Right](#)
31. [Chapter 13.3 : Turn left and Turn Right](#)
32. [Chapter 13.4 : Turn left and Turn Right](#)
33. [Chapter 14.1 : Our Childhood](#)
34. [Chapter 14.2 : Our Childhood](#)
35. [Chapter 15.1: A Special Corner](#)
36. [Chapter 15.2: A Special Corner](#)
37. [Chapter 16.1: Understanding that is too deep](#)
38. [Chapter 16.2: Understanding that is too deep](#)
39. [Chapter 16.3: Understanding that is too deep](#)
40. [Chapter 16.4: Understanding that is too deep](#)
41. [Chapter 16.5: Understanding that is too deep](#)
42. [Chapter 16.6: Understanding that is too deep](#)
43. [Chapter 16.7: Understanding that is too deep](#)
44. [Chapter 17.1: Heavy head supporting role on stage](#)
45. [Chapter 17.2: Heavy head supporting role on stage](#)
46. [Chapter 17.3: Heavy head supporting role on stage](#)
47. [Chapter 18.1: What a mess....](#)
48. [Chapter 18.2: What a mess....](#)
49. [Chapter 18.3: What a mess....](#)
50. [Chapter 18.4: What a mess....](#)
51. [Chapter 19.1: A little nerve disorder](#)
52. [Chapter 19.2: A little nerve disorder](#)
53. [Chapter 20.1: Something to hide \(心中有鬼\)](#)
54. [Chapter 20.2: Something to hide \(心中有鬼\)](#)
55. [Chapter 20.3: Something to hide \(心中有鬼\)](#)
56. [Chapter 21.1: A Sudden Big Change \(平地一声雷\)](#)
57. [Chapter 21.2: A Sudden Big Change \(平地一声雷\)](#)
58. [Chapter 21.3: A Sudden Big Change \(平地一声雷\)](#)

59. [Chapter 21.4: A Sudden Big Change \(平地一声雷\)](#)
60. [Chapter 21.5: A Sudden Big Change \(平地一声雷\)](#)
61. [Chapter 21.6: A Sudden Big Change \(平地一声雷\)](#)
62. [Chapter 21.7: A Sudden Big Change \(平地一声雷\)](#)
63. [Chapter 22.1: Two People's Time Machine \(两个人的时光机\)](#)
64. [Chapter 22.2: Two People's Time Machine \(两个人的时光机\)](#)
65. [Chapter 22.3: Two People's Time Machine \(两个人的时光机\)](#)
66. [Chapter 22.4: Two People's Time Machine \(两个人的时光机\)](#)
67. [Chapter 22.5: Two People's Time Machine \(两个人的时光机\)](#)
68. [Chapter 22.6: Two People's Time Machine \(两个人的时光机\)](#)
69. [Chapter 22.7: Two People's Time Machine \(两个人的时光机\)](#)
70. [Chapter 22.8: Two People's Time Machine \(两个人的时光机\)](#)
71. [Chapter 22.9: Two People's Time Machine \(两个人的时光机\)](#)
72. [Chapter 22.10: Two People's Time Machine \(两个人的时光机\)](#)
73. [Chapter 23.1: Rather that it is a dream](#)
74. [Chapter 23.2: Rather that it is a dream](#)
75. [Chapter 23.3: Rather that it is a dream](#)
76. [Chapter 23.4: Rather that it is a dream](#)
77. [Chapter 24.1: Losing something beautiful](#)
78. [Chapter 24.2: Losing something beautiful](#)
79. [Chapter 24.3: Losing something beautiful](#)
80. [Chapter 25.1: Separation does not mean pain](#)
81. [Chapter 25.2: Separation does not mean pain](#)
82. [Chapter 25.3: Separation does not mean pain](#)
83. [Chapter 25.4: Separation does not mean pain](#)
84. [Chapter 25.5: Separation does not mean pain](#)
85. [Chapter 25.6: Separation does not mean pain](#)
86. [Chapter 25.7: Separation does not mean pain](#)
87. [Chapter 26.1: Sense and Sensibility](#)
88. [Chapter 26.2: Sense and Sensibility](#)
89. [Chapter 26.3: Sense and Sensibility](#)
90. [Chapter 26.4: Sense and Sensibility](#)
91. [Chapter 26.5: Sense and Sensibility](#)
92. [Chapter 27.1: A quiet life](#)

93. [Chapter 27.2: A quiet life](#)
94. [Chapter 27.3: A quiet life](#)
95. [Chapter 27.4: A quiet life](#)
96. [Chapter 27.5: A quiet life](#)
97. [Chapter 27.6: A quiet life](#)
98. [Chapter 27.7: A quiet life](#)
99. [Chapter 27.8: A quiet life](#)
00. [Chapter 27.9: A quiet life](#)
01. [Chapter 27.10: A quiet life](#)
02. [Chapter 27.11: A quiet life](#)
03. [Chapter 27.12: A quiet life](#)
04. [Chapter 27.13: A quiet life](#)
05. [Chapter 27.14: A quiet life](#)
06. [Chapter 27.15: A quiet life](#)
07. [Chapter 27.16: A quiet life](#)
08. [Chapter 27.17: A quiet life](#)
09. [Chapter 27.18: A quiet life](#)
10. [Chapter 27.19: A quiet life](#)
11. [Chapter 27.20: A quiet life](#)
12. [Chapter 27.21: A quiet life](#)
13. [Chapter 27.22: A quiet life](#)
14. [Chapter 28.1: I want to marry you tomorrow](#)
15. [Chapter 28.2: I want to marry you tomorrow](#)
16. [Chapter 28.3: I want to marry you tomorrow](#)
17. [Chapter 28.4: I want to marry you tomorrow](#)
18. [Chapter 28.5: I want to marry you tomorrow](#)
19. [Chapter 29.1: Climbing up Half A Moon](#)
20. [Chapter 29.2: Climbing up Half A Moon](#)
21. [Chapter 29.3: Climbing up Half A Moon](#)
22. [Chapter 29.4: Climbing up Half A Moon](#)
23. [Chapter 29.5: Climbing up Half A Moon](#)
24. [Chapter 29.6: Climbing up Half A Moon](#)
25. [Chapter 29.7: Climbing up Half A Moon](#)
26. [Chapter 29.8: Climbing up Half A Moon](#)

27. [Chapter 29.9: Climbing up Half A Moon](#)
28. [Chapter 30.1: End of Autumn](#)
29. [Chapter 30.2: End of Autumn](#)
30. [Epilogue 1 – Part 1](#)
31. [Epilogue 1 – Part 2](#)
32. [Epilogue 2 – Part 1](#)
33. [Epilogue 2 – Part 2](#)
34. [Epilogue 2 – Part 3](#)
35. [Epilogue 2 – Part 4](#)
36. [Epilogue 3 – Part 1](#)
37. [Epilogue 3 – Part 2](#)
38. [Epilogue 3 – Part 3](#)
39. [Epilogue 3 – Part 4](#)
40. [Epilogue 3 – Part 5](#)
41. [Epilogue 3 – Part 6](#)
42. [Epilogue 3 – Part 7](#)
43. [Epilogue 3 – Part 8](#)
44. [Epilogue 3 – Part 9](#)
45. [Epilogue 3 – Part 10](#)
46. [Epilogue 3 – Part 11](#)
47. [Epilogue 3 – Part 12](#)
48. [Epilogue 3 – Part 13](#)
49. [Epilogue 3 – Part 14](#)
50. [Epilogue 3 – Part 15](#)
51. [Epilogue 3 – Part 16](#)
52. [Epilogue 3 – Part 17](#)
53. [Epilogue 3 – Part 18](#)
54. [Epilogue 3 – Part 19](#)
55. [Epilogue 3 – Part 20](#)
56. [Epilogue 3 – Part 21](#)
57. [Epilogue 3 – Part 22](#)
58. [Epilogue 3 – Part 23](#)
59. [Epilogue 3 – Part 24](#)
60. [Epilogue 3 – Part 25](#)

61. [Epilogue 3 – Part 26](#)
62. [Epilogue 3 – Part 27](#)
63. [Epilogue 3 – Part 28](#)
64. [Epilogue 3 – Part 29](#)
65. [Epilogue 3 – Part 30](#)
66. [Epilogue 3 – Part 31](#)
67. [Caught in my Own Trap Special: Life After Marriage – Part 1](#)
68. [Caught in my Own Trap Special: Life After Marriage – Part 2](#)
69. [Caught in my Own Trap Special: Life After Marriage – Part 3](#)
70. [Caught in my Own Trap Special: Life After Marriage – Part 4 \(FINAL\)](#)

Chapter 1.1 : Awkward Tanabata Night

Chapter 1.1 : Awkward Tanabata Night

“In this Tanabata Night, lonely people are shameful.”

Tanabata is a Japanese Festival, originating from Chinese Qixi Festival that is celebrated every year on July 7 (or August 7) in some places. When this time of the year comes around, people write their wishes on strips of paper and hang them on bamboo trees, along with decorations.

It celebrates the meeting of the deities Orihime and Hikoboshi (represented by stars Vega and Altair respectively). According to legend, the Milky Way separates these lovers allowing them to meet once a year on the seventh day of the seventh lunar month. For more information : [Wikipedia : Tanabata](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tanabata)

Almost missing the plane, Xiao He He just sat down, received a spam messages on her phone from dating site. She decided to delete the message.

Today is Tanabata Night, a very annoying festival.

Xiao He He quickly seize the time and send a text message: “My dearest Xiao Bao, your old mother is arriving at the airport at 20:30, quickly come and meet her.”

Zheng Xiao Bao is her rouge colleagues. This business trip was originally supposed to be done by him, however he came up with poor excuses and pushed Xiao He He to go for the trip instead.

So using the opportunity, she wanted to enslave him. Anyway, before she depart for the business trip, Xiao Bao was about to buy a car. While patting his chest, he vows that he will wait for her to come back and be his first passenger.

Xiao He He before boarding the plane, already had 2 bottles of beer and rice. However, she is still not full, therefore is now dizzily hungry, sleepy and tired. Her poor state of mind is making her unreasonable although on normal basis, she is not such a person.

She was looking for Zheng Xiao Bao’s cell number through the phone directory and when she finally found it, the passenger sitting next to her turn and touch

her. At the shake of the hand, she touch the “sent” button and in less than a second, the screen shows “sent successfully”.

She was shocked and with a heavy head, found out that the message was not sent to Zheng Xiao Bao but to Zheng Xie instead.

Cold sweat.... She quickly called Zheng Xie to explain but after a long ring, there is no answer.

Zheng Xie can't be that narrow minded. Xiao He He did not give up and tried calling again but still no answer.

Nevermind then, she should just add another text message to clarify everything.

Unfortunately this time, before she could finished writing the text message, her phone rang two ding and then ran out of battery.

Xiao He He got a little depressed.

Then she thought, Zheng Xie never seem to have ever returned any of her text messages. After all, she has always sent him messages with little valuable content. He probably saw the text message sent by her and chooses to ignore it as if there is anything urgent, she will always call him directly on the phone.

Moreover, Zheng Xie should not misunderstand. After all, how can she be so daring and be rude to him? His IQ is so high, he would have certainly guessed that she sent the message wrongly.

Today being Tanabata night, in theory, Zheng Xie should not be alone. During these time, he would most probably holding a glass of wine, sitting opposite a beautiful lady, would not be bothered with her mistakes.

With that thought, with a peace of mind, tilt her head to sleep.

However, before she fell asleep, she vaguely remembered that Zheng Xie's childhood nickname is also “Xiao Bao” Hence Xiao He He is not able to get a peaceful sleep.

The airport is still busy with the flow streams of people busily coming and going at night. Xiao He He and the young woman next to her, is greeted by

someone with a big open hug.

Such a hot day, holding so night, also not afraid of getting heat stroke.

Xiao He He does not want to admit that she is jealous. She just felt that it is immoral and now there are very limited hospital beds available.

As she takes her steps out into the airport lobby while wondering if taking the bus or taxi would cost more, He He suddenly heard a familiar voice. "Miss Xiao, here...". She turn and took a closer look to find Zheng Xie's personal driver, Wang Zheng.

Xiao He He is surprised. "Who are you coming to meet? Brother Zheng Xie is also on business trip? Or is...." Zheng Xie's girlfriend? She promptly swallowed these words.

"I came to pick up Miss Xiao. Please get into the car."

Xiao He He glanced up. Strange, the moon in the sky and the night is normal.

In the car, He He was told that young master Zheng Xie has been hospitalized in the afternoon due to high fever and is on drip.

A very tired Xiao He He, tiredly considered for 3 seconds, decided to express her humanitarian concern.

After all, she has known Zheng Xie for twenty-five years. In her impression, hospital is the kind of place, in addition to physical checkup, he will only go once every three or four years.

The hospital is not much better than a maze, after some time, finally reached the destination.

Really corrupted. Live in such a superior suite. More nervous to see the hospital beds.

Zheng Xie propped up on the bed with the drip hanging on his hand. His face is pale but his eyes were still clear. He sees her coming in, with no changes in his facial expression, uses one finger pointed to the wall where there is a long cushion chair, motioning her to sit down.

Zheng Xie's Chief Secretary, Zheng Wei sits on a stool next to his bed. On his leg is a laptop, while dutifully records all the dictation by the leadership for

records.

The economic terms to Xiao He He is like a monk mantra. Listening to it plus adding to her dizziness, a moment later, she felt asleep on the couch.

She is really tired as during the business trip, she work more than 14 hours daily. In additional to that, she hardly sleep well at night.

Xiao He He slowly woke up as she felt someone covering her with clothes. She rubbed her eyes and see the elegant and generous temperament secretary.

Seeing that she has woke up, Zheng Wei gently smiled and asked her: “Miss Xiao, I am ready to go. Should I give you a ride?”

Before Xiao He He could answer, the young master on the bed said: “No need. Wait for me to finish this bottle of drip and He He will go with me.”

“The doctor asked you to stay for the night in the hospital.....” Secretary Zheng Wei looked at the face of the boss, very consciously changed, “well, you pay attention and ensure that you rest. President Zheng, your cell phone.” Then from the pocket, pulled out Zheng Xie’s dazzling platinum limited edition phone.

No wonder, falling under the sky, receiving the message and still sent someone to meet her. It turns out that her message was received by Secretary Wei.

But this time it is more humiliating, really losing her face.

[Introduction](#) |

Chapter 1.2 : Awkward Tanabata Night

Chapter 1.2 : Awkward Tanabata Night

After leaving the hospital ward, outside on the ground were several baskets of flowers, colorful and filled with the aroma of the fresh flowers.

He He bent over and picked up a very chic decorated basket. "This one is very pretty, send it to me."

Zheng Xie grabbed her by the collar to bring her up to stand: "Hospital flowers, more unlucky."

"Today is Tanabata Festival and I did not received any." He He trying to get rid of his hard claws on her collar.

"Later I buy for you outside."

"But I like this one." He He insisted on choosing one.

But Zheng Xie, whom obviously was sickly looking earlier, with strength and skills, quickly dragged her along. He He did not understand where he could get the energy, very quickly her baskets is removed from her hand, she has been dragged to stand up and in a wick of an eye, has left the ward.

Will a few strokes of martial art that great? While being pulled on the wrist by Zheng Xie, He He did not give up and turned back to look at the basket of flowers.

And when she got into the car, she fell asleep again while vaguely heard Zheng Xie said: "Xiao Wang, increase the air-cond temperature a little please." The car swerved and He He hit the window glass and woke up.

In the dim light of the car, she turned and saw Zheng Xie place face, listless.

His skin is already white, at the moment is almost transparent. Looks really pale while lining with a pair of black eyes that is so bright that is bottomless.

He He quiet for a few seconds and realized that the car is heading straight to her place in the West End. While in fact, Zheng Xie's luxury apartments are only 10 minutes from the hospital.

“Xiao Wang, please send Brother Zheng Xie first, don’t worry about me.”

“I’m going to the other side today.” Zheng Xie issued a directive and then leaning back, closed his eyes.

Don’t misunderstand with what Zheng Xie said. “Over There” is actually the same building as Xiao He He. It is in fact opposite her house, just that the area is twice as large. In a year, he stayed less than 2 weeks in the apartment. With not such a good feeling, Xiao He He even lost her sleepiness.

As expected, Zheng Xie very naturally go with Xiao He He into the house, kick off his shoes, very naturally commended: “Come over to my side and get me a set of underwear and bathrobe. Cook for me a bowl of noddle and add an egg.” Without turning his head, he head into the bathroom.

“Arrrggg... really! Although he is a patient, she also just got off the plane from a long journey, okay?”

Actually as long as he is willing to open his mouth, there will be a whole street of young girls lining up to cook for him, so why must he asked her to do it.

Xiao He He mumbled a few words in her good heart, finally went over to his place with the keys, took the stuff and came back to cook the noodles.

Zheng Xie ate the noodles while He He went to shower. At the same time, washed the clothes tht Zheng Xie has taken off. She is really so worthless.

Coming out from her shower, she saw that the noodles have been totally eaten up including the soup while the bowl is left in the sink. The honest Xiao He He went to wash the bowl.

Turning back, she presume that Zheng Xie has gone back to his own home, so changing into her pajamas and slippers, walked into the dark bedroom and forcefully throw herself onto the bed.

“Ah –”

“Ah.”

The short call is Zheng Xie while the long call is her own. Both Zheng Xie and Xiao He He fell harmonically on each other.

She got up and turned on the light. “You’re in the wrong place. This is my

home!”

She can still understand that he bath in her place because he had not stayed in this apartment for 2 months, so worry that the water is not clean. However, he cannot sleep on her bed just because he had not slept on his bed for 2 months.

“Well.” Zheng Xie answer with a thick sleepy voice.

“Where do I sleep then?”

This time, Zheng Xie did not answer. Instead, he turn over and went back to sleep.

He slept curled up with one arm pillowed his head, just like a child.

Xiao He He immediately soften her heart. Her hand reached out to touch his forehead. It is not hot but her hand is filled with sweat.

Thinking of him, because of his fever till he was admitted into the hospital, she cover him up with a quilt, found another thinner one and covered him with it as well.

Then she pulled out from the drawer a towel and went to the living room to sleep.

Blame her home that only has 1 bed while Zheng Xie’s big empty house, she would not dare to sleep there alone. She might have nightmares. Feeling cold, Xiao He He woke up in the middle of the night. What kind of weather! The weather forecast say it is 30 degrees but it is so cold at night. Even a thin towel completely cannot resist the chill.

And her 2 thick silk quilt are now covering Zheng Xie currently. Xiao He He got up, put on her coat, wrapped herself and lie down again.

Either its cold or the sofa is too soft, normally a comfortable sofa when lazying around, now that it is used for sleeping, is indeed torturing especially to the bones.

Looking at the clock in the living room pointing to 3 o’clock, Xiao He He both body and mind are extremely tired, but she finds it hard to fall asleep.

She crept into the bedroom to where Zheng Xie was lying down and pulled the quilt down his body.

The curtains was not pulled. The bright moonlight shining through the window. Curled in the middle of the bed, sleeping elegantly like nothing could wake him up, Zheng Xie has kicked half of his quilt aside while the other half of the quilt is firmly under the pressure of his body.

And sleepy, tired and angry Xiao He He, pulled for a long time yet did not managed to cite any part of the quilt. Afraid of rousing him from his deep sleep, she pressed two and a half quilt beneath one half of the back cover to his body. She pulled the other half of the quilt, stiffly got underneath it and lay down. Not long after, she actually fell asleep.

|

Chapter 2.1 : Just like a brother, collected for nothing

Chapter 2.1 : Just like a brother, collected for nothing

Seven years ago, Xiao He He's vision for the future: Marry Her Lover.

Seven years later, Xiao He He's thought: To Catch a Millionaire

"I must keep my eyes open to try to catch a millionaire." Whenever watching a happy ending love movies, Xiao He He always sign and say the sentence.

Her friend, Su Ren Ran immediately says: "Around you already there is one ready. Body, money, appearance and manners, all there. You know it well, even investigations is not required. The rest is how you try to capture him."

"Zheng Xie?" Xiao He He cried out. "We are just individuals tied together only. From young until now, even while day dreaming, I never think of to have any relationship with him."

"You cannot say it too quickly. I see Zheng Xie is polite and cold with anyone else but when it is with you, he is unkind and yet treat you special."

Su Ren Ran is mistakenly has talked about Xiao He He's sorrows. In her short 25 years of life, is filled with the history of being bullied by Zheng Xie.

As a child, he always tricked He He into doing his homework and carry his bags. These little issues are not the only issues. In order to pleased other girls, He He even helped him to write love letter, buy their gifts and even act as couriers to deliver those gifts.

As adult, she is then upgraded to a maid, temporary secretary and even fake girlfriend. He needs her when he is not living in the house, regularly view, pay and even look for someone to clean the place. Secretary when he is not around and when he suddenly wanted to work, she is a temporary stenographer, data administrators as well as tea lady.

When he wanted to get rid of any woman and did not immediately find a successor, she need to thicken her skin and act as the triumphant new lover. Other are hard to say, her only distress is her fear that one day the woman he messed with is too sturdy and infatuated and she is thrown sulfuric acid.

Unfortunately, she owes too much towards Zheng Xie.

When Xiao He He was 5 years old, she caused the 10 years old Zheng Xie foot bone fracture. That time, Zheng Xie was working on getting into juvenile military school, but he ended up stuck at home following the prescribe order on the road of recovery.

When she was 10 years old, the 15 years old Zheng Xie was due to participate in the National Junior Chess tournament. He was a promising success candidate. As he was ready to set out to the tournament, Xiao He He suddenly sent an urgent message saying that she had pneumonia. He had to give up the opportunity to stay with her as there were no adults at home.

At 15, she caused Zheng Xie to break off with his girlfriend. Although it is unclear if that is his real love, but being around him for so many years, many has come and go, however that was his most serious relationship.

At the age of 20, Xiao He He caused Zheng Xie to lose a big piece of business. At the point of time, he has just opened the new company hence it is not stable yet. And the lost deal is worth 1/3 of their annual sale.

Xiao He He kept quiet for a while and eventually felt that she owes a lot to Zheng Xie. So no matter how much he bullies her, she don't think it is too much. Not even to mention that Zheng Xie often helped her. There is a "Seventh Year Itch" between women and men, they don't know if this is counted as five years. But on the New Year's Day this year, Zheng Xie solemnly said: "He He, this year we meet each other as little as possible. Less talk and less interaction." In 2 days, He He will reached the age of 25 years old.

Seventh Year Itch (七年之痒) can be referred to as "the desire for new sexual experience that is thought to fall in the seventh year of marriage between couples"

But this time, she did not take the initiative to get close to him but him leaning to her. But it seems to be.... because of the provocative text message sent and the false pretense of love to go to the hospital to see him....

Xiao He He mind churns the event of yesterday. She went to the shop to buy breakfast, milk, pickles, fried eggs and served them one by one gracefully on the table. As she needs to have breakfast anyway, so conveniently prepared double

portion.

Thinking for a moment, Xiao He He head over to Zheng Xie's place to take a change of clothes and his daily cleaning supplies as he is very brand conscious and only uses certain brands. Perhaps yesterday, being tired and unwell, he did not bother with the details.

Zheng Xie obviously did not feel that the place where he slept is not suitable, hence after waking up, with sleepy dim eyes, is leisurely and carefree as if in his own home. After a few minutes of waking up, feeling a little refreshed, sits politely at the dinner table.

This shows that it is a common thing to wake up from someone else's house. Xiao He He discredit him in the heart, with her mouth spoke words of concern: "You don't need to go to the hospital today for an intravenous drip?"

"I have already recovered, so don't need." Zheng Xie said without looking up.

"Zheng Xie, you are so big and have no fear ah." Secretary Wei seem to say yesterday that the doctor asked him to stay in hospital for 2 days.

"Xiao He He, you are getting bolder, beginning to even address me with my name." Zheng Xie transfer the focus.

She has called him like this for several years already, most of the time, even the name is not added but just a "Hey". He actually wanted to put her into this spectrum. But Xiao He He had chosen not to speak.

Zheng Xie looked down to eat. Always having a good tutor, he is different from others. He never eat with any noise, Xiao He He admired.

And also to try to learn to be like Zheng Xie, Xiao He He tried to drink the milk without issuing any noise. But suddenly Zheng Xie began to speak. Under her breath of surprised, she almost sprayed the milk in her mouth.

Chapter 2.2 : Just like a brother, collected for nothing

Chapter 2.2 : Just like a brother, collected for nothing

“He He, it is your rest day today, right? Come with me to a party.”

“Today is the opening ceremony of the Olympic Games. Who has time to play with you? Your girlfriend this year has exceeded two digit. Looking at the numbers of female secretaries you have, why call me?”

“The party is in the afternoon are young people. Don’t you always want to know a few more people?” Zheng harmonic ignored her unreasonable provocation, quietly explained.

“The bunch of people you hang out with is good people? I don’t want to go.”

“He He, your company is doing well this year. So don’t need my order, right?” Zheng Xie said kindly while drinking the soya bean milk.

Haiz, she seek temporary tongue, totally forgotten. Vulnerable groups wants to keep the backbone is indeed a difficult thing. He He immediately spread a sunny smile on her face: “Brother Zheng Xie, this I cannot joke with you? I am afraid that I can’t live up to the expectation hence disgracing you. I will go. I will go. Do I wear a miniskirts or midriff? I immediately go and prepare.”

Secretary Wei found someone to deliver the clothes, yellow little knee length dress with a matching colored leather sandals. Even the necklaces and hair accessories were prepared. Pity her at her age, still need to dress up like that.

Xiao He He is very happy when arriving at the banquet scene. It is like a children’s playground with various types of dolls pendulum everywhere, air floating balloons, colored paper and issues written on paper. Obviously it is a game party. No wonder Zheng Xie does not bring his type of temperament girlfriend, instead insisted on dragging her.

A further look, she became happier. The theme of the banquet is of the Olympic Games with electronic display solemnly displaying the countdown. Probably unified requirements, men are neatly dressed in black suit, ladies are dressed in red, yellow, blue or green, the 4 colors of the Olympic. This is a really

talented organizers. It would be much easier to group when playing games as it will be grouped by clothes colors.

Zheng Xie left her to go socializing and to enjoy himself. Xiao He He walks around guessing lots of questions, while winning many prizes. After that, she went to find something to eat. In the corner, in 2 or 3 groups, she heard some interesting gossip.

“Cheng and Zhong family would be having a happy event next month, but suddenly was abruptly cancelled. What happen?”

“Both side of the family said that the bride is suddenly ill. And then the groom went to help out in the Sichuan earthquake, so it was delayed. As for the internal news.... haiz, only they would know.”

“The Cheng family has more to it. Heard that Cheng Shao Chen has reunited with his ex-wife. The old lady is so happy, immediately with the young married woman and granddaughter came back from England.”

“Ex-wife? Cheng Shao Chen is actually married?”

“Did you come from Mars?”

Uh, that Mr Cheng, she's met twice. Really unexpected, she felt is more difficult to deal with vs Zheng Xie. Totally unexpected. Not to mention stuck for so long, also willing to be stuck twice. The story behind the woman, is really someone she wants to worship.

As the result of eavesdropping, accidentally rolled herself into this.

“Hey, who is the woman whom came together with Zheng Xie today? New?”

“Unlike the usual Zheng Xie taste. Over the years, Zheng Xie only associate with one type of woman, said to be like his first love.”

“Oh, think about it. Doesn't Zheng Xie has a God-Sister? Is that her?”

“Maybe it is. This little girl looks pretty good. I heard that the Secretary Zheng likes her very much. Also not bad. If you are really interested in her, you might as well go for the relationship.”

“Secretary Zheng? The one in the province? With her?”

“You don’t even know who Zheng Xie is? You’re new ah?”

Xiao He He decided to call Su Ren Ran once she leaves the venue. The gossip extend in the social elites, can said to be a little degree more than what the ordinary people will go.

He He found a corner that is most quiet and concentrate on enjoying her huge heap of food. She looked around for Zheng Xie, well-dressed, don’t know if he at the moment are actively or passively involve in the gossip. She saw Zheng Xie, standing not far from her humble position while talking to a beautiful woman.

Haiz, she did not want to admit it. Among the bright colored clothes and fragrant of the field, Zheng Xie remains as the most outstanding one. His fine facial features, tall and dark, although she normally banished him with a small white face, however, among the piles of feminine and foolish men, she unexpectedly felt that Zheng Xie regardless of shape or have the gusto shares, is unspeakably full of masculine charm.

Zheng Xie also saw her, politely greeted the beauty and took steps over to her to pick something to eat from her plate.

Xiao He He see Zheng Xie holding a glass of wine, immediately got angry: “Just yesterday, because stomach is not well, had to take the drip. Looking for trouble... today already taking a drink?” He He took over his drink and down it. The concern for him is false, this last action almost choke her up.

As a result, He He drinking quickly and because she is too fierce, suddenly chocking herself, cough violently. Zheng Xie while patting her back, laughed: “How come you do not grow up, wall flower when no temperament. Yes, are there anyone pleasing to the eyes? I can help to introduce you.”

“All not even half pleasing to the eye, including you. Help to get me a drink.”

“Do not say anything with low emotional intelligence in the public. Go and get it yourself.”

“I took a lot of food to eat. People are already begun to pay attention to me. You are not afraid that I will lose your face?” Xiao He He grin cheekily.

As she is playing around with him, she heard a deep mellow voice: “Zheng Xie, you are still alive!”

Zheng Xie turned and laughed: “You are still living in the world, why do I want to die ah.”

Let them say it. These people, although no longer young, does not have any taboo when speaking. He He look over Zheng Xie’s shoulder and saw a pair of clear eyes with a gentle smile. Looks kind of familiar.....

The deepening of the eyes smiled: “Zheng Xie, this is.....”

Zheng Xie pulled He He from the corner: “This is He He, my sister that you have met.”

“He He?” The man eyes narrowed, like in the search memory, then the eyes glance look: “come to think of it, I see that before you went abroad. Hey, so many years has past and yet He He has not aged at all. Still looking like a young girl. Zheng Xie, we have grown old.”

Xiao He He looked carefully at Zheng Xie, seeing him expressionless, with no emotions, is gradually relieved.

Immersed in the memories, the man noticed that Xiao He He for a moment does not recognized him and gently said: “He He, you must not have remembered my name, I am Shi Lin.”

“Shi Lin? The one from Kunming?” Xiao He He mechanically asked.

“时光的时，雨林霖。”- *Directly translated in ping yin as “Shiguang de shi, yulin lin.” which describe the Chinese character on how his name is to be written.*

“Mr Shi” He He quickly returned to normal and quickly adjust her posture. She slowly stretched out her hand. After all, she has attended social etiquette class before.

When Shi Lin gently squeezed her hand, his generous palm is dry warm and cool. Unlike many other men who are warm, sticky and greasy.

“Don’t be so polite. He He, since you are Zheng Xie’s sister, might as well call me brother.”

“Big brother.” Xiao He He glanced at Zheng Xie, seeing that he has no objection, obediently called him.

Chapter 3.1: Before the Peach Blossom

Shi Lin... who is he exactly? Read on.....

Chapter 3.1: Before the Peach Blossom

Xiao He He felt that, if the timing of the “Peach Blossom” is not right, might as well do not come.

Xiao He He has not impression of Shi Lin. They have after all, met many years ago in addition to the fact that he is Zheng Xie’s friend.

Just like He He’s mother who often reminded her that she and Zheng Xie has always been people from two different world. He He mistakenly entered his world and is already a dislocation. She must not forget who she actually is and not live in the illusory magic of Cinderella to the real world that she belongs to.

Therefore, she is never close with any of Zheng Xie’s friends. To her, they have a common name, “Zheng Xie’s friends,” that’s all.

But this Shi Lin is different from those Zheng Xie’s friends. He is humbler and considerate. He exudes a rustic clean bookish feel, quite different from Zheng Xie, that even if a low profile also conceal aggressive extravagance. As for those Zheng Xie’s “friends”, they always feel stronger and out of reach, therefore are not worth mentioning.

They exchange a few more pleasantries and then Shi Lin depart with Zheng Xie. He He looked at their back for a while. She don’t know what to do or thoughts or continue to look for something to eat. He He is already full and could no longer eat anymore apart from fruits. She carefully add various sliced fruits onto her plate into a shape and lastly add a cherry for decoration. Unexpectedly, the very slippery cherry slipped and bounced off out of her sight. He He feels embarrassed and looked around. She hear no screams and no one noticed her. She took another one and this time, that cherry actually hit someone else. Shi Lin walks towards her smiling.

Xiao He He tried to find a hole to hide. Shi Lin insert firmly the red cherry fruit into her plate. “Look, this is relatively simple. This is a peacock? How to shape this?”

He He smiled at him.

“Just now, I saw you going around guessing correctly. I was wondering which girl so lively and intelligent while thinking that she looks somewhat familiar. As it turns out to be, really an acquaintances. How come you are no longer playing?”

“I’m a little hungry. And I’ve got a lot of prizes holding in front of the front desk.” Xiao He He gradually adapt to the situation and smiled faintly to Shi Lin.

Shi Lin stared at her for a while and then said: “That’s right. Your smile now looks just like how you were at the time. Just not if it is not because of Zheng Xie, I really cannot imagine.”

He He bowed her head and slowly stopped smiling while looking down at the fruits.

A timely playful music started and the host started shouting. First clapping song then unexpectedly the rabbit dance. And this repeat over and over again in order to get the ladies and gentlemen to put down everything and join in the fun.

With the noisy surrounding, Shi Lin did not notice her strange look: “Let’s go and dance. It has been more than half of a lifetime since I last played this game.” In a flash, she has been pulled by Shi Lin onto the dance floor.

Everyone form into a big circle, a male and a female, because over only five colors, like a color ring. On weekdays, it is estimates that there are no naive moment, a bunch of overjoyed people, dancing and laughing. Very lively and extraordinary, as if returning to kindergarten and childhood.

The air conditioning in the hall is very sufficient. Xiao he He small formal attire neckline is very low with a very short skirt. Just as they got to under the central air-conditioning air outlet, He He will be thrown into a trace of coolness. Her hands became wet and sticky while enclosing into Shi Lin dry palm, resulting in a strange feeling.

Shi Lin turned to look at her: “Are you feeling okay?”

“I am fine. Why?”

“Your hands are cold.”

“I’m just not used to the blowing cold air.”

The whole dance team turn half round, Shin Lin suddenly smiled and waved his hand. He He turned around and saw Zheng Xie holding a wine glass standing by against the wall with a faint smile while watching them dance while from time to time, casually look and chat with the woman dressed in a light blue dress in front of him. With He He looking at him, he suddenly using his other free hand, put up a rabbit shaped ear with a crooked fingers while smiling with an innocence look. He He looked at him and turned away, no longer looking at him.

Xiao He He grew up with no sense of music as she is tone deaf with extremely poor sense of music. In her first grade, because there were not enough participants, she was pulled out to do a rabbit dance. He He always say, others practice 3 times, she will secretly practice 3 more times before she finally can follow the rhythm. On the actual performance day, because she was too nervous and could not find her rhythm, she was half a beat slower than the other kids. That was one of her most embarrassing moments. Zheng Xie was there and he actually remembered. He used the opportunity to remind her of her embarrassing moments again, really a nasty guy indeed!

He He has a stubborn streak in her. The more difficult it is for her, the more she will vigorously worked on overcoming it. With such profound and painful memories in her life, she decided to make up for her own shortcoming. She secretly worked hard and by the time she was in college, she actually successfully became the school band’s main drummer.

Reminiscing the past, He He’s anxiety gradually calmed down. Soon it is time to leave as the banquet event is almost over.

Shin Lin said: “You look a lot better now. I thought you were really sick before.”

“It’s really all right. Brother Shi, thank you.”

Zheng Xie stepped away from the other young men. “Shi Lin, we keep in touch. He He, let’s go...”

Someone called from the other side. “Ah Xie, don’t slip away so quickly. We brothers have not get together for a long time.”

“I want to send my sister home.”

“Sister come with us and have fun together.”

With a soft volume where only 3 of them can hear, He He whispered: “I can go back alone. It is very close by. You don’t have to worry about me.”

Zheng Xie glanced at her and then turned and look at Shi Lin. With a faint smile on his face, he said: “Then I will trouble you, Ah Lin.”

Shi Lin accompanied He He to collect her big bag of prizes. Because she was bored before, she played a lot of quizzes hence won a lot of big and small prizes. As it is still early, the sky has a rare heaps of clouds and the temperature is not high.

He He called Su Ren Ran and informed her that there are many gifts to be given to the children. Su Ren Ran during her free time, like to volunteer in the orphanage. Ren Ran told He He that she has brought a group of children to the beachside to play.

Coincidentally, their car at the moment were heading the beach. With that, they soon found Ren Ran and the kids.

Ren Ran together with 7 or 8 children are playing on the fine while sand. Innocent and naïve, these children saw her and recognized her and shouted out: Auntie He He. Each of them received the gift from her with a smile.

These children have a little bit of birth defects so hence was abandoned at birth resulting in them being difficult to be adapted. Obviously each one of them looks as lovely as a little angel. Without any closer look, one will not be able to see the difference between them and the other normal children.

Xiao He He want to ask Shi Lin to go ahead without her as she wanted to spend time with Ren Ran and the children. She remembered that she is not properly dressed for the occasion, hence stood on the beach and stayed for a while before leaving together with Shi Lin.

The carpark is a distance away, so there are some prestige and expensive car passing before them.

In accordance to the laws of the small words, in the parking lot, there are always unexpected surprises, such as collision of romance, such as meeting suddenly a good looking guy especially now where she is so dressed up.

Unfortunately, these surprises are limited for single woman only, and not for anyone with an escort.

Reality is always a reality, one will not have time to even dream about it. Haiz, He He cannot help but sigh to herself.

A white car suddenly zoomed pass closely against He He. Luckily Shi Lin pulled He He aside, and she is almost fell into his arms. The car stopped and the driver opened the car door, don't know to find fault or to apologize.

He He did not expect any seductive scene to appears. Although on the book, these type of car driver are always elegant, but in reality it is usually a poor old guy.

Although she already mentally prepared, waiting for the driver to get down, she was still very surprised.

| |

Chapter 3.2: Before the Peach Blossom

In this chapter, we read about Xiao He He meeting someone whom she used to care deeply in the the past.

Chapter 3.2: Before the Peach Blossom

“He He, is that you?” The man that got down from the car, although cannot be compared with Zheng Xie in appearance and temperament, but can also be regarded as an authentic guy.

“Cen Shi, long time no see.” In one day, meet 2 old acquaintance, He He is now surprisingly calm.

Cen Shi very infectiously laughed: “He He, you have not changed a single bit.” Looking at Shi Lin, “This is.....”

“A friend.” He He humbly answered.

Shi Lin and Cen Shi shake their hands and exchange their name cards. Then handed He He his name card and said: “He He, I am here for a week of vacation. Remember to call me.”

“Okay.”

“Well, you better give me your number. I’ll call you.”

In front of Shi Lin, He He can only meekly takes out her cell phone and call the number on the name card. Cen Shi’s phone rang and he took out the phone. He glanced at the phone screen, with a satisfied look, say goodbye and left.

In the car, He He kept quiet as they head to their destination. Shi Lin seeing her keeping quiet, did not bother her further. He quietly bid her goodbye, left his contact information and watched as He He head upstairs.

The following day, Xiao He He got woke up late. Randomly ate and then lay down on her bed watching the Olympics.

Probably because of the excessiveness of the air conditioning during the banquet yesterday, her menstrual cycle came earlier. The pain was so bad that she felt that she was dying as even holding hot water bags are not effective and

she was sweating. The temperature outside is at a high 35 degrees and she had her air conditioning on. The cold is making her uncomfortable and hence she wrapped herself in her quilt.

There were 2 missed calls. She returned call to one of the missed call, which is from Shi Lin.

“I would like to walk around but I am not familiar with the surrounding. Would you like to accompany me?”

“I am sorry, Brother Shi. I slept too late yesterday and now is feeling a little uncomfortable. It is very hot today. If I go out I will get heat stroke. It would be better for me to stay at home and watch our country, China wins medal.”

“Yes, you have a good rest. I shall not disturb you.”

After a while, the phone suddenly rang again. After picking up, realized that she should not have picked up this call.

“He He, it’s me.” Cen Shi said.

“I know.”

“How have you been doing all these years?”

“Of course!”

“I missed you very much.”

“Cen Shi, how is Su Ge?”

“The 2nd year after we went abroad, we broke up.”

“I am sorry to hear that.”

“He He, are you free for the next 2 days? Let’s go for meal together.”

“I have plans for the entire weekend.”

“I see. Another day?”

“Let’s see.”

Xiao He He gently puts down the phone. On the television, the Chinese athletes really stands out, very atmospheric and very calm. She felt that she should drink for herself. After all, over the years, she had really made good progress in facing

Cen Shi's superb acting. She could stay so calm, completely play along with him without any fear.

Live on the television, the first five-star red flag (China Flag) has been raised in the Olympic venue with the audience singing the national anthem while the eyes of the champion were glittering with tears. Xiao He He finally found the outlet to vent her emotion. She sat on the bed with her head buried in her knees, shamelessly bursting into tears.

Xiao He He cried a storm unexpectedly. She sob really hard, blow her nose and is about to get up to pour herself a cup of hot water to warm the stomach when her phone rang again. It seems that even God does not allow her to be peaceful.

This time, the ringing sound is of a kitten meowing. This is Zheng Xie special caller tone set. This is because Zheng Xie hates cats, so He He deliberately set a unique caller tone for him.

Zheng Xie asked her to join them for open air barbecue dinner tonight. He He began to believe that Zheng Xie lately really have free time on hand. He has been looking for her 2 consecutive days in a row. It seems that his many girlfriends has turned their back on him.

"Not going. Of course, not going." Zheng Xie is very sensitive. Only 2 words from He He, and he immediately asked: "What is wrong with your nose?"

"I caught a cold sleeping in the cold air-conditioned room yesterday."

"You were crying earlier."

Haiz, she could never hide it from him. "Our national flag rose, I just got very excited. You know, I have always been like this."

Zheng Xie laughed at the other end: "Little child He He, I am sending you a small red flower."

"Since there is nothing else, I am hanging up the phone. Why are you so busy these days?"

Zheng Xie did not complain about Xiao He He's coldness and chat with her for a while before finally ready to hang up the phone. As he was saying goodbye, he asked her: "I am visiting Uncle Xiao tomorrow. Do you want to go with me?"

Taken aback, He He asked: “Isn’t it is usually during the Lunar New Year?”

“You happen to be on business trip then. Are you going?”

“Yes.”

||

Chapter 4.1: Just brothers and sisters

*Have anyone notice the beautiful header on the main page today? A big thank you to **Sutekii** for her contribution and kind assistance with such a beautiful header. Both Tinkerbellsan and I loved the 2 header that she had kindly prepare for us. And also a big thank you to **Tinkerbellsan** for helping me with all the visual for each and every post.*

Nothing exciting in this chapter. Only some funny moments when Zheng Xie limit what He He wants to eat for breakfast. Read on!

Chapter 4.1: Just brothers and sisters

If a man and a woman been living together for too long, even a hug feels like his/her own left hand holding the right hand.

Xiao He He never expected that Zheng Xie will wake up so early this weekend. She has just got up and stumbled to wash up when Zheng Xie called to tell her that he will be waiting for her downstairs in 20 minutes time.

Zheng Xie has a strong time management sense and hates people being late. He He heard from his secretary before, once there were an executive meeting when the snow were very thick and slippery, half of the participants were late. Zheng Xie insisted in not changing the meeting time resulting in the meeting being interrupted from time to time when the bunch of senior executive embarrassedly walked in. As a result, as long as it is a snowing day, they will leave 30 minutes earlier from home.

Normally He He although dare to provoke him from time to time, dare not violate his command. She scrambled to get ready, and did not managed to have her breakfast. The night before, she has forgotten to prepare her clothes, only to find the dress outside her wardrobe are very colorful. Wearing only her jeans and bra, she ransacked through the wardrobe before finally found a black V-neck short sleeve cotton T-shirt with lapel collar and cuffs in gray plaid cotton inlay trim and the hem attached with a cat design. She totally forgotten when she has bought that and which year the style belongs to.

He He has just got herself looking presentable when Zheng Xie's call came. She

rushed down through the emergency fire door only to find Zheng Xie also dressed in jeans and a short black striped T-shirt. They look like a couple dressed alike. He He sat down next to him, only to think in her mind that this surfaced joke is very outdated. After all, Zheng Xie's dressing at least is better than hers by tenfold.

Zheng Xie turn to the side slightly to see her: "Your uncombed hair are standing. And you didn't eat."

"Oh." He He pulled out a small mirror and comb from her bag, found a bottle of mineral water before dipping into the water and comb her hair.

"I have told you the time I would be coming today. Because of the rain, we would leave a little earlier. You do not know how to plan your time?"

"Look, I forgot."

"My words to you, when will you not have it left ear in and right ear out?"

Really annoying. Today is rest day and he does not have any subordinate to train, so he trained her instead. And she is very hungry.

As expected, 10 minutes into the start of the journey, it began to rain. The rain become heavier with no sign of stopping. The road is filled with water and gradually the traffic jam starts.

The place they are heading is far. Zheng Xie has always been steady in his driving. He slowed down the car, did not abide to the traffic rules several time almost causing danger. However his expression remain calm. But Xiao He He eyes grows dim from the swinging wipers and uninterrupted flow of water.

Zheng Xie parked the car and got down from the car. He He thought that he only wants to buy something, so sat in the car unmoved. Until master Zheng came over to the side of the door and open the door for her. "Get down from the car." She got down from the car and looked up only to realize that it is one of her favorite breakfast venue. Because it is far from her place, she rarely comes. This is an honorable treatment, master Zheng as her servant.

The breakfast place offers a combination of Chinese and Western food. He He immediately points to her favorite: "A green tea cake, a tuna burger, a cup of freshly squeezed orange juice..... and add a cup of ice porridge. What do you

want?”

“Biscuits, meat, soya milk, some light pickles. It is all hers. Give me a glass of water.”

With a look of embarrassment, the waiter asked: “Then, do you still want the order from the lady earlier?”

“No need.” Zheng Xie replied.

Xiao He He hopes that her obedience is able to exchange a little better order: “Can I have fried fritters?”

“Biscuit and warm soya milk.”

Haiz. Zheng Xie is in a bad mood today. As it is raining, his mood is very bad and had to be caught up in such a bad day. She does not dare to provoke him. So she accepted that, after all she is not paying for it. The biscuits and soya milk here is very expensive. Moreover, she has caused the delay in the trip, she is only able to devour to express her repentance and the intended make up for the loss of time.

Her expression is not pleasant, because between sipping her water, she slightly wrinkled her eyebrows. Zheng Xie has a very fine facial features, even with a good skin that makes any woman jealous. But with his straight face, is actually very scary. Even she whom have grown up together with him, would be a little scared, one can imagine his subordinate.

Because she is distracted while eating, her eyes brow were wrinkled tightly. “Xiao He He, there is a rice grain on the edge of your mouth.”

He He extended a hand and wipe it resulting in more biscuits crumbs on her face. Zheng Xie could not help but pulled out a tissue and wipe her face across the table.

He He laughed out loud and sprayed some of the crumbs on his hands.

“Zheng Xie, your frown is identical to Uncle Zheng. When you are old, you will look like that.”

“Xiao He He, you are not allowed to speak when you eat.”

When it comes to Xiao He He, Zheng Xie is naggier than He He’s mother. This is

because rarely discipline Xiao He He.

It is still heavy rain. The car has got onto the highway. Zheng Xie drives the car more carefully.

Xiao He He dare not talk. Zheng Xie like quietness hence she is embarrassed to switch on the car radio. She plan to listen to her MP4. Zheng Xie although is quite similar with his dad, his father allows him to do what he has chosen. But in reality, he is very similar to Uncle Zheng, not even in looks, even style of doing things, for example is extremely bossy, like to make all kinds of rules. Really both are very similar.

On her side, looking for something, He He almost turn her bag inside out but still could not find what she want. Xiao He He felt that Zheng Xie has something to scold her but this time she was wrong. Zheng Xie not only ignored her clustering her things but also in a mild tone asked: “He He, is there any birthday gift that you want?”

“Hypocritical. You refused to even let me have a happy breakfast, rarely able to go to the place for a meal, you actually resorted to me having a biscuits only.”

“That’s for you own good. You just can’t stomach the truth. Chooses foreign garbage instead of Chinese food. Only put on a cynical patriotic look all day.”

Xiao He He is not able to retort back, can only sigh.

||

Chapter 4.2: Just brothers and sisters

And so... it is Xiao He He's birthday. Read on and find out what Zheng Xie got her for birthday gift.....

Chapter 4.2: Just brothers and sisters

"Really don't have any birthday wish?" Zheng Xie asked.

"Gold dropping from the sky, the street filled with good men, as well as powerful motherland, world peace."

Zheng Xie gently laughed: "It is good enough to meet a good man. What do you think of Shi Lin? He has a good impression of you. Not good enough for you?"

"Not familiar with him. Talk about it later."

"He will only be in the country for 2 weeks. If you have a good impression on him, just don't refuse him. Shi Lin is a good man. No family and also engage in education. Very different from our group of people."

"Did you change your field and open a marriage brokers? Don't talk when driving." Xiao He He is not in the mood to talk about it.

"He He, you have always say one thing but ended up doing the other thing since young. Everyday say want to find a good man. When really met one, becomes like this."

Xiao He He turn around left and right, no longer bothered with him. She finally found a new target to focus on. At the back of the car, there is 2 beautifully wrapped very big box. Her hand reach out to the boxes, while checking out the packaging, turn to Zheng Xie and asked: "This is for me, right?"

Zheng Xie kept quiet means he is admitting it. He He open the 2 boxes. It is not what she expected. Inside is a limited edition Barbie. Zheng Xie really had no idea, her closet is filled with them. This time, it is a Scarlett with a Twelve Oaks barbecue Grande Punto skirt shape and the other with green curtain fabric shape.

“But only one is yours, so pick one.” Zheng Xie said while intently watching the road ahead.

“Of course, both are mine. Anyway, both were mean to be given to people. With such childish toy, those women with you, giving it to them are detrimental to your taste, Master Zheng.”

“What those women. Be careful of what you say. Do I need to please any women?” Zheng Xie is really in a bad mood today. In the past when He He mock him, he rarely argue back.

“That....thank you, ah. How do you know that I wanted Scarlett O’Hara doll?” It has exceeded He He’s expectation.

“Zhi Xian says you want this, and went to search for you. You go and thank her.”

He He knows that the mighty Zheng Xie, with the women that he is interested in, he is too lazy to please them, what more to say about wanting to find out about her preference.

Zheng Xie seems to talk more than normal today. After a moment, said: “He He, next week I want to go for a trip to City X. If you are free, go back with me. You must have not seen Aunty Lin for a long time, right?”

“It is not any holiday season, why suddenly want to go there?”

“Father Zheng called, said want to see me.”

“Did you cause any trouble and is dragging me out to help you? Also taking my mother out for a cover. My mother is also very busy. I don’t think she would have time to meet me.”

“Aunty Lin is a great woman. Whoever talk about her has high regards for her, except you.”

“How is it possible? Actually, I am afraid of seeing her. You know, my mother is a good woman. Although she has never had expectation on me as she is already generally very successful, at least I hope I could be like my dad whom is dedicated although in the ordinary post is able to be successful. However, I am just very mediocre with nothing extraordinary. She must have been very

disappointed with me.”

“She is very concerned about you.”

“Of course. An hour after the daughter is born, decided to name her “Smile” which shows her deep maternal love.” He He said in a muffle. Her name has resulted in her being ridiculed from the time she was in kindergarten till her work place today.

“She hope that you will forever be happy.”

“Yes ah, who say it is not.”

Then both of them kept quiet. Only the faint sound of the car running over the water surface and the rain on the window pattering. The silence continued for more than an hour until after they have reached their destination.

They went to the cemetery located on the mountain. The car is not able to go up the mountain, hence they can only walked up. It is raining all the time. Even with an umbrella, both of them crowded together is still inevitably be caught in the rain. Zheng Xie, is holding a large bouquet of white gardenia flowers, petals lined with green leaves in his arm. It is said that this is He He’s dad favorite flower.

It is very quiet in the mountain. Tombstones are everywhere. There is even no sound of birds and insects, just the rain and their footsteps amidst in the horizon of inky clouds. He He is afraid of such quietness, thinking over and over and decided to talk to overcome her fear. “Zheng Xie, isn’t the Gardenia Flower season already over.”

“Yes”

So how did you managed to get the fresh flowers? He He bite the corner of her lips and swallowed the thought. She held the umbrella higher while holding on to Zheng Xie’s hand pulling him closer. This way, her fear will ease.

They finally found He He father’s tomb. The tomb is very clean. The flower placed during the “Qing Ming”, also known as Tomb-Sweeping Day has been cleared away. In front of the tomb, there is a stone bottle with a few ugly mesh flowers sticking out followed by her handwriting. There are a few DIY fabric flowers made way better than hers. Below the flowers are notes, tribute from his

previous students.

The Qingming or Ching Ming Festival, also known as Tomb-Sweeping Day in English, is a traditional Chinese festival on the first day of the fifth solar term of the traditional Chinese lunisolar calendar. – [Wikipedia – Qingming Festival](#)

Lettering on the grave are still so clear after so many years of wind and rain.
Xiao Lie Shi is buried here. August 10, 1983.

This is the day that Xiao He He was born.

||

Chapter 5.1: We are all already born with our Fate

Today, we will read all about Zheng Xie in Xiao He He's opinion and eyes....

Note : The beautiful image above, [credit](#)

Chapter 5.1: We are all already born with our Fate

Born with silver spoon in the mouth will also have to face their own pain.

During strings of gathering with friends over dinner, someone said something angrily: "People are all born with different fate, some people are just born with silver spoon in their mouth." She would naturally thought of her boss, Zheng Xie.

Zheng Xie is indeed very lucky. The official position of the father is rather high and mother into a family with successful family business. Backdating to both of his maternal and paternal grandparents, their background history have been recorded separately in the Revolutionary Memorial Hall.

These are nothing, although born into a good family, is a smart person, even temperament is good. Others may be envious of him, but he never took it seriously. Not only he refuse to join his mother's and inherit the huge family business, he also kept a safe distance from his father side. After returning from abroad, he took over a small business venture and work hard in the venture. In only 5 years, he has managed to expend the size of the business venture by hundredfold.

Although he has a strong family background where he faced less big obstacles, He He had accompanied him along the way. Therefore, the effort and his key to success, she had seen it all and understand what he had gone through the most.

In the ordinary world that emphasizes everything that is balanced, all gain and loses. But in Zheng Xie's perfect and smooth path can only with a heavy sigh, attribute it to the good deeds from his ancestors.

Of course, with the kind of background that he was born into, he also had a different kind of life experience.

Friends like Zheng Xie whom never know the true reality of life, always have enjoyed his youth. Unlike her other friend Su Ren Ran, whom almost got into a

depression, discovered the joys of life in the orphanage. Hence at every spare moments, she spent the time with the orphans and disabled children.

However, Zheng Xie is completely different. He has a very healthy lifestyle. He looks after his diet, exercise well, and abide to a good balance of rest and working. Although he was never a soldier, he had learn martial art for many years since young. He spent many holidays in the juvenile training camp, all these are the result of training from young.

If we want to look for his weakness, then it is said that his emotional state of mind in relationship is unhealthy.

In fact, the simple “feeling” is something Zheng Xie don’t think. He also had not had more than three months of probation period with his “girlfriends”. Zheng Xie has lots of women friend, so much so often that she needs to check the memorandum to recall the appearance of a person. This is because he is always changing, at times, the frequency is like changing seasonal clothes. There are also shorter time, such as a week, however this is very rare as Zheng Xie has expectation where their body is great and their attitude is also not too outrageous.

He found so many “girlfriends”, each has their duties. As dinner companion, different ones for grand banquet and those as ordinary dinner companion. There are girlfriend for visiting, even designed to cope with the elders and so on. Of course not to see the elders. He has many elders in the family whom always drops for a surprise visit. He has elders’ girlfriend whom are designed to resist any sudden arranged blind dates.

All the girlfriends of Zheng Xie, all their preference and information are recorded by Zheng Wei, such as Miss Liu Hai Qin likes light blue, GUCCI and speaks Cantonese, Mss Sun Xiao Lin can speak Japanese and German, is a vegetarian advocates and conservationists. Because he never remembers, Zheng Wei will always remind: “Zheng Xie, Ms Li Zong will accompany you to attend the birthday party of Miss Chu today. She does not eat seafood, fearing other saying that she is fat.”

Of course, when it comes to the gifts of flowers and any invitation, it is in her hands. After the date, anything that her boss does, it exceeded her management

authority and monitoring. She will not comment.

She is very puzzled. Zheng Xie obviously have a good memory. Reading it again after the employee roster, he can articulate No. 0810 employee's name and age, but when it comes to understanding on his women's habits and preference, he does not remember. Oh, apart from Xiao He He.

Xiao He He affairs, big or small, he remembers them all, although at times when he received He He's calls or text messages, he always sounded impatience, but somehow, often suddenly look for her. When preparing a gift for his girlfriend, he will suddenly said: "This set is more suitable for Xiao He He, change another set." Or when he visit a new restaurant, while signing and getting ready to leave, he will suddenly say: "The dessert just now, send 2 set to Xiao He He."

She had to admit, there are many type of lucky, not only those born with a silver spoon in the mouth. Xiao He He is also unable to be jealous even with anyone of them.

Zheng Xie is driving alone on the road slowly as the rain is still heavy, such a trouble. Xiao He He got down from the car while in the suburbs, saying that she wants to go to Su Ren Ran's home to see the newborn kittens as Mother Su had promised to gift her one of the kitten.

The moment when he wanted to stop her, sarcasm came out of his mouth: "You can't even fend for yourself well, you still want to keep a cat?"

He He stuck out her tongue: "Such a big man still afraid of cats... what a shame... what a shame....." She ran away without looking back.

On the way, he picked up a call from a childhood buddy: "Ah Xie, there is a newly opened place at the pavilion that has very good taste. And the service team there are very nice. Come out and check the place out."

"Not interested. Another day." He hastily cut the line and call Wei Zhi Xian: "Help me book a room in the 7th Street, just me alone. No one is allowed to disturb me. This afternoon, transfer all my incoming calls to your phone."

Zheng Xie in the clean chamber slept the whole afternoon. Woke up to see that it is already dark and the rain has stop. He called Xiao He He and hear lots of buzz over the other end. He He said: "I am in the night market with Ren Ran

eating barbecue.”

He gave up the thought of having dinner with He He and intended to call for a meal himself.

| | [Next Chapter](#)

Chapter 5.2: We are all already born with our Fate

A very sad chapter in my opinion as we read about what happen 25 years ago on the day Xiao He He was born where her father sacrifices his life to save Zheng Xie. A sad and unforgettable memory for him indeed.

Chapter 5.2: We are all already born with our Fate

There is a vase of fragrant white roses. Zheng Xie does not like the smell of flowers. He was going to throw the flowers into the trash, but after thinking, thinks that it is wrong so got the waiter to take it away.

Zheng Xie truly admire both He He and her mother. They are actually the biggest victims, but Auntie Lin decided to keep quiet and remain calm all these years, never once mentioning those incidents that she had to go through.

With the same calmness, Xiao He He with the exception of the anniversary of her father's death, grew up without ever having a big birthday party. In contrary, her life is filled with sunshine and good health. She never think that there are anything missing in her life in comparison with those whom are better off than her, as if people whom are born without any father.

But he cannot forget. It's been 25 years already. The scene that day is still vivid and fresh in his mind. It seems like his own Pandora's Box, all of his unknown weaknesses, such as weak, timid, anger, resentment, regret, self-pity are all set in the box, carefully hiding his fear of being found by someone else. His mother was there. After the event, she felt sick and slowly she died.

That day, Zheng Xie with his mother went together to the toy counter in the departmental store to pick a gift. This is because Zheng Xie is being rewarded by his mother from receiving a "small red flower" (star given by the teacher) in kindergarten.

Zheng Xie put down the toy submachine gun that he was holding. Next to him is a man who said in a loud voice: "Show me the doll. The Male doll, no.... no.... both I will take. I do not know if my child would be a boy or a girl."

Zheng Xie looked up and saw a tall and strong man with thick eyebrow and big

eyes just like those heroes on TV. But under the both arms of the man, he carried a large stuffed doll. He quietly laughed.

The man looked at him and grins while snapping his fingers: “Kid, do not be a picky eater, eat more vegetables and in a few days, you will be higher than the gun.” Before he left, he touched his head. Zheng Xie tried to dodge and almost bite him.

Then, he is not clear on how things started, just heard a scream and then intermingled with a rasping voice that shouted: “Freeze! All get on the ground.” Among the panic, a loud gunfire sounded, not his toy gun sound, but like those on television. The air emit a pungent smell.

Those on this level, including the staff are mainly women and children. Someone cried shrilly and soon more people began to cry. Another voice shouted: “Cry some more, I hit you!”

Zheng Xie was grabbed and push to the ground. The person whom is holding him is shaking like a sieve. Then he suddenly realized, his mother just went to the counter to pay. And the person holding him now is not his mother.

Even in his young age, he vaguely understand that he cannot cry. Otherwise he and his mother will become the target of the bad guys. Just now, he could hear very clearly the sound from the bad guys, indicating that they are very close.

He is very scared and bite on his lips to refrain from making any sound. But he was surprised with a scream. The scream came from his mother.

When he looked up, he saw the bad guy grabbing his mother’s hair and pulled her out. She was trying to climb over the people to look for her child.

All the thoughts in the clever little head of Zheng Xie is the bubble of instinct. He struggled to break free from the arm of the man and rushed out: “let my mother go!”

A long time after that, he finally understand the cause of the incidents. Two of the scarred criminal on the run, while dodging the police, fled to the mall children’s department, trying to hold unarmed women and children as hostage to achieve a breakthrough. In the process of escaping, they even killed a policeman and took a pistol.

At that time, in several armed police who rushed to the floor, Zheng Xie became the first hostage in the hands of the criminal. They grabbed his neck and held a cold gun to the head, far from the confrontation of the armed police.

The young Zheng Xie is extremely scared. He clearly remembered his late grandfather who once said that boys cannot cry no matter what. But imagine, if he is dead and went on the newspaper tomorrow, his family and love ones would be very sad.

His ears are buzzing, could only hear them talking. He is having difficulty in breathing from his fear. He saw his mother lying on the ground but there is no blood. Probably she has fainted. That's is good. This way, his mother does not have to see him killed by the criminal.

Zheng Xie's mind is in a mess. Someone exclaimed and his head was heavily hit. His vision darkens and followed by burning pain.

He thought he was going to die but suddenly heard a shout by his ears: "You dare to step forward, I will shot the child."

A gush of wind, the grip on Zheng Xie's neck loosen and was fiercely pushed to the ground. He got up just in time to see someone with a gun pointed at the criminals and were fighting together. The man yelled at him: "Run!" While the criminal's gun is kicked, Zheng Xie saw the tall uncle as his rescuer. However, he only managed to run a few steps before he was caught by another person.

Zheng Xie remembered the uncle rushed to grab the fist of the guy who caught him. With a raised of a hand, thrown Zheng Xie and shouted: "catch the child!"

This was the last sentence Zheng Xie heard from his savior alive. When Zheng Xie has safely fallen into the hands of those who catches him, he wanted to look and see the uncle but his eyes were tightly covered.

The criminal lost their hostage and their guns and soon was detained by two armed police. Zheng Xie vaguely heard crying, shouting and the sound of an ambulance. He was carried into the car and his mother was also carried into the car. Zheng Xie's injury is very light, just broke his forehead by the criminals with their riffles butt. While his mother, the shocked induced her hidden heart disease.

The uncle who rescued him is also a police officer. He took leave of absence in the afternoon so had been wearing civilian clothes. He turned back when the crowd got into disarray. After he grabbed and thrown Zheng Xie into safety, he was stabbed in the heart by an unexpected sharp knife.

In the evening, Zheng Xie's father rushed to the hospital and looked at his wife whom have got out of danger. They brought Zheng Xie, whose head is in a bandaged through the countless stairs and corridors. It is just like the day in the shopping mall, bloody white coat walking everywhere, woman screaming and the sound of children crying.

Zheng Xie closed his eyes and cover his ears until his father pulled his hand down and said: "Xiao Xie, open your eyes and see this little girl. She was born this afternoon. Her father is the hero who saved you today."

That is Zheng Xie and Xiao He He's first meeting. Zheng Xie saw a crumpled small thing, smaller than his small dog.

He stared at her, trying to see where her eyes is when she suddenly opened half of her eyes and flat with a thin mouth.

Zheng Xie thought she would be like the other children crying along the hallway. But the little thing turned her lips upturned, seems like laughing at him.

||

Chapter 6.1 : Don't care is a good punishment

Cen Shi never gives up trying to get Xiao He He to meet him for a meal..... will He He finally give in and meet her ex? Should we really remember what should be remembered and forget what should be forgotten just like the proverbs say?

Chapter 6.1 : Don't care is a good punishment

Proverbs say: Remember what should be remembered, and forget what should be forgotten.

But we often: Remember the forgotten, forget what should be remembered.

Cen Shi called again. Xiao He He is not surprised but still refused him with just 2 words. She is not showing any attitude, but suddenly she had additional workload that she need to get back to work on.

Later Cen Shi called again for the fourth time. He He knew that she cannot escape it anymore so decided to take an early break. She agreed to meet him on Friday night to meet at "Pavillion Road."

The venue is chosen by He He so of course Cen Shi understand her intentions. Such a place with no festive images name, plain decorations but somehow the business is surprisingly good, showing the submissiveness of He He.

Haven't met for so many years, Cen Shi still have not changed much. Just looking so much more mature adding to his attractiveness.

Xiao He He compares his changes in her heart and feels that it is a great change. Without any meaning to complain but with a calm and peaceful hear, discover his bright spot, showing how broad-minded she has become.

"He He, you have become more beautiful now." Cen Shi said, with appreciative eyes just like a mild amiable big brother.

Xiao He He did not quite know what to say, thought for a long time and said: "Cen Shi, you are more handsome now," she finished with a hallow laugh or two.

Such a bad opening, the atmosphere the night becomes very awkward. Xiao He He is not a person with a good communication skills, does not know how to deal

with the scene and becomes more and more uncomfortable. She counted the layer of the lights, researched the waitress and waiter style of dressing and even memories half of the items on the menu but did not listen clearly to what Cen Shi is saying. To a certain degree, Cen Shi said words with a question mark only, He He asked: “ah?”

Cen Shi maintaining his full patience and grace, slowly asked: “He He, you still hate me. I.....”

“No” Xiao He He rebound and quickly repair the situation. “Cen Shi, your ‘sorry’ is not necessary and you have said it before. Resentment is derived from strong emotion. Towards you, the affections are not that deep.”

Cen Shi is very frustrated in his heart. He looked at Xiao He He who is sitting opposite of him. She looked at him just as intense. In a blink of an eye, the thought drifted. He clearly remembers that she is 25 years old, obviously passed the youth. But her facial features and small yet exquisite body is still refreshing and simple. Yet occasionally with a light touch, will always jump with remarks, just like how it was before.

Back then he felt that she is like a cat, curled up quietly, half-squint and lazy. When bullied by people, she show her indifference like there is no care in her world. But if anyone crossed her bottom line, she will immediately exposed her sharp claws and teething, therefore showing them some colors.

Thinking back to the past, his heart felt a little warm. Even though sitting across him, Xiao He He turned away from looking at him. She is so good, at least she did not forget him. Although she only took him as her mentor, not minding the past, he felt more frustrated at the moment. But he understands that as a woman, she is no longer the Xiao He He that he knew.

In the bathroom, Xiao He He looked at herself in the mirror. Just after dinner, Cen Shi was about to pay the bill, she left her meal on the table and turned away to the toilet to wash her face. She had washed it several times. This is because, with the water on her face, even she herself cannot tell if there are any flow of tears.

She has return to couldn't care less temperament. In front of Cen Shi, she never had any care. Although others take her as a joke, obviously a Cinderella

but pretending to be a princess, it is something that she cannot change.

He He's childhood and teenage years are actually nice, calm and happy. Although her father had dedicated his life in the line of duty, her mother's entire life is dedicated to the same cause. Because both her parents are orphans, she does not have any other relatives in the world. But this was never her concern.

Zheng Xie has a large family. In addition to Zheng Xie's mother, Aunt Qian also regards her as her own child. Zheng Xie's stern father, for her is exceptionally tender. Even Zheng Xie's strict and tough aunt and uncles are very friendly to her. To the extent, those teachers and students in her university years are friendly. This is because He He has a patience, calm and lovely smile. She is pretty although not stunning, performance neither good nor bad, she never post as a threat to anyone.

He He knows that such caring and friendliness, is not entirely because of her own.

Zheng Xie family treat her well only because Zheng Xie is the family's previous son. Because of the poor health of Aunt Qian, she treats her very well. Teachers and students treat her well because there is a noble family backing her up and also because she has a very admirable father and a great scientist mother.

While this is the fact, she actually had no real friends that she is able to talk to as friend. Her position is a little embarrassing. Although she is an ordinary girl, people treat her as a princess hence do not want to be her close friends. Those girls with good family also treated her as an outcast.

Her closest friends are those guy friends of Zheng Xie whom are 4 to 5 years older than her. Because they rarely have little sister, they loved and took great care of her.

Thus in Xiao He He's childhood and youth, she had been happy although slightly lonely. As Zheng Xie's shadow, she was happy.

He He would not because of this, would deliberately make herself look like a hedgehog nor deliberately took advantage of other's goodwill. She is not regarded as a spoiled brat that forgets who she really was.

Chapter 6.2 : Don't care is a good punishment

What happen after the dinner with Cen Shi? Read on and find out.....

Chapter 6.2 : Don't care is a good punishment

When she was 15 years old, Zheng Xie's girlfriend back then slapped her in her face and said: "Xiao He He, you don't think you are a swan, you are just lucky that you could step on the body of your father and rely on your mother's reputation. Your happiness are in exchange of Zheng Xie's pain. If you are on your own, you are nothing."

Such vicious words, she was not even sad. But many days later, she vaguely became aware of "Mother's reputation" meaning. She was very angry but her mother lightly said: "Mouth belongs to others, we can't stop them. We can take control of ourselves and choose not to care about them."

Without knowing who was also present that day and relayed the incident to Zheng Xie, he broke off with the woman a few days later despite her crying for a long time. Later, occasionally when their path cross, she would stared at Xiao He He with poisonous eyes.

He He does not have enemy. She is able to temporary remain calm and tolerate while taking a step backward. She thinks that there is a need to be tolerance and withdrawal in order not to provoke bigger trouble. So her enemy are mostly because of Zheng Xie.

Xiao He He do not care that she is just a small shadow and accessories as it does not mean that she is not capable of doing it herself. For her entrance examination when she accidentally ended up with a very good score, finally persistently choose a university far away from home. Here, she can be herself. Like or dislike, she is Xiao He He, who she actually is.

Then she met Cen Shi. She thought she had finally made it in the small world of love becoming a true heroine. She did not expect that it simple a farce only. Her image and status ended up worse than the past 18 years, adding more embarrassment.

He He stayed for a long time in the bathroom. Cen Shi did not harass her so she thought that he would have left. She saw her puffy eyes and drop a few drops of eyes drops taken from her bag. She hardly goes outside for work and the company does not have strict requirement on make-up. But there are times when she need to go out and see clients, so she put a bag of cosmetics in her bag. She applied heavy foundation and lipstick, thick eyeliner and even draw a large circle. This way, when she goes out, no one will look her way.

He He bypasses the maze-like corridors into the main hall to leave. She saw a familiar figure. The look of the back is very common, usually she will detour when she see it. But at the moment she is feeling very vulnerable, so when she saw him, there is a kind of foreign feeling of excitement of seeing her love ones.

He He feels a little nauseous when these words and pictures flashes through her mind, felt a little chilled.

Zheng Xie is sitting with a beautiful lady at a table for 2 person. From He He's point of view, the lady look very beautiful with a beauty that was born upright, nobly clothed, with a fine look. Cutting into the steak, she had a charming and graceful smile. Her delicate lips spoke, smile and talked although she could not hear, represent a feeling of nobel.

This woman style and moves are impeccable. If she goes for the election of Miss Asia, even if each judge removed the highest points and goes to the lowest point, the rest of the contestant will still lose.

Zheng Xie will always get the best of these kind of beauty. Her colleagues always complain that even if they walked about 8 hours in the streets will still not able to find even half of a medium beauty.

Xiao He He sit a few meters away from them in the leisure corner reading a magazine while secretly observing them. The peeping and evil feeling slightly offset before she lost. In a better mood, she is curious about the women that coexistent in Zheng Xie's life.

She found that Zheng Xie is sitting straight and is very gentleman, can also see that he is very gentle and polite at the moment. But she knew that Zheng Xie is very impatient because from time to time, he will secretly hand down and knocked the chair while looking upwards.

Zheng Xie small gesture are well hidden and is barely noticeable, however it cannot hide from her. He was clearly impatient through the performance while the woman wanted to come across general etiquette for a perfect performance. He has reached his patience limit but it is something that he had to endure.

Xiao He he chuckled in her heart and is in a very good mood. Unexpectedly the beautiful lady turned around and realized that she had been secretly watched. She glared straight and gave He He a supercilious cold eyes that is glowing with poison. This reminded her of Zheng Xie's previous girlfriend.

He He rapidly observed Zheng Xie. Oh, no wonder, Zheng Xie was bending down to pick up something for the lady. Zheng Xie got straight up and the beautiful lady naturally restored her elegant look.

Xiao He He mood swing is very big this evening. The direct consequence is that she suddenly wanted play a big heart. She decided, after knowing each other for a lifetime, this time, there is no need for Zheng Xie to ask her, she will actively does her duty for him and clear the unqualified women out of the scene.

Xiao He He uses the magazine to block her face and pulled out a small mirror to observe her makeup. Not bad and stared wildly. So the eyes will have a little graceful tears.

Then she quickly walked to them at the table, one hand pointing unsteadily across Zheng Xie's beauty with a look and tone towards Zheng Xie: "A Xie, who is she to you? Say it clearly!"

Chapter 7.1 : The force is mutual

Hahaha..... Xiao He He is in trouble... what exactly did she do to Zheng Xie and his lady partner?

Chapter 7.1 : The force is mutual

The whole man and the whole being, a pair of action and reaction.

Zheng Xie is so tired to the extend he is not able to keep his eyes open.

The company's business with the United States collaboration has encountered some problems. Because of the urgency and challenges faces, the night before, Zheng Xie together with several executives of the company stayed up late to work. It was already 3 am when they finally completed and Zheng Xie let them go back to rest for half a day. In the meanwhile, he remained in the company alone trying to get a few hours of sleep before continuing to cope with the visit from the leaders of the Japanese descendants, Eight Power Allied forces in the afternoon. Really tired him out.

Finally things ended and he was going home to sleep when thousands of miles away, his beloved cousin issued a temporary task. Cousin said that she is sending a beauty to him and asked him to quickly go and get ready for the blind-date. The woman is not a local and is here for a vacation. She will be leaving tomorrow. Once his cousin sister found out about this, hastily arranged to match-make them.

Zheng Xie is the only son from both side of his parents' family, so naturally he has become the families' precious. They noticed that he is already 30 years old but never had any formal girlfriend for more than 3 months, could only complain that the Earth gender ratio is not balance, 1:2. So they got everyone to identify potential desirable woman for Zheng Xie to have a look, hoping that he would be able to find one that he took fancy on.

Zheng Xie could neither find the excuse to delay the opportunity to meet nor the courage to resist his cousin. He eventually called the lady's phone to make an appointment to meet, otherwise he is afraid that his cousin would do more drastic measures.

The lady in front of him is a little boring. The whole night, she was talking and presenting herself like an elite and highly etiquette person. Very standard expression although lacking in the aura. Silly talks while asking some naïve questions, nothing interesting from beginning till now, making him even drowsier.

Occasionally there is a little fun! One minute the woman talked about how much she love “Charity” with the sacred wish to go to Ethiopia immediately to help the poor people, the next minute, look at the table of migrant workers sitting nearby, with a frown said: “God, how can you let them come here?”

“The hotel welcomes any paying guests.” Zheng Xie lowered his eyes, not exposing his emotions.

“This hotel is too vague.” The lady whom originally is a good match with him said with a dumb voice said.

Zheng Xie turned and look at the unhappy face of the noble guests at the table. He is dressed considerably clean and tidy, just the face is a little “dark” and voice a little loud. The lady sitting opposite him looks like she is about to conclude their conversation.

He then very sincerely said: “It is all my fault. I thought that you may want to taste some of the different kind of specialties like this place, forgetting that this is not the high elite membership club.”

“I really have no other meaning. I really like it here.”

Zheng Xie was stunned for a while from the words and tone of her voice.

He had to find time to talk to his cousin. The woman that she delivered is getting more and more soulless and heartless.

Zheng Xie took the opportunity while bending down to pick up the napkin for the lady to yawn twice. He got up to find the woman’s originally stiff face is now suddenly projecting a bright sunshine towards him.

With the lack of sleep, his inactive reaction is inevitable. He is surprised and puzzled with the situation. Suddenly in front of him flashed a familiar shadow while directly said to him: “A Xie, who is she to you? Say it clearly!”

Had he not been trained from young, he would have been stunned and sprayed all the water out.

Although he had met a lot of female friends, but he did not think that anyone think themselves eligible to rushed out and question him.

Then with a closer look, it is actually Xiao He He with grotesque makeup and an unusual voice. No wonder he could not immediately react.

This is a situation that is well beyond and Zheng Xie does not know how to respond. He simply sit on the sideline quietly while maintaining status quo.

Xiao He He looked into the hollow look in his eyes. She did not get the expected response and soon becomes a little discouraged.

Sure enough, the scene was stiff for a few seconds. She secretly received a positive sight, pretending with a shaking hands and wide open eyes, saw the shocked in Zheng Xie's eyes gradually regain its original size. She intended to quietly withdraw.

Who would think that the lady is steadier than He He. Her expression changed a few time while looking at Zheng Xie. She saw that he had no intention to protect nor answer, with confidence and cold face said: "Who are you to come and disturb others. You do not understand the meaning of polite?"

Zheng Xie realized that the lady with her cold face, is more attractive than before.

Xiao He He is shocked. It is clearly that this idiot did not even want to jump out of trouble. She quickly reacted and immediately throw the problem to him. She turned around and asked said towards him: "Zheng Xie, you say who I am?"

If it is not taking into account their image, Zheng Xie would like to pulled up He He and throw her outside. He looked around carefully. Fortunately they were talking in a low voice, and the nearest table is very loud, able to cover their dialogue.

He forbearance and tolerated. With a lowered voice, he politely said: "What are you doing with your unreasonable demands? Quick go home!"

He He pouted her mouth. Looks like he is not going to continue it but is

reluctant to end it so dingy. She nicked to his side, spreading her hand and with a spoiled meaning: “Give me cab money to go home.”

Zheng Xie opened his wallet and hand her a stack of cash: “Be careful while on the road. Arrived at home, give me a call.”

Xiao He He obediently get ready to leave. The lady across of him looked at Xiao He He with a sharp and disdain eyes while trying to restrain herself. Zheng Xie is wondering if he should, out of politeness explain it clearly to her. He He, don’t know what is wrong today, suddenly gave him a charming smile: “Ah Xie, I will change your bed sheets and quilts today. What time will you be home?”

He didn’t get a chance to twitch his expression while wanting to vomit blood, his lady companion stood up. With a very resentment anger, she stared at both of them and took her handbag to leave. Zheng Xie also stood up, “She is.....” Before he could even explain that she is his sister, the lady quickly walked away. She took the opportunity to deliberately hit He He and stepped on her foot. Zheng Xie wanted to stop the lady but quickly head towards He He and grab her steady into his arms.

The woman walked a few steps forward and turned back, perhaps still expect Zheng Xie to chase her. She saw Xiao He He hold Zheng Xie’s waist tightly while put up a V-sign with a proud expression. Trembling with anger, while pointing at both of them, she did not say a word but instead firmly stamped her foot, twisting and ran away.

| |

Chapter 7.2 : The force is mutual

Happy Easter everyone. Have a blessed weekend.

As an Easter bonus, I decided to bring forward the post for tomorrow as an extra post today. So enjoy the extra Easter read

Chapter 7.2 : The force is mutual

Zheng Xie want to push Xiao He He away but she held tightly onto his waist. She put her head on his shoulder and whispered into his ears quietly: "If you catch up, she would think that you had a crush on her. You will then be pestered by her." Gasping for breath: "This woman from the start is already so malicious, if you interact with her, would definitely be encountering family violence. My feet is almost crippled from her stepping on it."

Xiao He He uses the excuse of the injured foot and still cannot walk to maintain a koala posture holding onto Zheng Xie. Tugging back and forth while holding Zheng Xie's waist, he dragged her out leading to the interest sight of the a lot of people.

After a few minutes, she regretted it. What she thought was just nonsense embarrassment for a moment, with a word of explanation will be fine. Who knows, she had caused the pretentious woman to leave.

She is afraid of Zheng Xie really ignoring her, so continued to pester him. Usually he is a soft hearted person, as long as she show her soft attitude to him, he would not stay upset with her. Even though it is shameful, she clutched his waist tight, determined not to let go.

He He just did not expect that Zheng Xie did not drive today. As they got to the outside of the hotel door, Xiao Wang had driven the car over, saw them, with a surprised look: "What wrong's with Ms Xiao?"

"She got stomach ache." Zheng Xie blankly said. Twisting away from her, he opened the car door and sat in. Xiao Wang was shocked, immediately went around to the other side and helped He He opened the door.

On the way, Zheng Xie remain quiet. Xiao He He after reflecting her action in

her mind, begin to feel guilty.

Reflecting for a moment, Zheng Xie hate missing decent thing. He hated most women the known up to mischief. Although she cannot be considered “women he had known” because he only treats her like a child, at times, beating her ass. Definitely do not treat her as a woman. However, she still feels guilty.

Xiao He He pulled Zheng Xie’s sleeves and whispered softly: “I was just joking. Who knows this woman cannot be stimulated. You obviously could explain clearly to her, why you did not explain?” Even feeling guilty, she cannot keep apologizing otherwise she will lose her face.

Seeing that Zheng Xie still did not speak, she thicken her skin and said: “I did not lie ah... I did not say I am your little lover. I really helped you changed your bed linen and pillowcases. You have not changed it for a long time isn’t it?”

Zheng Xie closed his eyes. Xiao He He felt bored and went to sit in the far corner of the other side while muttering softly: “Stingy. Did you measure that the woman would be a perfect golden couple match? You give me her phone number and address, I will find her whereabouts and apologies to her, ok?”

Zheng Xie finally looked at her eyes: “No. Did not intend to see her a 2nd time. How come you are there today? What happen that you are so stimulated today?”

“Nothing happen. Just felt bored. So thought of playing April Fool’s Day for next year in advance.” Xiao He He finished the words and fell silent.

Zheng Xie turned and look at her. She closed her eyes with her long eyelashes flickering like butterflies. He rarely saw her with thick make-up. It is rare to see her wearing a dress, so neat even her short hair were combed into a small bun, appearing more matured. Only back of her head is the colored fish hairclip. The color hard pottery fish clip is made by He He. Because the wire is very hard hence forcing him to help. He He let him take the pliers to relive the back hand class. He He’s light yellow dress is his gift to her when she graduated and was going for her first interview.

In fact, he accompanied He He that time to the shopping mall and personally bought this dress. That year, He He failed in her first interview. She was badly affected. A month later, she bump into the interviewer and muster her courage

to ask the reason why she failed her interview. The answer really caused her to almost vomit blood, it is just she was wearing a dress that cost several million Yuen (Currency of China), people think that the girl is only there to play.

So that time, He He really hated Zheng Xie thought that he deliberately spoiled it for her, to make her stay in the city. She is always nervous. Zheng Xie when picking up the dress, did not care about how much it would cost and quickly tear the price tag. Later she choose to wear this dress to the party that she hated while being forced by Zheng Xie to attend.

He He's bag sat in between them. A big bag with a lot of mess cloth sew together by He He. There is a wrapped jade hanging, a good luck that she also ruined.

Xiao He He is a strange woman. Sometimes stupid with a clumsy hands, could not do anything well. After so many years of cooking, could only cook noodles and scrambled eggs. Unable to clean up the house, making her nest very disorganized. But she has a very nimble hands. Give her a bunch of cloths, she can in a very short period of time, make many lifelike doll, even making her own clothes.

He He's bag is very big and bulging. Xiao He He is always a disorganized mess. Hence looking for something in her bag, she need to rummage through the bag. He often have opportunity to enjoy her rummaging through the bag.

There are a variety of large and small cloth bags in countless shapes that were filled with keys, coins, mobile phones, CD players, MP4, umbrellas, towels, sunglasses, cosmetics, drinking cups, warm jacket and even a small puppet toy. It seems that she is always ready to leave for a journey. Obviously a horrendous mess, even further categorized filled, never making a mistake.

Zheng Xie looked down at her feet. A very simple style canvas sandals. At a glance knows that it is a stall goods, worth not more than 30 yuan. But Xiao He He had sewn many different forms of natural ore to it, so it can be regardless as a priceless items.

Should another woman is dressed like that, Zheng Xie can only sigh and keep a distance. But these added to Xiao He He, not only looks harmonious, it complements her well. Visible people's aesthetic taste is also due to the habit of

slowly being assimilated.

Zheng Xie looked at He He and sigh. He decided not to continue questioning her reason for her disorder behaviors' today. She has a very tight mouth. If she don't want to say it, torturing her also will not gain any success. But he did not want let her go easily. After a while, casually said: "Xiao He He, the lady that you upset today is someone that my cousin introduced to me. So you undertake the issue and settle it for me."

"Who" Cousin Rose" Xiao He He suddenly opened her eyes wide and her back start sweating. She began to believe that Zheng Xie deliberately did not play along with her earlier, not stating the truth to his blind date. He is clearly using her as a collateral, hoping that she will make mistakes.

He He is very tense while Zheng Xie's mood is getting better, "Do not be afraid. My cousin has always liked you, she will not harm you."

His good mood continues in the car to Xiao He He's home. He went upstairs with Xiao He He and ordered her to cook him pasta and get him a glass of milk. He asked her to go to his house and get new towels, toothbrushes and medication. This is because He He had caused him from being able to eat properly and loss of temperament as well as demeanor, therefore she should compensate him.

Xiao He He grinded her teeth and did as instructed one by one. Once the pasta is a little cool, she finally brought it to Zheng Xie only to find him fast asleep on her sofa. He had not even undo his tie. There is a slight shadow on his eyes indicating that he is very tired.

He He covered him with a blanket and went to shower.

She came out after her shower only to discover Zheng Xie gone and the pasta eaten. And miraculously, there is no bowl in the sink. He had actually helped her wash the bowl.

Then when she found the note beneath her lovely clay cat fridge magnet, she vomited blood (not actual blood vomiting but an expression). In a very clear and straight steep handwriting, it is writted: "Tomorrow morning at 0830 hrs, I will come for breakfast." Listed below are his breakfast request list: millet porridge, cake, eggs.... And so on....

Really.... Damn!

||

Chapter 8.1 : Boring and harmonious pair

He He can bully Zheng Xie all she wants and he hardly ever get angry at her.... however, when it comes to Zheng Xie's request, we can obviously see that He He will try to accommodate as much as possible. Even to the extend of getting up early just to prepare what is requested and ensuring that it is ready by the requested time. With all the things that she had done for him and his house, is this the love towards Zheng Xie that she does not realized yet? Read on.....

Chapter 8.1 : Boring and harmonious pair

Everyone has weakness, no matter how perfect they may appear to be.

During the weekend morning, Xiao He He usually sleep until noon. Today she scramble upstairs while carrying a heap of breakfast items.

It is raining outside. Holding her umbrella while carefully protecting the few packets of breakfast items requested in her hand, she is not able to attend to her wet shoulder and legs.

Whenever she is with Zheng Xie, she always wear a wrist watch to remind her of the time. When she looked at her watch earlier, there is only 5 more minute to 0830 am.

It is really strange. It is obvious that Zheng Xie will never get angry at her. He hardly show her any anger nor ignore her, but she is still a little afraid of him.

Cannot considered that she feared him as she is spoiled by him and dare to bicker him. At times, she also dared to call him a villain fool to his face. On April Fool's Day, she will spend the whole day maneuvering him, and even dare to cause trouble just like yesterday during his official appointment. However she dare not disobey him. From her young, Zheng Xie has always let her do what she want, rarely say "no" to her and also rarely reject her.

Thinking about how Zheng Xie has never been angry at her, her mind gently skip a scene but quickly pressed herself to not think about it. Well, probably such a thing had happened not long ago, but in this 25 years of her life, over 9 thousand days, more than 200 thousand hours, more than 10 million minutes,

and this little incident can be overlooked.

She has always been very generous and rarely upset at people, just remember well, do not hold any grudge, and only remember the good things and not bad things.

He He quickly ran upstairs and is out of breath. Even though there is not enough time, at least she must let Zheng Xie see that she is trying to make up for the mistake. It is worthwhile even if she is late for work.

Distraught. Zheng Xie is so disciplined and gives priority to efficiency. Why not stay in best places, instead of mixing with private profiteers. Such a waste.

He He lives on the sixth floor with no elevator. This is because she love the little pitched roof loft. But not she can understand the benefits of low-level or high-rise buildings.

The house is registered under her name. Not even a year after she graduated, she bought the place, making her feel like she had run into the middle class.

But in fact she did not spend much money. Using the demolition compensation from the house where she used to stay with her mother, most of the purchase has been paid off. With the help of her mother to pay half of the remaining housing funds, her mother suggested that she do the rest of the loan amount. This allows her to experience the survival pressure and also able to alter her bad habit of spending money.

When she went to complete the formalities of the purchase, the developers actually smile at her and informed her that they have several internal promotions in places. Because their boss and Zheng Xie are friends, she has been given a discount of 30% off the purchase price.

He He is shocked. This developers have always been arrogant with less discount and promotions. Their marketing staff attitude indicate the attitude of: "Buy it or leave it". For the sake of buying this house, she got up at 5 o'clock and only managed to get her wanted floor at noon. And now they are actually warm at her, waving their hands? Down with the privileged class!

All of the sudden, she does not even have to loan, there are also spare money. Later, she tried to beat around the bush and dig some insider information from

Zheng Xie but failed, so no choice, she just sit back and enjoy the privilege that has just fallen from the sky.

The consequences of this is Zheng Xie also buying the house opposite of her and left it unused for a long time. So she naturally act as his housekeeper, helping him to pay water charges, electricity fees, internet fees, management fees as well as hire regular part-time cleaner. He only stay there at most 2 or 3 days per month so she often helped him change the bedsheets, dry the quilts and stocked the items in the pantry although all expenses are paid by Zheng Xie.

He He emotionally always think, Zheng Xie obviously have many smart and capable secretary. And he despite her housekeeping skills, why like to bully her. Sometimes, to irritate Zheng Xie, she deliberately change his bedsheet to a pink sheet with hearts, Hello Kitty tablecloths and lace fanciful pillows. Yet he is not angry, just scowled at her and give her 10 minutes to clean up.

He He ran up the stairs, finally arrived at the door. After a short pause, before she could even catch her breath, she heard the door behind her opened. Zheng Xie, all dressed up comes out on time. Looking at his watch and the note that he left last night. Half past eight, the standard Beijing time, not even a second late.

If this is in the company, Zheng Xie will be considered as a very demanding boss. Although Wei Zhi Xian never complained, but He He thinks that Secretary Wei must have a miserable daily life. He He thinks that Secretary Wei is awesome, to be able to endure Zheng Xie all these years.

Xiao He He secretly yawned while looking admiringly at Zheng Xie while looking at Zheng Xie eat.

She eat very fast, because she loves to sleep in, hence not willing to get up early and developed a 3 minutes breakfast habit. Today, in order not to let Zheng Xie find out, she tried to slow down. But unfortunately, Great Wall or Pyramid is not built in a day.

In fact, Zheng Xie does not eat very slowly. But he ate calmly, wearing a T-Short and short pants at home eating porridge just like how he did in at top French Restaurant in general, which also seems quiet logical in nature.

Chapter 8.2 : Boring and harmonious pair

*In this chapter, we will see how boring Zheng Xie and Xiao He He are but also discover how harmonious both of them are. I enjoyed the part Zheng Xie's encounter with He He's new pet kitten, Xiao Bao..... so.... **enjoy the read!***

Chapter 8.2 : Boring and harmonious pair

Xiao He He yawned again while thinking about her bad habit. Although natural conditions is very important, if you start training from young, should be effective. When she have her own children, she wish to follow how Zheng Xie was being brought up. She rambled on how to come up with several children upbringing style and then suddenly realized that this is really nonsense. Looking at how Zheng Xie parents brought him up, she timidly look at Zheng Xie. At the same time, he looked up and said: "Early in the morning you have been yawning. What time did you sleep last night?"

"Twelve midnight" Looking at the unconvinced look on his face, she changed: "One? Two?" And then changed: "Maybe three."

Zheng Xie moved his lips, finally chooses to remain quiet. He oblique to her, then continued to eat his breakfast. He glimpse at He He with a guilty and conscious look, which directly more effective than his teaching. Zheng Xie when dealing with her, increasingly has a way to save energy.

Although He He is not a lady, but thanks to Zheng Xie's tuning, there are many rules that she will be very conscious and will abide. For example, even though she is very sleepy and impatient at the moment, she will still sit while resting her chin opposite of Zheng Xie waiting for him to finish his meal.

But of course her mind does not follow the rules. He He think if she should go shopping together with Ren Ran in the afternoon or stay at home to get some sleep. There is a daily drama that she is watching is having its finale tonight. And the story that she has been following seems to have a bad ending. Should she abandoned these? Right, the handsome male lead is similar to Zheng Xie. Every time when she is watching the drama, he reminds her of Zheng Xie. But the male

lead is very violent and sick, is she being dishonest here?

Floating mind Xiao He He came back to reality. She is shocked to discover that the table in front of her is very clean. Zheng Xie is even in the kitchen washing dishes and organizing her kitchen cabinets. Goodness, she pinched her arm once. Pain! So this is not a dream. He He looked out of the window, it is still raining and it is not red (*red symbolise danger or destruction*). He He quickly bounced to Zheng Xie's side, with a hypocritical smile: "Let me do this. It is embarrassing."

Fake polite is better than not being polite at all. Most educated people will have this hypocritical attitude.

"Just demonstrating and showing you how a kitchen should look like in a girl's house. You are so untidy. Xiao He He, how to get you married off?"

"Er". He He have been trained again. Xiao He He touched her nose, dingily hid farthest away from Zheng Xie. Before she even arrived at the destination, she heard Zheng Xie's changed of tone voice: "Xiao He He! What the hell is this?"

Things that changed Zheng Xie is very limited. Panicking in her hear, she quickly turn back. She saw the kitten that she brought home from Ren Ran's place biting while swinging on Zheng Xie's pants. Zheng Xie is looking very pale.

How could she forgot about it. If she had told Zheng Xie that she has a cat at home, today he would probably not troubled her and she could sleep in. Haiz... haiz.....

He He carefully put out her hand and put the orange kitten onto the centre of her palm. She put it in front of Zheng Xie and he took a big step back.

"Do not be afraid. Xiao Bao is less than 2 months old and will not bite. Isn't it pretty?" He He said.

"Xiao Bao?" Zheng Xie hissed out the words.

Ya, He He and her bad memory. Zheng Xie biting his teeth expression, she vaguely remembered, Zheng Xie used to have the same nickname of "Xiao Bao." But don't know what happen that caused the name to be a taboo, he later successfully submerged the nickname into history. From the time that he was about 7or 8 years old, there is no mentioned of this name anymore.

This cannot entirely blame He He and her bad memory. When Zheng Xie was 7 or 8 years old, she was still very small. But she was very considerate and discuss with Zheng Xie: “Otherwise, call Xiao Xiao Bao?”

“Just call Xiao Bao is good.” Zheng Xie generously said. “Bring it far away from me!” When the kitten wants to lick Zheng Xie’s hand, his lips went pale.

Zheng Xie took a few step back and went home.

Originally, he want to stay in He He’s place in the morning. This is because although her house is in a chaos and a mess, but it is very comfortable. Bright with pastel colors, the floors are filled with soft comfortable cushions. Extend the hand out, would be able to grab interesting things, very suitable for relaxation. But suddenly, there is Xiao Bao the kitten, and He He with her sleepy look, he decided to evacuate from her place.

The rain is still very heavy outside. Zheng Xie hate rainy days. He becomes moody on a rainy day and it becomes worst in accordance to how heavy the rain becomes.

By right, today is the day he would go back to see his father. So he pushed all his activities, but Old Zhen has something on, so Zheng Xie had to cancel the trip. So he is bored.

Zheng Xie admitted himself that he is actually a very boring person. Although he seems well versed, none of them is his own preferences. His work is very well planned and rational. Once the plan has been disrupted, he do not know what to do.

He mopped the floor again. He remembered that every Sunday He He said that there will be a part-timer that comes and clean. But this time he has nothing to do. He turns around and look. Although He He’s house can get very sloppy but in his place, it is very neat and clean. But then on his side, there is really nothing to mess up.

Then he saw down to watch TV. He changed the channels... in addition to the Olympics, there is the boring drama, which he has no interest. He stopped at the woman shopping channel and watched for 20 minutes and then felt bored. He thought of going back to the company to get some work done, but looking out of the window into the wet world, he quickly dismissed the idea. He began to

change the channel again. Finally he found a channel that broadcast the 1983 edition of “Legend of the Condor Heroes” where he finally settled down.

Zheng Xie watched the television for a long time, very focus. Later, the doorbell rang gently 3 times, for a long time. Stop and then rang again followed but the sound of the cat’s claws scratching on the door. Apart from Xiao He He, there is no one else.

“You do not have the key? Open your own.” Zheng Xie raised his voice at the door, too lazy to move.

Sure enough, the door opened and Xiao He He stuck her head inside.

Zheng Xie shouted out: “Wait, your cat is off-limit.”

“No, it went to sleep. It just do not care for your gloomy and cold home.”

Xiao He He slop in with her slippers, holding a glass bottle with a big book under her arms.

“What are you doing here?”

“It is so hot. Here you have the air-conditioning on.”

“Xiao He He, you have progress well. Now have the sense to be thrifty.”

“Now there is power cuts all day long. The factory had not even started properly. Such a severe electricity situation, how can I enjoy myself blowing the cold air? But your air-conditioner here is on by yourself, so it does not matter.” Xiao He He explained while throwing herself onto Zheng Xie’s single soft leather sofa. With her small stature, she almost buried herself inside.

“Brother Xie ah, your tasteful and expensive home, only this sofa felt relatively humane. If you want to give this house away, remember to leave me this sofa.”

“Why do I want to give this house away?”

“Maybe you would generously give this to your girlfriend...”

Zheng Xie holds the remote control and increase the TV volume, instantly covering Xiao He He’s sound.

The sudden loud sound scared Xiao He He and she immediately covered her ears and closed her mouth. Her memory is really bad, forgetting that the

amazing weather will always bring out Zheng Xie's unreasonable behavior. Look, earlier he helped her cleaned up the kitchen and now cannot even joke.

Menopause!

Her heart muttering those words but towards him, she smiled brightly: "Do you want to drink this grapefruit tea that I made myself?"

Zheng Xie glanced at her, did not make any sound but tune down the TV volume.

Xiao He He holding the bottle and drank a few big mouth. She kicked her slippers away, roll up her legs on the sofa and spread out her sketch book to start to finish her work.

She painted a few strokes and her hands paused in the air. She gently put the book aside and went barefoot to retrieve the slippers that she had just kicked away. She placed those slippers nearly next to the sofa, sat down and pick up the pen to sketch.

She glanced through the corner of her eyes at Zheng Xie. Zheng Xie was staring at the TV screen so intently that he did not see her.

| |

Chapter 9.1 : You should have a girlfriend

What a boring couple.... all they do is sit around and chat while one is sketching and the other one watching the television. They definitely sounded like an old married couple in this chapter... that of course is my personal perspective. In the meantime, we still don't know why Zheng Xie is so scared of cats... hahahaha... I wonder if we would ever get around to know that secret....

Chapter 9.1 : You should have a girlfriend

When chatting with friends, must talk about appropriate topics.

Xiao He He hunched on the sofa with her legs curved, drawing a group of cats.

She majored in fine arts. Working as graphic designs. Because she had a good boss that is not too aggressive, her work is not too hard. Therefore she had a lot of free time, giving her opportunity to earn extra money from time to time.

Zheng Xie's sofa is really comfortable and very ergonomic, just like a cradle that is there to accommodate her. She wondered if she could come over to enjoy the sofa when Zheng Xie is not around. Or even better, to bring the sofa home, she thought while sitting there looking at Zheng Xie on the other sofa.

Zheng Xie is no longer in his usual serious attitude. Lying half lazily, pillow in his arm, leg on the low table in front of the sofa with his eyes half closed. What a pleasant sight.

She suddenly has an idea and quietly turns herself 30 degrees. She turns to a new page and sketches Zheng Xie in his current position and adds a cat next to him, watching the television. She is very satisfied with her work.

Her task is to draw a set of 12 sketches of cats but her inspiration has dried up forgetting that there is a ready-made reference in front of her. He He wonders how to get Zheng Xie to give her another inspiration for another sketch with another cat. She found Zheng Xie looking at her sketch book and quickly she closed the book. She looked up at him with a slight smile.

Zheng Xie hates cats, so if he sees her sketching cats in his home, he will be very angry. And if he finds out that she has sketched him with a cat, he will definitely

extend her some grief. Therefore, he must never see these.

Not many people knew the secret of Zheng Xie being afraid of cat. Most people think that he does not like cats. They sees him avoiding cats when he sees them. Some would have thought that he is probably allergic to cats.

After all, Zheng Xie has been synonymous with “brave”. Once when he was in high school, in the classroom, he was trapped in the fire. In full view of others, he climbed down from the fourth floor along the windows and then jumping down when he is about four meters away from the ground. Just last year, together with a group of people, they went on a mountain climbing expedition. They came across snakes, Zheng Xie with a straight face, picked up the snake and drop it over the cliff in front of those screaming women.

So, who can believe that he is actually afraid of cats? Even kitten that is less than 2 months old... Simply very laughable.

Zheng Xie has long ago been studying He He quietly. He could see her guiltily covering her sketches which indicate that she is up to no good.

He He is wearing a wide shoulder straps linen blouse with prints and a denim shorts. Although he has always felt that He He is thin and but not short, but now looking at her, found her to be really small. She has small nose and mouth, thin arms with spindly legs, hands and feet are at least 1 size smaller than normal woman. Her legs and feet are very pale, dazzling white. This is because all summer, she had been wearing blue jeans and sneakers hence no chance to get the sun. At the moment, she is sitting on the sofa, not very dignified with one foot resting and shaking on the arm of the sofa, giving him a headache with the sound of the shaking.

Zheng Xie turned and looked at her feet for a second, without speaking but also to recover his eyes. He He very cooperatively and immediately place her feet back on the ground just like a lady and curled her lip: “There are no one else here.”

Before Zheng Xie could uttered anything, He He said: “This old drama, you have watched hundreds of time.” After a while said to herself: “In fact the big beard, is more stylish in this one. This one looked more rustic.”

“What do you children know?”

“Only old people will hold on to old things tightly.” Seeing that Zheng Xie is ignoring her, she felt bored and put down her sketches to lean over and push him: “Let’s watch the Olympic Games. How can you be so out of touch at times like this?”

“To me, I only see the result, the process is not worth looking at.” Zheng Xie moved to the side out and successfully got out of her reach.

“Wong. Teacher said, is the attitude is not good, even if winning is also a lost. So the process is much more important than the result.”

“Teacher? The old man said this?”

Xiao He He remain silent.

“You know, this word itself has acid meaning, because you failed to convince others to win, has to give yourself a good excuse. You can’t fool any inexperienced children.”

He He opened her mouth and then closed it, then open again with a gasp before finally could not help but sigh: “Generation gap!”

Then He He continue to sketch while Zheng Xie continue to watch his Legend of the Condor Heroes. In the meantime, on the corner of the television screen is a small screen of the Olympic broadcast. Easy for He He to keep track of the game and result.

On the television, Mu Nian Ci is being coaxed by Yang Kang. Zheng Xie whispered: “Silly girl.”

He He chimed in: “Mu Nian Ci is not stupid. In this life, it is rare to find love. Yang Kang although is not good, but he is sincere.”

Zheng Xie paused for a while: “Why are you so excited about?”

“You are the one that is excited. You like the hero, Guo Jing who is stupid and is blindly loyal to Yu Xiao. He loves his wife and daughter but somehow, for compliance, almost abandoned Huang Rong. Thanks to his good fortune, later for Xin Yi, had to cut Guo Fu’s arm. Huang Rong is such an aggressive woman, after marrying him become so terrifying. Even gave birth to such a child, Guo Fu, really a tragedy. He became his own hero while his family becomes victims.” Xiao

He He debated. She rarely debate with such a strong point.

Zheng Xie kept silence for a long time. He He suddenly realized that she may have cross the line with Zheng Xie. But words spoken out cannot be recovered, so she softly added: “Uh, Yang Kang is actually just an asshole joker. I prefer, the more perfect man.”

Zheng Xie said without even looking at her: “I am not able to communicate with kids born after the 80s.” He changed the channel.

Xiao He He sat back and relax, the crisis temporarily lifted.

Her memory is really poor, often speak too fast without thinking, hence had to pay the price.

||

Chapter 9.2 : You should have a girlfriend

Hmm.... Xiao He He is trying to recommend a suitable girlfriend for Zheng Xie.... would there be any women that He He recommend where he would consider? Read on.....

Chapter 9.2 : You should have a girlfriend

Zheng Xie has always admired Guo Jing from young, although he really don't have much in common with Guo Jing. He He remember back then, she discredit Guo Jing with almost the same set of theories. That time, Zheng Xie became very upset with her, showing his darken face to her for many days. Now as he is much mature, also more enriched in life experience, even his emotional intelligence is now much higher.

Suddenly something flash in He He's brain. In fact, she have not seen much of her father's photo. Her mother had said that she don't want both of them to live in the past, so collected and kept all father's photo. He He never raised any noise about wanting her father's photo.

The most impressive photograph of her father in her memory is the one seen from Aunt Qian album. She vaguely remember her father with a charming laugh. He He now want her legendary Guo Xing to actually be like her father.

She is feeling a little regretful. Things that Zheng Xie does are usually tough and is sensitive in mind. She is feeling sorry and realized that she should not just criticize Guo Xing who because of his dream and believe left his wife.

When she is feeling guilty, He He is most afraid of quietness. She turned and look at Zheng Xie whom is watching television quietly, even the volume is very low. Making it inevitably more uncomfortable. Zheng Xie is watching some programs, talking about pancreas treatment and a bunch of specialists as well as patients talking about their own experience. Zheng Xie is looking at the screen in full concentration.

Xiao He He, a layer of sweat breaking at her back, weakly said: "Hello"

Zheng Xie did not respond, so she called a little louder: "Brother Xie!"

This time, Zheng Xie finally responded: “So loud for what?” Seeing the channel on the television, immediately change the channel. Just now don’t know where his mind has drifted to.

“I think, um.... I have a suggestion.” Xiao He He said and swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

Zheng Xie screwed his eyebrows slightly and turned to look at her.

“You should find a girlfriend.”

Zheng Xie thought for a while, chuckled and said: “Didn’t you always say I have a lot of girlfriend, a waste of resources?”

“I mean real girlfriend. You have not seriously dated any woman for a long time.”

Zheng Xie sweep her with the corner of his eyes: “Why?”

“On the premises of dating for marriage. You have always been playing games of mind, how you will encounter any genuine woman?”

“Who asked you to be a lobbyist? Cousin Rose? Cousin Huang Huang? Or my respectful aunties?” Zheng Xie casually asked.

“When you are ready to get married, all the right woman have been picked by someone else, leaving you those that you despise or those that despise you.” Xiao He He said although it was completely ignored. She cannot help but become angry. She bitterly thought that she had been vicious enough.

“Getting married early may not be something beneficial. If does not goes well, ended up with a divorce. Then once again get back together?” Zheng Xie say.

Zheng Xie rarely gossip. Xiao He He interest is fully evoke and with a mischievous smile said: “When you invite Mr Cheng Xian Sheng and Mrs Chen for a meal, bring me along ok? I have had not seen Mr Cheng Xian Sheng. Not even at his company.”

Zheng Xie tease her: “So he is your type of guy? Might as well forget the possibility. Even if he is single, it is impossible that he will take fancy of you.”

“I don’t appreciate it.”

“A man that had got married twice, there is nothing good to be appreciated.”

“You see, you don’t understand it. You can be a diamond bachelor, although expensive, but finally there is inventory. But it is different from Brother Cheng, once out of stock, we can only wait and see, cannot buy. This is rarer than you.”

Zheng Xie nearly choked. Luckily has not come to the stage of him spraying out the cold water. He continued: “I’m afraid you will not be able to see Brother Cheng for the next year. He has now evolved into a standard indoor man, rejecting all external events. People familiar with him knows that his wife is pregnant. People whom are unfamiliar with him thought that he is pregnant.”

Xiao He He laughed for a long time, and then said: “You must be jealous.”

“Yes...yes. For such a long time, I have not met any woman who would drive me nuts. I truly envied them.” Zheng Xie thinks that the conversation is getting a little boring, got up to leave.

Xiao He He sees that he is leaving, quickly seize the opportunity and neutrally asked: “What do you think of Secretary Wei?”

“Who?”

“In the novel also said, the male lead does cannot find any women that he has feeling for. He look back and realized that the best has always been around. Secretary Wei had accompanied you for so many years. She is smart, beautiful and talented with almost no temper. You have never been tempted?”

Zheng Xie looked at her with the “You’re an idiot” look.

“Oh, really no taste. What do you think of Ren Rang then? Beautiful and gentle, can be considered a good match with you.”

Zheng Xie this time did not even turn back to look at her, just walked away.

Xiao He He shouted at the back: “Don’t be shy, ah. Invite me to dinner at night with Ren Ran.”

“Xiao He He, why don’t you list down all the women you know for me to consider? Don’t forget to note their height measurements as well.” Zheng Xie turn back and said to her: “As the proverb say, you are noisier than six hundred ducks together.”

“Proverb says, five hundred.”

“Because you’re too noisy, so add another 2 percent.”

Chapter 10.1 : The Premature Aging

Zheng Xie is slowly discovering the importance Xiao He He is in his heart. But will he acknowledge or admit the importance of her? Let's find out.....

Chapter 10.1 : The Premature Aging

Indulging in the past will sound like one is aging pretty quickly.

To evacuate from quarreling, Zheng Xie went to the window and look outside. The rain is still heavy, then he went upstairs to the gym.

He spent over an hour in the gym. Having sweat out a fair bit, he went to take shower. He could hear the national anthem from the television in the living room. The Chinese athletes must have won gold medal so decided to go and check it out. He found He He watching the television looking a little silly with tears in her eyes.

This is how she grew up, showing extreme love for the national flag and national anthem. Even just looking at the flag-raising ceremony on the television, she will be moved to tears. He is totally amazed at her patriotism.

But beyond that, He He is not someone that loves to cry. When she is disciplined by the teachers, or when she fought with other children till she had 5 stiches on her head, there is no tears at all. At most, she will grind her teeth but refuse to cry.

Unfortunately, the sight in front of Zheng Xie is not what he has expected. Instead, he found He He wearing his clothes and curled up fast asleep on the sofa.

The air-condition temperature is low. She was not able to find the air-conditioning remote control, so don't know where she found his clothes and wore it.

In the fetus-like position just like how a fetus is in the mother's womb, she look very peaceful and pure while sleeping.

Zheng Xie stood silently next to her for a moment while considering to wake her up or carry her into the bedroom to sleep.

As he was still deciding what to do, on the side, the phone that He He drop on her side suddenly rang. Her ringing tone is the theme song from {Black Cat Detective -黑猫警长}, bringing him back by two decades.

Those interested to know, can listen to the theme song @ [Black Cat Detective \(黑猫警长\) Theme Song](#)

He looked helplessly at the sketch book that He He dropped on the floor. He thought that the 5 years gap between him and He He is very fulfilling. He He has never had interest in cats, including Hello Kitty, Garfield and even the well-known Viking cat, why suddenly with this cat's madness. Really scary.

The old-fashioned theme song plays over and over again. He He is still deep in her sleep. When it sounded a second time, Zheng Xie could no longer bear the song, and picked up the phone. He stuffed the phone into her ear, while tugging her ears to wake her up.

The phone call turns out to be a request to date. He He answers in her drowsiness, while obliquely aim at Zheng Xie. Zheng Xie noticed it and went into the other room, but he could still hear He He's voice: "I have completed the drawings. Why don't you have a look at them? I have nothing to do..... no you're welcome. See you later."

He He soon said that she is leaving as she had something to do. Zheng Xie look out of the window and said: "Such a heavy rain outside and you still want to go for a date? Are you not afraid to catch the cold?"

"Who is dating ah? I am going out to talk about work. I am helping a friend with some drawings." He He frowned at Zheng Xie and continued: "he is also your friend, Brother Shi Lin."

"Good. I wish you success in your work. It is cold outside. Wear warmly."

With He He gone, Zheng Xie is so bored. He called a few executives from work to confirm several work schedule. They listened to him on the phone with a very worried heart. Their only worry is that with the unscrupulous weather, the boss will pull them back to the company to work overtime. To the outsiders, Zheng Xie is a workaholic. They don't know that it is because he had nothing to do.

He went to check out the fridge and food cabinets. They are stuffed with

frozen dumplings, frozen pizza, instant mashed potatoes, instant corn syrup and milk all very close to the date of manufacturing. These must be the job of He He in replenishing them.

He seldom eat these so-called junk food, hence these items barely move. He He constantly check the shelf life and will replenished with new ones. While most of the time this girl is sloppy, but she is also very carefully amazing.

But in this kind of moody weather, he would rather eat junk food than going into the rain. After studying the instructions carefully, he managed to prepare something to eat.

He had nagged He He countless time that eating these are not nutritious. He forced her to learn to cook. He nagged till he found himself very annoying. As a result, He He is only able to cook very delicious instant noodles.

Zheng Xie had just finished his meal when he received a call from He He asking him to hurry go and help to feed Xiao Bao. There is not much to do, just put the milk on the plate.

Zheng Xie bite the bullet and went over to He He's house. He is very pleased to see Xiao Bao fast asleep in his own bed. Very familiar sight. He thought, turns out to look just like how Xiao He He curled up on the sofa. They even look alike.

He carefully took out the box of premium milk and poured into the deep plate. He He brought this plate from Jingdezhen (景德镇) when she travel there last year. The beautiful end of the plate is a hand-painted fish. The plate is very precious to He He. Once he used the plate to hold peel waste, He He got really upset. Now, she is using it as a cat's tray, no longer such a noble look. Zheng Xie felt a little jealous of the cat as it is receiving better treatment.

Jingdezhen (景德镇) is a prefecture-level city in the northeastern of Jiangxi province, at the border of Anhui.





Then he received a phone call from Cousin Xiao Wei. From the start, she started scolding him. This is her usual opening remarks. Zheng Xie is accustomed to it, so put his phone far away from his ears and hear her speak. Although not very clear, it is just right.

However, because he was framed yesterday by He He as well as committed the big mistake, his cousin reprove for a long time. Fifteen minutes later, Zheng Xie phone is very hot and Cousin Xiao Wei probably is satisfied. She restored her aristocratic ladylike attitude and said: "Ah Xie, be beautiful and me about your 'little fairy' yesterday. Since she is so important to you and you have already come to that stage, bring her over and allow me to see her."

"I can say anything but really there is no such thing."

"Oh, I know. It is He He again, right? Zheng Xie, you have enough losses, but so what kind of brother are you? He He follow you all day and constantly becomes your scapegoat. In the future, how you want her to find a husband?"

"Sister, in fact....."

Chapter 10.2 : The Premature Aging

With this chapter, we have completed 1/3 of the novel. How is everyone enjoying the read so far? I hope that my English is understandable. I tried to follow the novel as close as possible, however do understand that there are possibility of some of it being lost in translations or potentially adapted slightly for better understanding in English.

I would also like to thank you everyone for the support, words of encouragement and the discussion on each chapter. I have truly enjoyed doing the translation as much as I enjoyed the discussion with everyone.

*We finally find out in this chapter about Zheng Xie's fear on cats / kitten and how He He found out his secret. Slowly, we read about Zheng Xie's thought on He He although he thinks that his feelings towards her is like a father-daughter feeling. I wonder when he will finally realized the importance of He He in his heart and that he **LOVES** her....*

Chapter 10.2 : The Premature Aging

"Isn't He He already twenty five years old? She also should get married. By the way Ah Xie, does He He have a boyfriend now? If not, I'll help her to look for a good one."

"No need. She will be getting one soon."

"In your circle of acquaintance, are you able to come up with anyone decent?"

"Do not worry. He is not within my circle of acquaintance. He is different from me."

"Oh, very good. Very good."

After Zheng Xie hangs up the phone, he found the kitten has already woken up and is one meter away from him looking up at him. His overreaction this morning has frightened it, so the little thing now dare not come closer to him. The little kitten only reveled a pitiful yet alert expression while watching him carefully. The expression reminded him of Xiao He He when she is guilty, almost making Zheng Xie soft hearted and want to crouch down to pat it on the head.

He realized what he is doing and immediately re-tract his hand and walked to the other end to keep the kitten at a safe distant. Cat is really evil, his intuition told him. Cannot get any closer to cats.

Apart from Xiao He He and mother, there is no one else that know that he is afraid of cat. They just treat his fear of cats as a kind of annoyance. In fact, he do not understand why he is afraid of cats.

Xiao He He also found out by accident. That time, He He is about ten years old and she had been chasing a cat up the tree. She had the ability to climb up but not to get down. So she was trapped on the tree for nearly half an hour before she found Zheng Xie.

Zheng Xie had to climb up and carry her down. He did not always feel that climbing tree is an elegant thing to do. Even if he was in the moment and age, he had never had the urge to do it. He He after getting down, pouting and tearfully pointed to the branches on the tree: "Mi mi (childish word for cat), mi mi."

Zheng Xie looked up and was amazed. There is a kitten on top of the branch, more miserable than He He earlier when she was up on the branch by tenfold. The kitten is shaking. Another fool that climb up the tree but not able to climb down.

Although he had a headache, but Xiao He He's pitiful and charming look gives him more headaches. So he once again kind heartedly set his foot into the rescue mission again.

Originally, it all went well although he was terrified. He was able to disguise it well. In the eyes of the bystander, he is very calm and collected. About 34 meters from the desired goal, victory is in sight. Zheng Xie though, after successfully rescue the kitten, maybe is ailurophobia will be healed, and he intended to take a deep breath and jump.

Maybe he accidentally held the kitten too tightly, hurting the kitten. The ungrateful kitten turned and scratch Zheng Xie deeply. Already in a very high tension spirit, this caught Zheng Xie by surprise. So the legendary extraordinary skill of the martial art of the young master ended up in a tragedy. Zheng Xie in the noble cause of protecting and rescuing animals is heroically wounded. He was not able to control and intensity of the landing hence fractured his right

foot.

It is a very dishonorable fall, hence Zheng Xie refuse to reveal the details of the injury and also order Xiao He He to keep quiet about it. But what he cannot stand even more is Xiao He He.

The incident happen during the summer vacation. Xiao He He had plenty of time, and voluntarily took care of him by accompanying him daily at his bedside. He He put on a “I want to be your feet, I want to take care of you forever” like attitude. Every day to repent her willfulness and ignorance, she help him in every possible way. Washing his face, feeding him meals, read him story books, singing songs and patting while coaxing him to sleep. In fact, Zheng Xie suspect that she will fall asleep to which she really did so.

In reality, He He although taking care of him, is forcing him to play with her girly house games. To He He, he is like a big lifelike toy.

Zheng Xie was totally cornered. For the sake of making He He less guilty and to come clean, he honestly told Xiao He He that his fall is not because she wants him to rescue the kitten but because of his fear of cat / kitten.

Recalling these events, Zheng Xie thought that he is just nonsensical.

He became extremely upset with He He for going out on a date with another person despite knowing that he is in a bad mood.

Zheng Xie had to admit, his relationship with He He, sometimes very funny, just like a father-daughter relationship. He at times seems to be her elders as he will disciple her more. Although He He constantly will pout at him, she also would reveal her secrets to him, probably more than with her own mother. In addition to his mother, Zheng Xie is considered the closest person with her. Seeing that she is willing to go out on a date in the heavy rain, it actually gives him a sense of sadness just like a father about to send his daughter away on her marriage. Even though the man is his friend, he will still enthusiastically advise and carefully consider them for He He.

In fact, He He had several relationship in the past. The longest being six months while the shortest was only two weeks. Most of the time, she will come grinning at him and said: “Treat me to dinner, I am heartbroken.” Occasionally she will vividly cry a few times in front of him.

At that time, he has never felt lost. Probably because he has met most of the love object of He He. Despite her being clumsy, stupid with no opinion of her own at times, he is very aware that these bunch of guys have no opportunity to become He He's soulmate. It is just a part of her growing up process, nothing but a playmate along the way, one day will go their separate ways.

However, Shi Lin is different. Zheng Xie understand Shi Lin as well as know He He very well. He is very clear that Shi Lin is a very suitable for He He while she is the type of lady that he likes. Should the timing is right, then..... this is the reason why he is so wistful. In the past when people share with him the story of father crying when his daughter get married, he can only listen and take it as a joke. Now he finally understand. And because Shi Lin is constantly abroad, that means that He He should also be away from him.

Really boring ah. Zheng Xie took a deep breath. He can go to the company to look for something to do, go swimming or go to the club to play. He remember someone once said, if a person begins to help free recollection of events that mean heart is beginning to age.

Who said these words? Yes it is Cheng Shao Chen. It was when Cheng Shao Chen had just returned from abroad. When they were drinking together, that guy were actually in a different mood, actually giving an infinite sense of loss.

In life, one must really be honest. He must have had his fist on the table and laughed too heartlessly, hence so soon he got back his retribution and began premature aging.

The problem is that once one is into the nostalgic and aging mood, the goal is clear. Everything has its caused and he finally got his wish. And for him, he is nostalgic about something really old, really something so heartbroken.

Suddenly, he felt physically and mentally unusual. It is probably the time to settle down. Perhaps he should listen to He He's recommendation and seriously look for a woman that is pleasing to his eyes and have a serious relationship with. Can also reduce his boredom while able to please the elders. If luck is good enough, maybe this would also resolve his life biggest motive (marriage). Able to serve multiple purposes, why not?

Chapter 11.1 : Psychologically low tide

Zheng Xie is feeling a little lost when He He becomes too busy for him... has he now found out about his true feelings for her? Or he is still in denial.....

Chapter 11.1 : Psychologically low tide

This psychological low tide and puberty feeling is really tough. Feels like menopause.

Xiao He He suddenly become very busy. Zheng Xie even had to make appointment to see her.

He had tried to call several times where she never answer her phone. Even when she did, she sounded really busy and would quickly hung up the phone. There is this one time when he had made a dinner appointment with her and last minute, she had to cancel it.

Luckily it is He He. If it is another woman, as long as they dare to do such thing, Zheng Xie would just purged them from his memory.

Later, Zheng Xie found a better way. He just get Secretary Wei to contact her and then convey the result. Better than he hitting the snag.

He suspect that He He and Shi Lin has really started dating. But because “Man do not bitch” mindset, he could only endure.

In the past, when He He is daring, she will always be too busy for him. So whenever He He is in love, which would be his most boring period. He will be so bored, he will also find someone he deem suitable to date. And when He He relationship is over, he will rush to comfort her, so that she would not be too sad. This resulted in his not being able to find time to date his girlfriend, so gradually, his relationship will end.

Whenever He He is serious about any guy, one of the advantages as well as her most attractive attribution would be where she always put her whole heart into it. Unless she hit the wall, she would not look back. Really set in her own mind.

It is Zheng Xie’s weakness. His father constantly reprimanded him for living without any passion. From younger days, he had never put his heart into

anything he do. Everything he does is lacking in interest and passion.

This is really not his fault. From birth, he has everything. Good family background, good skin, smart and good childhood friends. He does not need to work hard for anything. He can play the whole day and still able to come in first in examinations. When participating in games, will casually ended up with a few medals. Being it studying foreign language or musical instruments, with lesser effort, he will still be able to obtain a better result against the others.

Once in the past, He He was nibbling potato chips, while turning over the girly comic that she was reading, vaguely said: “Your life is just like eating bread and drinking water.... Not many surprises.”

That time, he was sitting in front of Xiao He He’s computer playing a game that she had been playing for over month but not able to get to the next level. He managed to break it after playing for less than 2 hours. It was his first time playing the games and he is not even familiar with the rules.

So he often thinks, if he is as stupid as Xiao He He, then maybe he will be much happier.

For example, for junior high school graduation, He He is very worried about her eight hundred meters test as she could never ran the passing line. Anyone that saw her, will find her running here and there. Later, under the command of his mother, Zheng Xie became her coach. And due to his strong and creative training, after five days, He He actually passed. And on the actual day of examination, she actually passed it.

Such sacrifices and then satisfaction, Zheng Xie do not have such privilege to enjoy the feeling. He could only carve for the feelings while through He He, enjoyed the feeling of achievement slightly.

After a few days, he still did not see Xiao He He. He met Shi Lin after dinner in a hotel, so they decided to get-together and head to another venue.

Shi Lin is not interested in entertainment which Zheng Xie is also static. So both of them ended up in the hotel’s underground casino playing pool.

It is very quiet in the deluxe single billiard room. They solemnly played two innings. Shi Lin is a billiard master but was reluctantly and half-heartedly playing,

Zheng Xie actually won a game. He was surprised.

“My mission in the country is almost over. I will be returning to the United States next month.” Shi Lin said while drinking water.

“So soon? Then what’s your plan with He He?”

“To be honest, this time I actually shot myself in the foot. In order to have an excuse to see her, I try to be smart and got her a part-time job. As a result, she got so busy to the extent that she did not even have time to eat, let alone to see her.”

“Over the years, your learning has gone the other way. Chasing woman can also cause you to see her less often instead of seeing her often.” Zheng Xie said while easily hitting the ball into the net. “But she did not have time to eat with you, there is also no space for others to eat with her, even I am not able to call her out. So do not be discouraged. Don’t give up.”

“My style is definitely different from yours and is immeasurably.” Shi Lin smiled: “It was said before, Master Zheng has always coveted the men that his sister date. He will destroy one after another. This is the rumors itself.”

“Which villain damaged my reputation? I’m just checking and nothing more. He He has always been a silly and naïve girl, what would happen if she met a wolf?”

Shi Lin laughed loudly: “Ah Xie Ah Xie.... I’ve never realized that your body actually has the fatherly shining glory. So shiny that I could hardly open my eyes.”

“F**k you. If you really have the idea, from now on, you should start currying favor with me.”

Shi Lin was actually laughing till he was tearing. He suddenly said: “Silly and naïve? I don’t think He He is a little girl as I see her as a quite assertive but seemed bored. She is quiet and sit there watching quietly. She can suddenly become lively and then suddenly become very quiet. Sometimes seems childish, but at times felt that she is matured for her age. Very different from the normal young woman.”

“Shi Lin, are you sure that the Xiao He He that you know is the same as the He

He that I know?”

“Is there a twin in your sister’s family that I don’t know?”

The cell phone signal is bad underground. Zheng Xie went out to answer his phone while still thinking about what Shi Lin said, laughing. So this is what they mean by the eyes of the beholder. Through Shi Lin’s mouth, the Xiao He He is completely enigmatic, just like the legendary mysterious girl.

Over the other line, it is very noisy and the sound of screaming and shouting. And then the sound of a woman crying.

Chapter 11.2 : Psychologically low tide

Chapter 11 is an extremely long chapter so instead of breaking it into the usual 2 parts, I have broken it into 3 parts instead.

In this chapter, we read about Zheng Xie heroic act in rescuing a woman in red.....

Chapter 11.2 : Psychologically low tide

Here is really a messy and complicated place, nothing to shout about. Normally, everyone also trying to avoid unnecessary trouble. If anything happen, then for sure got owner that will come and control it. If one can survive in such top and huge place, he is not a coward. Therefore, after fighting so hard for so long, is only a spectacular audience.

Zseng Xie hang up the line and got ready to continue fighting with Shi Lin to determine the winner. Then there is a sound: "Lift your hand off. If you hit her, I will call the police." The sound is very decisive, so all around, suddenly everything calm down.

"Who the hell are you? I am teaching my wife and it's not of your business. Get lost or else I will teach you as well!"

"If you got no place to vent your strength you can go to the pier to carry cargo. Or even go to into the battlefield. There is no war in our country, as the international mercenary that said: "Just bullying a woman, what kind of man is that?"

Someone secretly laughed. The man seem to rush over to want to beat the brave woman. And the woman dig her phone to dial a number.

The security manager rushed to persuade and pull them back. After a while, it all died down.

Zheng Xie turn his head around to have a look. The woman was wearing a red dress, tall and fair with shoulder-length black hair. Although invisible appearance, but she had a slim body and sweet voice, basically can be regarded as a beautiful woman. Unfortunately, in the entertainment venue, dressing like

this is good enough. If want to stand up for someone else, really not a wise choice.

He always thought Xiao He He is very “silly and naïve” kind of model, but now he realized that there are more innocent and silly people out there.

It is very late when Shi Lin and Zheng Xie bid their farewell in the parking lot.

Zheng Xie parked his car very near the hotel. When he opened the car, he saw a touch of red in the shadow standing in the parking lot looking around for something through the mirror of the car.

He started for a bit and then saw another two black shadow appearing behind her.

He thought for a second, sighed and turn the steering wheel back.

Zheng Xie saw two fancy dressed young men forcing the woman to retreat.

He suddenly felt troubled. He watched the situation for a while, open the door and quietly approached them. He shouted: “Wei!”

The two men was surprised. The red dress woman reaction is very quick. Taking advantage of the two men turning their head, immediately ran to the opposite direction.

Immediately, one of the man caught up, while the other one directed a punch towards Zheng Xie. He deftly avoided it and managed to hit back the man.

He turned towards the woman’s direction. The parking space is not large. The woman instead of running away, is standing calm but separating herself in a distance.

Zheng Xie jump over a few cards towards the woman and pulled her: “We go”. He turned back towards the two big men and said: “Do not chase. I have called the police.”

The two men swore and reflectively rushed towards him. Zheng Xie gently pushed the woman aside, took a step back from the one guy whom was heading towards him. He pulled his arm, using the other hand, backhand chop on his neck and kicked his legs. The guy hit the other guy. The pain must be not light as he did not get up. While the other guy rushed towards Zheng Xie. Tricked by

Zheng Xie, he fall upon his arm, crank his elbow on the stomach and for a long time, he could not get up. He twisted the man's arm and watched the other person, while telling the woman to move further away while slowly said: "If Zheng Qi Xiong know his men only bully weak woman, he would be humiliated."

"You.....you.....you know our brother?" The man under his control starts to sweat in panic and even changing the way he talk.

"Not very close. We just play with marbles and mud wrestling. At that time you should not had even learned to walk." Zheng Xie said lightly.

Both of them snap, dying to go. Before leaving, they said with a slight smile: "Brother, we are only joking with the lady. Just wanted to frighten her. There is no malicious intention behind it."

| |

Chapter 11.3 : Psychologically low tide

Who is this woman that Zheng Xie rescue? What happen after? Read on.....

Chapter 11.3 : Psychologically low tide

They did not dare to stay too long in the parking lot just in case it more trouble comes their way. So Zheng Xie led the woman into his car.

“I want to thank you.”

“You’re welcome.”

“You have learned martial art. Very impressive ah.”

“Fortunately.”

“How you dare to fight with them? You are not afraid that they have gun?”

“I have observed and confirmed that they do not have any gun on them.”

“How do you know the origins of the group of people?”

“Shot in the dark.”

“Do you know their big brother?”

“Unfamiliar. Once my primary school classmate for a few years.”

“Then how you know my nickname? Do you know me?”

“Ah? I casually said, there is a song.”

The woman kept quiet and the suddenly lightly called out: “You’re hurt?” In a panic, she dig her bag for tissues for him. And then took of the belt on her skirt and tied it on him.

It is a small wound, just a piece of broken skin, but now began to bleed. Speaking of shame, just now when he uses his elbow to hit the guy, he got himself scratched by the metal pendant hanging from the guy’s cloth.

Zheng Xie is amazed. This woman is just crazy. In the casino, like a judge she dares to go stand up for people, in the parking lot, was calm just like she is heading for dinner and now nervous, even the hands were trembling slightly.

Woman is indeed a difficult animal to guess. The best way is to not waste brain cell on them.

Zheng Xie is dizzy just from thinking about it, could not help but ask: “You knew that you had offended someone, how come you still dare to walk around in the parking lot alone?”

“I always am not able to remember where I park my car. After looking for a long time could not find it. I thought the incident is over. I never expect that in this country, there is men that is not graceful.”

Zheng Xie felt like he is talking to Martian. He cleared his throat, think if he should open his mouth, then swallowed back. Finally he asked one of the most useful information: “What is your license plate number? Model? Color?”

They drove around for a few minutes and finally found the heroine car that is similar with her dress color of a garish car. The woman is also born rich, do not know that the world is sinister.

The woman keep insisting to accompany Zheng Xie to the hospital to bandage his wound. He keeps turning her down. In the end, she dig her bag and passed him her business card: “If your wound becomes bad, remember to contact me.”

“Such a small injury, what could have happen?”

“Tetanus, septicemia. Everything is possible. You don’t be negligent.” The woman said with a serious expression.

Zheng Xie reconfirmed with this woman is back from Mars whom is back to visit her relatives. He managed to wait till the woman drove off in the car before he started the car.

They went out onto the parallel road. The woman waved at him and open her windows. He also opened his window.

“My name is Yang Wei Qi.”

“I know. It is on your business card.”

“What’s your name? I will contact you another day to thank you.”

“Small matter. There is no need to keep that in mind. Goodbye.”

Zheng Xie waved towards the side, and step down on the accelerator and his car speed off.

The wind is blowing hard through his open windows. Fatigue, he listen to techno music all the way home. If old Comrade Zheng listens to the music, he would definitely say that there is no decadent life attached to the music.

His recent days is indeed very decadent without any life. He had over the past several years, never been so psychologically low before. Not only there is no sign of improvement, but instead it is getting more and more serious. Meeting such exciting incident as well as got into a fight while meeting such a beautiful lady, he should at least have felt some excitement or uplifted. But instead he still felt meaningless, only the slight throbbing in his right arm to remind him on the exciting night.

Reading this part, I am starting to wonder when Zheng Xie would realized his true heart..... and the reason why he is so depressed and down recently? We as readers could feel it so strongly yet he does not seem to make any sense on why he is feeling like that recently. Or it is that he is aware but still in denial?

Can't wait to read the next chapter to see if there is any progress with Yang Wei Qi or he will still be mopping around wondering why is he feeling so down?

Chapter 12.1 : Knowing about the past

The Feature above [Image Credit](#)

Chapter 12 is another super long chapter so I would be splitting it into several parts. So stay tune!

Chapter 12.1 : Knowing about the past

As the authors would say, when the brain is blank, there will be too many words that one wishes to say but not able to say it.

Every day, Wei Zhi Xian will be in the office at least 20 minutes earlier. Turn on her computer, changed her clothes and then tidy up Zheng Xie's office. Then she will go back to her own seat to sort out her work for the day. Zheng Xie will walked into the office about 10 minutes before the start of the working hour all dressed up neatly. At most, the differences would be only 1 minute.

But today, surprisingly Zheng Xie arrived in the office at least 3 minutes earlier than usual. So when he walks in, Wei Zhi Xian is still not out of his office yet.

This anomaly is very abnormal. Wei Zhi Xian careful observed and saw Zheng Xie's right arm has a very significant new scars. It is very close to his joints hence it is presumably would affect his driving.

She tried to hide her curiosity, so that she do not appear to be nosy. Although modest expression of concern is accepted in the line of a secretary duty, unfortunately, their age gap is too close. This kind of concern is not worth mentioning in order to avoid unnecessary issues.

"Zhi Xian, help me to book two-round trip tickets back to the provincial capital, and returning on Sunday. The specific time, please ask He He."

"Director Zheng, the journey to the airport and waiting time is about 5 hours. With the recent flight delaying so often, driving would be better as it is only 5 ½ hours."

"The last time we go back, He He had car sickness and did not recover even after 2 days."

“Train?”

“I have train sickness.”

Wei Zhi Xian does accordingly to what has been instructed. However, this is her first time hearing of such a secret. He He is the kind of person who sit on the Ferris Wheel can also articulate clearly back “Moonlit Night”. Zheng Xie frequently drives on the road at the speed up to 220 kilometers per hour. Both activities scares her. And now suddenly she learned that both of them turn out to have motion sickness, one when sitting in the car while the other while taking the train. Now she feels like fainting as well.

春江花月夜 – *Moon Lit Night* is one of Du Fu’s most frequently translated short lyrics. Because in Chinese poetry, love poems are relatively rare, hence “Moonlit Night” is a rather precious gem. Read more about the poem at :

[Moonlit Night – English Translation](#) / [春江花月夜](#)



[Image Credit](#)

She went to work in the morning, but from time to time her eyes are looking at Zheng Xie’s wound. Can’t blame her as she is very curious about the injury on Zheng Xie. This is because he is usually very cautious. Occasionally, the band aid on his hand or his twisted feed, it is probably from the trouble caused by Xiao He He where he was made the scapegoat.

Zheng Xie probably sense Wei Zhi Xian paying attention to his arm, suddenly reminded him of something. He took a silk scarf out of his file bag: “I remember that this brand should not be cheap. Can I find a new one?”

Wei Zhi Xian took the scarf and looked at it for a moment: “This one is not cheap. This is a limited edition. Only 900 pieces in the world. Not to mention new

one, second-hand also hard to find.”

Zheng Xie paused: “The buy another scarf from the same brand. Send it back together with this one.” He handed over a business card to Wei Zhi Xian. Wei Zhi Xian turned the name card and whispered: “Ah... the staff there is so rich?”

“What?”

“The owner of the silk scarf. You didn’t notice that she is a lawyer at Qing Zheng Ping Law Firm.”

“Oh, I did not noticed.”

“Do you know that Qing Zheng Ping is the legendary law firm that loves to take case with no money nor influence vulnerable groups? Often take cases that will safeguard social fairness and justice, just like the origin of the name. Last month, they just helped a few workers fought a good lawsuit. The most exciting news over the first half of the year as they also sued the government.

“I’ve heard.”

“I only heard that they do not love money and hate the rich, but did not think that they had an ordinary lawyer that has a rich background?” Wei Zhi Xian gossip heart has just been aroused.

“Perhaps they make lots of money.” Zheng Xie mind floated back to the red car that he saw last night. Definitely not the kind of car that a young female lawyer would drive.

“Although they are resounding fame, but in fact they do not make a lot of money. After all, the lawsuit that they fight always favor the weaker party. That could only earn minimal. I have seen their boss, indeed have a very good personality.”

“Yes ah. Employees also have the same personality.” Zheng Xie bowed his head to work, ending the discussion. As Wei Zhi Xian turns to go out, he added: “Yes, you send by express is good enough, no need to mention my name, do not need to leave contact.”

Chapter 12.2 : Knowing about the past

A long post today. In this post today, we read a little more about their childhood days and how Xiao He He became part of the Zheng Household. We also read a little about how protective Zheng Xie is when it comes to Xiao He He.

Chapter 12.2 : Knowing about the past

Saturday morning, Zheng Xie and Xiao He He sat on the plane. He He face and eyes were swollen, presumably drank too much water before going to bed.

“Your eyes, if not swollen, it is black ring. It is harder to see you lately.”

“I am already 25 years old. It is said that this is the beginning of the declining of the age of flowers. Physical fitness has also begun to decline.” He He said while yawning.

“This little girl, can also say declining of flowers. When did you bloom?” Zheng Xie said to her. “Have you been staying up late?”

“I did not. Yesterday, I finally completed the work, so went to bed early. Ah, not that early as well, it is after 7pm. As a result, the face is swollen.”

“Work and rest is not the law.”

Over the years, Zheng Xie and He He had already formed the “left ear in, right ear out” strategy hence never quarrel. When Zheng Xie restored the silence, He He smiled and pulled his sleeve: “I recently made a little extra money, I treat you to a big meal. Where do you want to go?”

Zheng Xie asked: “How much did you earn?”

“Seven thousand. It is a lot, right?” He He said while showing off.

“So much? Then we go and eat the set meal at Jing Lu.”

“Jing Lu? Sounds like a nunnery. It is not all vegetarian? You will think of me being too cheap.”

“Its ok. One person only three thousand, so you will only have one thousand left.” Zheng Xie said casually.

“When did you change your name to 世仁啦 ah?” He He lowered her voice and cried.

世仁啦 – *I am not able to find the meaning of these 3 words but am able to find out from Chinese-English dictionary online ([Chinese-English Dictionary](#)) that the meaning of 世仁 can be represented as clashes that comes from economic globalization*

“You work so hard for the last two weeks in overtime but only to earn seven thousand and yet is so proud and stuck up. These money is enough for you to buy health supplement to regain your health?”

“Seven thousand is still money. A lot of people suffer to for a year only to be able to make such amount. Snob! Profiteers! Upstart! Do not know the sufferings of people!” He He’s enthusiastic has been mercilessly hit and is very angry. She ignored Zheng Xie for the rest of the way.

“I am drawing the line.”

Zheng Xie did not notify his family on his flight details. However, he saw the car waiting the moment they got out of the airport. He did not ask and pulled He He into the car.

Both of them travel light. He He only with an obliquely small bag while Zheng Xie does not even have any luggage. Out from the airport, they look very different from the other travelers.

After getting into the car only they found out that Comrade Lao Zheng had gone to the village today and is only back in the evening. He He called her mother but only managed to reach her assistance whom told her that Profession Lin is in the laboratory till the evening.

Both of them looked at each other in silence. They heard Driver Lee said: “Secretary Zheng said, tonight dinner together with He He.”

“I want to accompany my mother.”

“Secretary Zheng also asked Professor Lin. Professor Lin said that if she is free she will come. If she is not free, He He definitely will go. Eating dinner alone is boring.”

Driver Lee have been working with Zheng Xie's home for many years. He has taken He He to and from school. Of course this is just on the way as he drives Zheng Xie to school and back. So it is considered that he has seen He He growing up.

The capital city is actually Zheng Xie's real home, where his parents grew up, get married. And then they transferred few times due to his father's work. Zheng Xie stayed in the province largest port city the longest period, about 12 or 13 years. After that Comrade Lao Zheng is promoted again, hence they moved back here.

Speaking of that, it is really a coincidence. Zheng Xie is already in Senior High 3rd year then while He He is in the junior school. Just before the promotion of Comrade Zheng, He He's mother who belongs to the Institute, had to transfer to a university in the provincial capital because of policy reasons.

He He's mum wants to bring He He together with her. While He He in every possible way is against it. She is a child whom is afraid of changes. At each upgrade to the next year where her teacher and friends will be replaced, the kind of unpredictable future will scare her. She will not even be able to sleep well. Not to mention that this time around, it is a huge change.

Later, Zheng Xie's mother is the one who rescued her. Auntie Qian softly said to her mother, the child just started school and managed to adapt to the new environment. And then change again, afraid that she is not able to adapt. Why don't wait till end of the semester, after all, she is here and she will help to look after He He.

He He's mother had been a busy mother from her younger days. When she is very young, had entrusted her to nanny. In her junior middle school, He He was placed in boarding school. Her impression of her mother is a beautiful yet stern person, He He is more afraid of her mother than her class teacher. While Auntie Qian is more affectionate like a mother to her. Even when she is in boarding school, always visiting her in school with delicious food, more often than her own mother.

So her mother left her alone in the huge city. He He did not felt any self-pity but was secretly happy for a long time.

But the happiness was not meant to be for too long. Not long after that, she learned the news of Uncle Zheng whom would be transferred to the provincial capital. This means that Aunt Qian will also accompany him and maybe as Zheng Xie.

As a result, only Aunt Qian went alone. Zheng Xie said: "I do not want to change the school. I will need a long period of time to adjust, and this will impact my performance."

Zheng Xie has always been the first in class for years. So they naturally respect his wishes. And the poor Aunt Qian who is weak and often ill, has to travel between the two cities every month. On the weekend, Zheng Xie and Xiao He He will sit at each end of the table with nanny serving them dishes. During the waiting time, Zheng Xie will be reading newspaper while Xiao He He will be reading girls comics.

Very often, Zheng Xie without warning will throw the newspaper to He He and said: "Let's change."

He He dare not defy but will quietly went up to Zheng Xie to pass him the cute comic and then hold the newspaper and read. Although she understands every word, but for a long period of time, cannot read understand a single word.

Zheng Xie being in control without his parents' days did not last long before Liu Qian Rou and her husband returned home. Her reason is that living in the coastal city for so many years, her sickly body has been completely not able to meet the climate of inland cities. So it is still the ocean climate better for her.

Not long after that, Zheng Xie passed the college entrance examination and went to college to study. Zheng Xie's mother told He He's mother that she is lonely with nothing to do. Since she is too busy and no time to take care of He He, it is better to let her stay in the city to accompany her.

Those few years are the period of time where He He's mother is at her busiest time. It was a major research project that she needs to rush against time to complete. And the same period of time, it is He He's rebellious adolescence time, so she readily agreed.

Later, Mother Zheng managed to convince He He's mother that He He no longer needs to live in campus but live with Mother Zheng instead.

Thus, after several years, Aunt Qian and He He become closer, more like mother and daughter. So when she introduces He He to others, she often said: "This is my daughter, He He."

He He sometimes stands in front of the mirror and looks at herself. She cannot see what will please Aunt Qian, so she often refers to herself with a gentle and warm smile.

She vaguely heard from the gossiping mouths of the nannies, because of the two tangled pasts, the Zheng family is compensating her. However, He He is aware that Aunt Qian treats the world greatly even the poor. So she is vaguely aware that Uncle Zheng is soft-hearted towards Aunt Qian, so she is not bothered.

The two nannies disappeared completely from the Zheng household shortly after that. He He is not a child who likes to be a busybody, hence never asked about it. When Zheng Xie is back, Aunt Qian with a dissatisfaction expression but with a gentle admonished tone told Zheng Xie to be tolerant and caring of others and to accommodate the shortcomings of others. It is then He He learned that it was actually Zheng Xie's arrangement to replace those two nannies.

Thousands of miles away in his study, even the trouble within the family is known. Xiao He He thinks that Zheng Xie has a magical wand.

|

Chapter 12.3 : Knowing about the past

Through this chapter, I finally understand why Zheng Xie and He He can be such a boring couple..... their upbringing and parents are similarly as boring.... Enjoy the read as we discover more about their families....

Chapter 12.3 : Knowing about the past

Secretary Zheng looking for Zheng Xie is usually not for anything really important.

Zheng Xie is always known to have a good sense of everything. From his younger days, he hardly disturb his father for anything.

But he still need to regularly report back to his father on the current situation in his life. To be concise, the report is not less than 5 minutes but not more than 10 minutes. After answering his father's questions, just like an interviews.

This is his father's occupational disease, also their father and son way of communications.

Zheng Xie and his father walked out from the library to see that He He's mother has also arrived and is talking to He He. She speaks with a gentle tone with her calm face but He He, whom is sitting opposite of her bow her head in silence, just like she has done something wrong.

Zheng Xie has known He He's mother for over 20 years and pretty understand her. Her impression is still like a layer of fog, cannot be seen clearly.

Ms Lin has the appearance and elegant of temperament. When she is together with He He, they look more like sisters not like mother and daughter.

Ms Lin rarely put on any expression. Zheng Xie have only seen her smiling and not smiling kind of expression. He has never seen any angry or anxious look.

Ms Lin rarely speak. Often only when others question, she will answer. She never talks about others, and there others don't talk about her.

Ms Lin is an expert in her field of academic.

Such a woman with no desire or emotion but wholeheartedly only want to

study for her knowledge. She grew up being unconsciously coincide her image as Gu Mu Pai (古墓派) successor by others.

古墓派 – *Gu Mu Pai is the secret of Ancient Tomb Sect, a kung fu school founded by Grand Ancestress Lin Chaoying. The kung fu of this Sect is elegant, graceful, light, and beautiful and appears harmless.*

But Zheng Xie tries not to think of Lin Yi Xin as Xiao Long Nu (小龙女). This is because he always felt that He He's dad is like Guo Jing (郭靖).

郭靖 – *Guo King is a fictional protagonist in the popular Wuxia novel, The Legend of the Condor Heroes written by Jin Yong.*



小龙女 – *Qiao Long Nu is a fictional female protagonist in The Legend of the Condor Heroes.*

Huang Rong's husband and Yang Guo's wife got married and had a daughter.... This is how chaotic their relationship are.



Zheng Xie mind is still in the past. Originally He He's head is lowered. She heard footsteps and raised her head. Unexpectedly turn towards him throwing him a surprised look in the eyes, flattering Zheng Xie.

He He has always been afraid of her mother, which is equivalent to Jia Bao Yu (贾宝玉) with Jia Zheng (贾政). But He He obviously admits that her mother not only never hit her, scolded her, even harsh words towards her also never happen. But somehow, she is afraid of her mother.

贾宝玉 – *Jia Bao Yu is the main character in a classic Chinese novel titled: Dream of the Red Chamber (紅樓夢) that is also known as The Story of the Stone, composed by Cao Xue Qin. This is a Chinese Romeo-and-Juliet love story that also is a portrait of one of the world's greatest civilizations. Read more about the novel @ [Dream of the Red Chamber \(紅樓夢\)](#)*



贾政 – *Jia Zheng is the father of 贾宝玉 (Jia Bao Yu)*

The older generation started chatting among themselves while the younger generation is free to do what they want.

When Professor Lin and Secretary Zheng gets together, it is a full reflection of the Chinese ceremonies style.

“Yi Xin, how is the progress of your research? I heard Lao Li said that you often experiment overnight. But health is more important.”

“Thank you for your concern Secretary Zheng. Everything is going smoothly. You need to pay more attention to the body, not too tired.”

Dinner in the Zheng household is very lavish. On the tables are many dishes. Many of these dishes are He He’s favorite.

Zheng Xie and He He when sitting on the dinner table is very quiet. This is because as a child, they were prevented from speaking at the table, in order to avoid food choking. Good habit that is hard to change, so when they grow up and the ban is removed, they have always been silent. They will keep their head down and eat quietly while respectfully listen to Professor Lin and Secretary Zheng chatting while dining. They will chat about the province with the content

that covers politics, economy to science and technology and so on and so forth.

The dinner ended very early because Professor Lin need to head back to the lab to check on the result of her research. She lightly turn to He He and said: “You go to sleep. Don’t wait for me. Remember to lock the door with three locks.” This means that she will only be back at dawn.

In fact, Zheng Xie will be bringing He He along to attend another party.

Zheng Xie’s Cousin Qiang Wei is waiting for him at the famous teahouse, Yingbin saying that it has been a long while since she last met him in person. She misses im and wants to make sure that he comes out.

After going up, in the private room, there is not only his cousin alone. His long lost cousin Liang Bing Bing and a young woman that he had not met before are also there.

Sure enough, it is as what he had expected, another matchmaking attempt. Fortunately, he had prepared for this and hence brought along Xiao He He.

||

Chapter 12.4 : Knowing about the past

Oh no.... Zheng Xie cousin sisters are back to arrange blind date for him again! Would he be able to get out of this one? Would Xiao He He be there to 'rescue' him again? Enjoy the read.....

Chapter 12.4 : Knowing about the past

Cousin Xiao Wei's nickname is Qiang Qiang, one of the children from the maiden side of Zheng Xie's mother family. Since Doraemon showed the "strong" side with the music that is the prevalence of "Wei", she began forcing everyone to rename her as "Qiang Wei."

In the early years of University, Qiang Wei is the Drama Club President, therefore she acquired a superb exaggerated and theatrical expression. She seems surprised at the moment and stood up: "A Xie. What a coincidence. Let me introduced to you... this is your Cousin Bing's junior apprentice and good friend, Chen Zi You."

Turning to the lady whom have already stood up and said: "Xiao You, this is my cousin, Zheng Xie." Zi You smiled: "I've heard a lot about you, finally get to see the real person."

Then she continued to introduce: "This is He He, the little sister in our family." She deliberately stressed on the "our family" rather than personal.

He He smiled timidly towards the beauty.

"We were talking a few minutes ago, and only found out that Zheng Xie is back today. Since he is also nearby, they have to come to see me and Cousin Bing Bing. What a coincidence."

"Yes ah." All the ladies elegantly smiled. After all, all ladies smile are similar.

Smiling most elegantly is Cousin Qiang Wei. Only 30 minutes ago, on the phone with Zheng Xie, she said: "Today if you dare not to turn up, you will be a dead man." Not to mentioned that she already knew three days ago about Zheng Xie returning home. Moreover, his Cousin Bing Bing has now joined the ranks of matchmaker.

In fact, Chen Zi You was also abducted by the two sisters to come. Conventionally, she excused herself to the bathroom and did not come back for a long time. To stir along the atmosphere, they dragged He He along with them to the toilet as well.

So the two ladies had to make efforts to change the matchmaking attempt into a seemingly normal group of friends and relatives meet up. They strive to find interesting topics to talk about while looking forward to receive unexpected results.

The control of the scene is also very good. Just like ladies and gentlemen catching up over afternoon tea, only time is changed to night. The dialogue were scrupulous, question and answer, polite and calm.

Liang Bing Bing and Chen Zi You are quiet and light, soft voiced women. As for Xiao He He, she recognize the situation, only obediently bowed her head and sipped her tea while eating cake, avoiding from getting burned. Zheng Xie is surrounded by four women is also regarded as strolling leisurely. Cousin Qiang Wei is the one that worked the hardest until she ran out of new topic. But the others refused rounder for her so she cleared her throat and said softly: "He He has grown taller from the last time I saw her."

He He would have to grow tenderly. She could deliberately lied about her age, would definitely be considered as a minor especially in the situation tonight.

Zheng Xie laugh: "He He has tanned a little during this summer and lost some weight. So she looks a little taller. Cousin Qiang Wei, you have make visual mistakes." While saying that, he reached out and brush her hair behind her ears.

He looked up to enjoy Cousin Qiang Wei gradually stiff expression. Using chopsticks, he picked up the small dessert served and placed it on He He's plate. "You missed the little snacks here for a long time. This time eat more." Then he got the waiter to serve them more dishes, while remembering to show his welcoming hospitality to the guest: "Ms Chen, would you like more?"

"Thank you. I am on a diet, hence do not eat dessert in the evening." Chen Zi You said softly.

The most innocent one is Xiao He He. Originally the pastry in Yingbin are very yummy and scarily expensive. In the past, when He He come to eat, she always

felt like she is directly eating RMB.

But actually she is already full as well as had drank a lot of tea. Because she knew that she had been framed to become a “light bulb” (3rd party), the temperature has increased a lot. She is also secretly aware of the number of eyes actually on her now, even though she is showing them her head. But that also, she felt that her scalp has been roasted. In time like this, how could she taste these delicious pastry, she just want to quickly escape.

Zheng Xie refused to let her go and continuously filled her plate with dessert. She is totally speechless but could only use her eyes to indicate to him to spare her. Zheng Xie said: “Do you want juice?” He then took a paper towel to wipe the cake residue from her mouth.

“The relationship between Mr Zheng and sister is really good.” With a graceful smile Ms Chen said. The calm Cousin Bing Bing began to laugh really hard.

This well-planned matchmaking date has reached it finishing line. On the road home, Qiang Wei and Liang Bing Bing could not help but sigh.

Qiang Wei grind her teeth: “This Zheng Xie is a dead boy, always let me down. Frustrating me to death.”

||

Chapter 12.5 : Knowing about the past

Finally, the last part of Chapter 12. This is indeed an extremely long chapter to translate.

Both Zheng Xie cousins are wondering if Zheng Xie likes He He, hence the reason why he has not been responsive to all the blind dates that had been arranged for him. I anticipate the read when both of them start to realized their feelings for each other. I wonder who would realized it first, Zheng Xie or Xiao He He....

In the meantime, let's just sit back and enjoy the read the conversation between the 2 cousins while on the other side, the conversation between Zheng Xie and Xiao He He.

Chapter 12.5 : Knowing about the past

“He He is also pitiful. Every time used by Ah Xie.” Liang Bing Bing sigh. “Qiang Wei, in your opinion, would it be that Ah Xie likes He He, hence he has been waiting for her to grow up?”

“He He is already twenty-five. Not big enough? If he really have the heart, he would have started it, no need to change every two or three days. I used to think the same. But Ah Xie had returned from abroad for four to five years. I had observed in these four to five years, but I did not see any movement.”

“Ah Xie is a guy with high IQ with low EQ. Whom have you seen him ascending to in the heart? In additional to Aunty Qian, there is only one other that is Xiao He He.”

“Do not you think Ah Xie and He He together is just like every family, most of the time, Ah Xie will be dad while He He will be like the maid.” Qiang Wei sigh. “If he genuinely marry He He, although a little childish, it is also great as we have seen her growing up, so know her pretty well. I am most worried about.....”

“He He is childish?” Liang Bing Bing drove the car and barely missed an illegally turned car. “I felt that He He only act childish in front of Ah Xie. Many other time, this little girl is very assertive and stubborn. If she has decided on

something, it is hard to change her mind. In many ways, she is similar to her mother.”

“How is it possible that He He is similar to her mother? Totally different. Lin Yi Xin is an amazing woman. For so many years with all that happened to her, including the serious illness the year before, she actually ought to people suffering but she can completely be unaffected. She clearly towards this kind of things do not care, including her daughter. But for her work, she set her whole heart into.”

“That is sustenance ah, sustenance. Qiang Wei, you should always look at nature. By the way, what did you say you are worried about earlier with regards to Zheng Xie?”

“Uh, that one. Do you think Zheng Xie has any defects ah? Physical? Psychological? Otherwise, why he never.....”

Bing Bing brakes: “Got such sister that curse her own brother to have defect..... you have not heard that he changed his companion just like he is changing seasonal clothes?”

“Yes ah, all less than three months. This means there is not enough in-depth understanding of the.....”

I will reflect on the dividing line

Zheng Xie drove the car with He He and brought her to walk around the bustling night market.

Zheng Xie felt his ears hot. He suspect that his cousin is complaining about him, perhaps with his name written on the voodoo doll stuck with needle.

There are many people in the night market. He He is excitedly checking out each stalls. With a flash of an eye, she is gone. So Zheng Xie pulled her knapsack straps, just like he is holding small pets.

He He shake him off and led him on. She often wants to intensively check out any stall but will be pulled back.

“Hateful. Let me go. I am not your dog.”

“You have already walked for 20 minutes, not enough? Let’s go home. There is

nothing good here.” Every time Zheng Xie explore the night market, the crowded place makes him dizzy.

“It is all because of you, causing me to eat so much. I have to explore for two hours to digest. You go back. I will take the cab home, after all we are heading different direction.”

“Well, you always lost your way. In event of you being abducted by traffickers, it will be my biggest sin.”

“Why do you always remember people’s embarrassing moments, ah, dark hearted.”

In fact, that year when He He is about five or six years old, Zheng Xie smuggled her out to visit the mountain, resulting in him losing her. Sweating, he searched for her and found her 10 minutes later, with simmering tears storming.”

“I have not come across such tense moment in life. Then, my only thought was, you certainly had been abducted just like Zhen Shi Yin’s daughter.”

Xiao He He thought for a moment before remembering who Zhen Shi Yin is: “Cut. How old were you then, already reading “A dream of Red Mansions”? Bragging.”

“Xiao He He, why do you always use your low IQ as a reference to measure others.”

He He thought for a long time but could not come up with anything that can regain her words, so had to change the topic: “You are the most troublesome person. The last time, I messed up your blind date and today, you come and harm me.”

“Anyway, idle you will always be idle.”

“Today the lady is a beautiful person with good temperament and conservative. Better than your previous blind date. Why don’t you try to hook up with her?”

“Ganging up?”

“You are not afraid of people having bad impression of you, starting so strongly.”

“Xiao He He, you go and take it up.”

“Now only you know, you are the victims.”

“Do not stroll anymore. Go home. If you come home late, Auntie Yi Xin would blame me for bringing you.”

“My mother never say bad things about people.” But hearing the mentioned of her mother, Xiao He He obediently follow Zheng Xie into the car.

“We did have a ‘sequel’ discussion about Red Chamber” Xiao He He still feel very full, so talking in the car to digest. “One day we discuss if the modern man will be willing to marry younger sister or older sister.”

“The conclusion?”

“Yu Bao get married. Younger sister, Zhao Ling becomes lover.”

Zheng Xie laughed: “No wonder we all are the same. We also discussed about the content but in a more pure content than you. We hope to have sister Lin’s IQ and Bao sister’s EQ.”

Also look like Lin sister while feels like Bao sister. Xiao He He added in her heart, did not dare to say these words.

||

Chapter 13.1 : Turn left and Turn Right

And the matchmaking attempt continues even after the visit back home. Would Zheng Xie end up picking one of those candidate recommended by his cousin Qiang Wei?

Chapter 13.1 : Turn left and Turn Right

It is said that people are accustomed to one foot deep and shallow kick. So if in the wilderness without a goal to walk, one will always be back to the origin. If so, starting with a starting point, a left and a right away, may eventually meet again.

But the premise of this proposition is: A, in the wilderness, B, there is no goal.

I am finally going through the “progress” of drawing the line

Zheng Xie interaction with the new girlfriend started too logical.

When he came back, he was harassed by his cousin Qiang Wei day and night. Qiang Wei is a freelance with no regular schedule and her husband is not around most of the time. After getting up in the morning, she have been calling her dearest cousin on the phone, whether at the time, Zheng Xie could be in a meeting or still asleep. She beat around the bush, hesitantly, garrulously and sentimentally to the extent of forcing Zheng Xie to beg for mercy: “Elder sister, you let me be happy.”

30 minutes later, Zheng Xie received a large volume of email.

He glanced at the open email, the first page is a long line of directory with dozens of names. His mouse hover over the few words of introduction and the two inches of photograph. And then click a thousands of words attached to the countless photographs.

This is a “People Yearbook” with “Lady’s Directory” from his city. Zheng Xie picked up and study a little. The brief introduction is very short, such as “XXX, a female, 26 years old, personality and lively, cheerful, love sports”.

Details may be more complicated with detailed resume including kindergarten, personal interest and hobbies. Also include specialty and the kind of food to favorite color and their favorite movie star. Some even come with his elders

reviews. A aunt said: “this is a good girl, good hearted, respect for the elderly.” B Boyle said: “not fragile, forthright personality, like a boy.” Finally there is cousin Qiang Xie recommendation: “This kind of girl no need to be coax giving peaceful mind. If not suitable to be partner in life, can also be friends.”

Zheng Xie is drinking water while browsing the mail. When he saw this section, he choked on the water.

For the sake of his own safety, he wrote and email back to Qian Wei, adding a few word of comment: “Please pick a few and arrange for me when you have time.”

Zheng Xie does not believe the view of cousin Qiang Wei. From the beginning of the year, his cousin dating requirement for him have been reduced to “as long it is female.” And he is worried that this list that is sent by his cousin has already gone way off the subject.

His memory in this area is always bad. So he drop a few line to his secretary Wei to help him to vent through and pick a few.

Secretary Wei is very efficient in her work. In the afternoon, holding a stack of papers for Zheng Xie’s signature, there is also a very thin piece of paper. “The e-mail you forwarded to me, I have screened it and picked five, President. I have streamline the information.”

Zheng Xie look at the first page and laughed: “Su Ren Ran? You must have been mistaken.”

“Ren Ran has a great personality. Didn’t you just return with Ms Xiao?”

“Who said so. This time I want to seriously find a girlfriend, once and for all. Bothering her is tiring but would not be as tiring as rejecting Qiang Wei, isn’t it?”

Wei Zhi Xin is smiled carefully, not daring to say a word. Ren ran is her good friend.

Zheng Xie turned over the edge while continuing to explain, so that his secretary don’t think that he did not want to meet her friend. “I have eaten with Ms Su twice. She does have a good personality. But she is He He’s good friend. If I go and hooked up with her, don’t you think that it feels like “luan lun”?”

In the novel, the author used the word “luan lun”. A quick search online, I found the meaning of Luan Lun – 乱伦 (Traditional: 亂倫) which is define by Chinese Yabla app as incest immorality depravity / fornication.

Luan Lun? Wei Zhi Xian see a few crows flapping while flying above her. She racked her brain for a long time to understand what this have to do with “Luan Lun.” However, she dare not interrupt.

Zheng Xie has high efficiency. While talking, it only take him a minute to turn over more than a dozen pages, each page more than 10 lines. Then his gaze landed on a piece of paper in the middle filled with a few words for a few seconds. He then pulled it out and asked Wei Zhi Xian: “This one.”

“This is the young lady that you have met before.” Wei Zhi Xian looked at him and whispered, “The one that you returned the scarf.”

“Oh, no wonder I felt a little familiar.”

“That.....”

“It’s her then. Help me to get in touch with her and make an appointment.”

Thus, Zheng Xie and Yang Wei Qi began their smooth interaction.

||

Chapter 13.2 : Turn left and Turn Right

And so.... our handsome Zheng Xie has decided to date seriously this time and he choose Yang Wei Qi, the girl whom he met the last time after meeting Shi Lin. Now, let's read the progress of their relationship.

Chapter 13.2 : Turn left and Turn Right

Yang Wei Qi have a good family background, a good education, good looks, good figure, a good mind and a good heart, totally impeccable. She was very easy-going, not fragile, insightful, not nonsense. Not blindly attached to him, unlike her generally eloquent and opinionated career, most of the time with Zheng Xie, she remains quiet.

She don't wear heavy make-up, don't dye her hair, no colourful nails and do not use strong perfume. Even when secretly dating, her clothes are very light coloured. Except she often drove the bright red car.

Yang Wei Qi said, she drives it to work daily as combatants. Bright colors can enhance morale. She always wear brightly for work. The first time they met, she did not managed to change after work.

In short, this woman would not make people feel impatient.

Zheng Xie asked her to dinner first. Strangers meeting again, they managed to get along well.

Later, she invited Zheng Xie back for dinner, of course, Zheng Xie paid for the dinner. So she invited Zheng Xie to have ice-cream.

The interval between the second and third date is only a matter of few days.

At the time, there was hesitation in the mind of Zheng Xie. It seems to be wrong somewhere but he could not find the reason. Perhaps Yang Wei Qi indeed is different from his previously associated women. She gave him a feel of familiarity and reassurance. Therefore, he is very respectful and treat her well while dating.

And she is different from the previous women, meeting both side for a few hours, will call or send text messages, going all the way to "kill", the proactive

stance is too obvious. Yang Wei Qi does not pester him. If she calls him when he is busy, she will ask him to call her back when he is free, and she will never call him again.

This woman, does not care and very modest. Whichever it is, it is better than proactively throwing herself at him.

Zheng Xie is not able to tolerate women who are takes their own initiative. He always felt that intelligent women who likes a man, will only think of a way to arouse the attention of the man, letting him come and make the move on her, rather than losing themselves on the man.

Zheng Xie can be a male chauvinist and large paternalism but when it comes to the relationship between men and women, he is very conservative.

There is a dinner party in the evening. As usual he will get Wei Zhi Xian to accompany him to attend the dinner together. But Secretary Wei is down with a bad flu and stuffy nose. So he sent her home early.

He had not seen Xiao He He for a few days. This girl has been very hard working recently, when contacting her, her respond is: "I am working overtime."

"This evening dinner is not bad. The place I am taking you has a super Thai Chef on-site producing delightful delicacy."

Then He He say Shi Lin is back this time with a promotion project for pupils. Their company are partnering up for this project with pressing time.

Hearing Shi Lin name, Zheng Xie no longer insist, then he thinks of Yang Wei Qi.

Yang Wei Qi is also working overtime, so no time to dress up. Zheng Xie accompany her to buy them.

"I usually dress accordingly to the recommendation in the magazine or wear black. So the probability of error is very small. But my boss always say that I'm not creative." Yang Wei Qi stood in front of the rows of hangers with her eyes growing dim, honestly confessing that she do not understand fashion, although she is always in designer clothes.

Zheng Xie pulled out two dresses: "These two pieces suits your personality. Which one you like?"

“Pale yellow. What do you think?”

Zheng Xie hesitated: “I think it is okay but you should try the sky blue one....”

Yang Wei Qi took the dress and put it in front of her, then said with a small smile: “I will take the sky-blue one. Just this one. No need to waste time.”

She did not fight with Zheng Xie over the payment but insisted not to let him buy any jewelry. She only wore her original necklace and watch. And she did not have pierced ears so she do not wear earrings.

Her pendant shape is very common, a small abacus with the abacus beads are moveable. But Zheng Xie knew the price of the pendant. That every fine sapphire beads are genuine. To ensure of the color coordination, they use one piece of good materials to make it into many small beads. Really very a throwaway.

Yang Wei Qi see him looking at her pendant and smile: “It is very naive?”

“No, very good.” The eyes remain at the chest is very rude, so Zheng Xie turned his eyes away.

Zheng Xie recognized the pendant, only because the handmade pendant is from the city master hand. He made a total of three, green, red and blue and these are masterpieces. Because of the nature of the modeling and the ridiculous price, it is only exhibited after the master’s death.

He He once loved the pendant and vowed it to be the goal of her life. Zheng Xie later offered to buy it for her. He He rejected it, saying that he destroyed her life ambition.

Zheng Xie did not force her to accept it, only said that when she had enough money. Don’t know when from which corner of the world, he found the pendant so he bought it in advance. Just waiting for the time to sell it to He He at double of the price.

He He always complaint that Zheng Xie is a profiteers. But she has always had poor memory, so long time after, she forgot about the whole thing. In fact, if it is not because Yang Wei Qi is also wearing the same thing, Zheng Xie has also forgotten about it.

Yang Wei Qi said: “I know that there is a total of three, but I only got two of

them. I tried to find out about the other buyer. I hope that she wants to part with it but the seller refuse to disclose the customer information. It is also better this way. Just do not know who has the same habit like me, but can be friends. I paid higher price just to get these two sets, and was laughed at by my friends for several years.”

Zheng Xie bowed and smiled, remaining silence.

He finally understood why yang Wei Qi gives him the sense of familiarity.

Many of her hobbies and likes are similar to He He, including those dishes that they ordered when they went of dates. On their second date, she wore a patchwork skirt. When she stands in front of a pile of clothes, she is so dazzled that she do not know which one to choose. Perhaps in the detailed information that Cousin Qiang Wei shared also indicated that: “she was interested in painting in her childhood, and in xxxx year, she had won the 2nd prize in the City’s Children’s painting Invitational Cup.” His impression of the competition is very deep because He He won the 1st place in the competition. Also her biggest win.

| |

Chapter 13.3 : Turn left and Turn Right

Zheng Xie started dating officially with Yang Wei Qi. What is the progress between He He and Shi Lin? In this chapter, we will get to know Shi Lin better and discover how he has developed the feelings for He He. I wonder if they will eventually end up as a couple before both Zheng Xie and He He discover their true feeling.....

Chapter 13.3 : Turn left and Turn Right

When both of them attended the dinner together, they inevitably encounter acquaintances. The Acquaintances also recognized Yang Wei Qi and is very surprised to see both of them together: “Yo, a few days gone, the universe has changed.”

The man has always had a mouth filled with oil, so Zheng Xie simply chooses to keep quiet. In the meantime, Yang Wei Qi gracefully said: “We are friends.”

“So it is just friends.” Acquaintance pat Zheng Xie on the shoulder. “Hurry up. When sending invitation, don’t forget your childhood buddy.” Zheng Xie gave him a shove.

Yang Wei Qi shyly said: “I apologies, usually joked too much.”

“As long as you don’t mind.” Zheng Xie very gentlemanly smile.

Shi Lin always believe that some talented people must have defects in other hidden places, just like his own.

He grew up as a good student, top in school. Teachers and students praised him for his excellent character and learning attitude. He is a mathematical genius, even won awards in writing. He is top in his culture class, excellent in sports and even excel in his schoolwork. He has lots of hobbies, chess, calligraphy and painting with no barrier.

He has different honors from Zheng Xie who always looks cold, polite enthusiasm but increasingly indifferent alienation. In contrast, Shi Lin is gentle with friendly and warm smile. Others even more exasperating is that he also has good looks.

In short, in school Shi Lin is all-round perfect developed student. In the society, he has the ability and political integrity to be a high-quality leaders.

When Shi Lin harbors any feelings, he believes that things are equal. The gains will lose as well as waxing the deficit rule. He has always been careful in finding their weakness.

He had previously did not find their true weakness, since he has always used the shortest possible time to overcome them. But now he knows that he can be at the most vulnerable when it comes to chasing girls.

Although he does not have a strong family background like Zheng Xie's family, but because of his warm smile and easygoing personality, there are many girls that likes and chase after him. So many years in the past, from domestic to foreign counties, he had wholeheartedly dodge the coming of "peach of spring". He had been busy studying, hence his chasing the female instinct has completely degraded.

Shi Lin stared at the computer screen while on the side is looking at the heavily immersed in work Xiao He He. Deep inside himself shallowing mourning.

He never believed in love at first sight. But Xiao He He also have what it seems to be unforgettable traits. The last time he met her was seven years ago. If it is not Zheng Xie's reminder, he did not remember having met this girl before, which is the best description.

But that day, he was bored and had nothing to do. So approached this girl who gave him a comfortable feeling for a short chat and then out of courtesy, sent her home. Then he wanted to see her a second time.

It is not easy to see her the second time. He tried to make appointment several time before he finally succeeded. And then he found himself was more comfortable with this girl than the previous experience. So he wanted to see her the third time, which is harder to make appointment the third time.

Shi Lin reflected on himself for a while. It seems that he is making the usual mistakes that men usually make. That is, the more you want, the more you can't get it. The more you want to see, the more you can't see.

He despite himself. The result of the more he wants to avoid the “铁树开花”,

the chances of it coming to him is higher.

铁树开花 (*pin yin: tie shu kai hua*) – Chinese idiom that say : the iron tree bloom. Meaning: a highly improbable or extremely rare occurrence

The purpose of Shi Lin trip back home this time is to carry out the study on children's behavior and need the expertise in drawing people to cooperate.

He was recommended by a friend to a company who allegedly acting style and design that are suitable to his taste. And the owner of the company recommended a few candidate to work with him on the project. Xiao He He so happen to be one of the recommended candidate.

Shi Lin does not want to believe that their fate is not successful.

He finally had the opportunity to observe Xiao He He. With his knowledge in studying people, he soon concluded that Xiao He He does indeed has a character that attracts him, not a temporary attractions of his.

She obviously looks very ordinary, small nose with small face. Thin body bone, when thrown into the heap will completely be difficult to find. But he knew that she is very different from the other women.

Her fresh, sweet, polite and amiable, like 邻家小妹 that people want to get closer to. But once the person step into her safe zone, she would become alert just like a cat.

邻家小妹 (*pin yin: pin jia xiao mei*) means younger sister from neighborhood / next door

She looks forever happy, right, simple and pure. When she does not speak, she only smile slightly but taking a deeper look into her eyes, there are contents that one cannot read, just like hidden secrets.

She can stumble and may be sloppy but when she made out things, it becomes clean and beautiful, full of aura and creativity.

She is not noisy and once people have different opinions, she chooses to immediately shut up. Unlike the women in his industry where they will contend for the merits as they refuse to lose to the man. She is a daughter of modality, soft but not necessarily is obedient but has her own opinion.

In short, she has a clear and transparent look but is also a confusing petite woman.

Shi Lin studied it from the front, back and side. Each view demonstrated the feasibility of him together with He He. The more he thinks it is worthwhile to look into developing it further. Pity the expertise in him, often want to subtly from the beginning when, but suddenly projected him in the clear eyes with no place to hide. The clear unstained dust in the eyes, even he felt that you want to meddle a very dirty idea.

||

Chapter 13.4 : Turn left and Turn Right

The final part of Chapter 13. Shi Lin took the opportunity to bring He He out for ice-cream where they encountered Zheng Xie and Wei Qi also having ice-cream at the same place. While Zheng Xie realized that Wei Qi reminds him of He He, on the other hand, He He thinks that Wei Qi suits Zheng Xie very well. Shi Lin took the opportunity to also try to find out He He's ideal kind of man... would he be the kind of man that He He would be attracted to?

Chapter 13.4 : Turn left and Turn Right

This evening, after meeting with his crew, he found He He in their research labs working overtime, so naturally went over to her. By the time they finished, it was only seven o'clock. When he sent He He back, he asked: "You should not have eaten. Where do you want to go to eat?"

"I've eaten." Shi Lin disbelief what she said and then added: "Eat a bowl of instant noodles, it is still early."

Shi Lin smiled: "Are you deliberately make me feel guilty?"

He He replied with a smile: "Otherwise, you treat me to ice-cream. All the debts from before are all written off."

"Such a good and considerate girl. I owe you several meals. Only treating you to something so cheap?"

"I am not a considerate person. I want to take you to the best place to rip you off."

The ice-cream shop is expensive and has a strange style. Strange grid floor, plaid wallpaper, decorative three-dimensional lattice everywhere, walking into it feels like a maze, dizzy.....

He He asked him: "Do you eat ice-cream?"

"I do not eat. Where got man who eats ice-cream?"

"What a pity. Then I cannot order the banana split."

"Why? Just order it."

“How can? I cannot finish it all alone.”

“Eat as much as you can.”

“Knowing that it would be waste but also deliberately waste. This is a shameful behavior.” He He said with a frown.

“You have just said that coming here is already a waste. So it does not make much of a difference.”

“Not the same ah. The store selling expensive is the character of the store but I could not finished and waste it is the question of my character.”

Shi Lin looked amusedly at her serious look and ordered the banana split for her: “Whatever you cannot finish, leave it for me to eat.”

He He has a cute look when she is eating, like a small animal with a satisfied look. Shi Lin quietly drinking water, turning from time to time to look elsewhere so that he does not appear too rude. Turning in another corner of this dazzling lattice cage sits, Zheng Xie with Yang Wei Qi.

Meantime, on the other side.

Zheng Xie leans back against the chair. His hands gracefully study the crystal glass bowl full of water while knocking about it with a fork to observe it sounds. After a while, put his dingers across the glass and observed his own fingerprints through the magnifying glass.

Yang Wei Qi look on at the funny scene in front of her. Obviously he is playing like a child but with his dignified posture and quiet look, Zheng Xie’s childish gesture looks gives the solemn sense of scientific experiments.

She accidentally blurred out her thoughts: “I rarely see men having a good time playing while concentrating on the cup.”

Zheng Xie gently raised his lips: “I have rarely seen a woman in the night eating such a big bowl of ice-cream so happily.” In fact, he had only known one other woman who does. Woman? His mind flashed back to the word again.

“Actually I am not always so degenerate.” Yang Wei Qi dig into the huge bowl of banana split in front of her and forcefully dig a tablespoon into her mouth before saying: “Today is the case where I am extremely depressed about

something so I need this to cool down.”

“The last time you said that because you had a happy thing, so eat ice-cream to celebrate.”

“You really don’t understand women.” Yang Wei Qi had something in her mouth so was a little vague when speaking. She half-blocked her mouth with a napkin and swallowed: “Happy and depressed all need to vent, typically is the same such as money as well as self-flagellation.” She looked at Zheng Xie and said: “You really do not want to eat? It taste really good. Brings back the memories of childhood. I have not touch that part.”

“Ever since I had gastritis after eating ice-cream in my childhood, I never touched it again.”

“Your illness may not necessarily be from it but could just be coincidence.” Yang Wei Qi added with admiration: “Your ability to resist temptation is too strong.”

Shi Lin waited until they were about to leave before heading over to Zheng Xie to greet them. Both Zheng Xie and Yang Wei Qi also happen to get ready to leave.

Because it is some of their first time meeting, so there is polite introduction. He He is introduced and Zheng Xie said: “This is Xiao He He.” He He who kept her head down and looked up towards Yang Wei Qi with a shy smile. Zheng Xie stop for a while before adding, “my sister.”

Yang Wei Qi eyes flashed with a little surprised, seem like searching in her memories. Then she smiled and gently hold a grip on He He’s hand: “Nice to meet you, He He. Your name is special.” She turned to face Zheng Xie and looked at the two, “In fact, both of you really look a little bit alike.” The rest of them whom are present laughed.

Shi Lin sent He He home as planned. Before leaving, Zheng Xie seems to have something to say to He He but refrained. He He looked back at him, he paused and said the sentence: “Do not stay up too late. Go to bed early. Your black ring around your eyes has darken.”

While driving, Shi Lin thought back about the sentence and laughed: “Its one

thing. That guy, what has nothing to do with his appearance, but did not expect that he can play parents role so well.”

He He lowered her head and smiled: “He had a habit of posing as my parents in front of me.” She looks out of the window glass that reflects like a mirror, looking at her face and said: “I really look alike him?”

Shi Lin turned and glanced at her: “The most alike is your ears. Both your earlobe shape are almost identical.”

He He puff and laughed.

Shi Lin added: “Don’t you believe? Many couples that have lived for a lifetime, the appearance will be more and more alike. You and Zheng Xie probably have been together for a long time, stand together, gives the feeling for a real brother and sister, very coordinate.”

“Oh.” He He do not know what to say, think for a long time and say: “The young lady today has very good temperament. Very kind. Gives the real noble lady feeling just like in the movie. Don’t you think?”

“Did not pay too much attention.” Shi Lin just discover another advantage of He He, She is full of goodwill and appreciation, not like the others, often rejected. “I just did not think that Zheng Xie will actually be willing to accompany women to this place. He never liked to obey others, others only obey to him.”

“He likes the cup here.” He He answered without many thoughts to it.

Shi Lin suddenly wanted to aske Zheng Xie questions about women but he soon realized Zheng Xie’s three months girlfriend experience which does not fit him. So he immediately dismissed the idea.

Three months. He thought for a moment, from his memory, Zheng Xie’s girlfriends since secondary school as well as when he was overseas in the foreign countries, none has indeed lasted over three months. Zheng Xie has a strong principles. As a student, he had once inexplicable joked: “Fresh period of three months.” Later this has become the indisputable truth and tough guide in Zheng Xie’s later life. He is truly admirable.

He probably does not care, shook his head and shared his thought: “I think this Miss Yang will be an exception.”

“Do you think Zheng Xie is serious this time?”

“Ah. Intuition. This Ms Yang, is just the kind that Zheng Xie would appreciate regardless of physical appearance or personality.” He He said with the tone of an expert solemnly.

Shi Lin want to faint. He is aware of one thing, He He with very few words would often lost interest in a topic of conversation. But with the exception of Zheng Xie. Like now, she is more focused on the future of Zheng Xie than Zheng Xie himself.

“Do you know your favorite type?” Shi Lin asked casually in a tone as relaxed as possible.

“Me?” He He froze for a moment, did not expect the subject to differ to this direction. “As long as it is not like Zheng Xie.” She replied casually.

“Uh?”

“Otherwise, I will never have power in my life.”

||

Chapter 14.1 : Our Childhood

Time flies. Today is exactly 1 month from the start of my 1st translation project, Caught in my Own Trap (作茧自缚). I have enjoyed translating and researching (where I could not understand or I wanted to understand more to enable me to share the information accordingly). And I hope that everyone is enjoying the read about Zheng Xie and Xiao He He as much as I am enjoying about them.

Today, we go back to the past and learn more about Xiao He He. And who influenced her decision into her current career. It is interesting to read about how much Zheng Xie impacted her growing up years and the many decisions that she had made in her life.

Chapter 14.1 : Our Childhood

Xiao He He thinks that for selfish reasons, many reasons are often tangled together, it has nothing to do with love.

~~~~~

Xiao He He got home very early. After feeding her cat, Xiao Bao and she played with it for a while. Then she runs through the TV channels, no good programs on the TV, hence decided to switch on her computer to work. The picture is pencil sketched, and then scanned and painted. She always like to have the several pairs of matching tone and style for her customer to choose from. Therefore, customer like to praise her good and considerate nature. In the true fact, it is her liking it, nothing to do with the attitude.

In the same company where art students-turned-designers love to create something new, and convince the customers to accept their ideas. But He He is different as she always have been very obedient to client’s wishes, and occasionally added some of her own ideas after some careful thinking. So Xiao He He is always the most likely one to make customer satisfied. She is very popular although she never have any big achievement. Her lady boss often said while watching her work while nodding and shaking her head at the same time: “He He, you’re clever and deft. Just lacking in ambition. Ambition!” She walked

out of the door while mumbling to herself: “This is good. So much better too.”

He He do not have too many hobbies. Not even enthusiastic about beauty and interest in losing weight like most ladies. Her interest and love is only in her job. Others think she avidly immerse herself in the job late into the night, but she is actually just playing. She stayed up late into the night playing games, staying up all night chatting. Not much difference.

He He is painting a cartoon character, filling in the color while readily draw the horizon. Across the horizon is the seven colors of the rainbow and a small tree.

She recalled how she decided to take such career path. About a long time ago, too long that she can’t remember the year. Zheng Xie took her hiking up the mountain. It started to rain but they continued the climb.

Her age then must be pretty young. Because she remembers that when they are almost reaching the peak, she could no longer climb so shamelessly cry to go home. Later Zheng Xie piggyback her up.

If she was already a slight bigger girl, she certainly would not dare to throw the tantrum in front of Zheng Xie. She would certainly be thrown on the road by Zheng Xie.

In short, that day, Zheng Xie took off his coat and draped it around her head and piggy back her up the mountain. Arriving at the top of the mountain, the rain had stopped. She saw a beautiful view where Rainbow bridge from the side of the day across to the other side of the day with trees on the horizon.

He said: “What a pity, did not bring camera.”

He He said: “Never mind. I can paint for you.”

She just casually said it but a few days later, Zheng Xie gave her a big bag of brushes and paints with pens, colored pencils, crayons, oil pastel, watercolor paints, a variety of brushes and beautiful paper. Everything that one could think of.

In order to be worthy of these things, she began her painting career.

He He remembered, she did not intend to take painting as per goal in life. Although from a very young age, she started winning a lot of art-related prize.



For her college entrance examination she took up law. Faculty of Law.

In fact, she had never had a goal in life. People often look longingly when referring to the future while on the other side, she will look bewildered and confused.

She wanted to go to law school because then, she fell in love with the Hong Kong dramas. Watching the dramas where they were debating in the court, she yearned and fantasies that she is also on air.

But her interest and dreams were crushed by Zheng Xie when he said: "Fellow classmate He He, from young until now, you have never won any fight with anyone. Even in the future in court it is accounted for full management, the shame when losing to the opposing counsel into silence is a small matter, losing the lawsuit will cause harm to the firm."

During that time, He He was so angry that she turned red in her face. Thinking hard on how to refute it, she then realized that what he said is also reasonable.

Then the elders want her to study arts, but she did not like as she felt that "art student" sound like a curse word. Only Zheng Xie supported her. "Don't go and study Fine Arts. Fine Arts Department students are neurotic, not to mention that they are not normal. The competition is too intense, you would not be able to pass."

Just with his words, Xiao He He viciously made a decision to go straight to the professional art. In actual fact, she does not need to make such a hasty decision. She has favorable resources where her mother is able to find her contacts. As a result, Xiao He He is very disappointed and is completely far away on her own in the university thousands of miles away from home.

She then with full of self-esteem and pride, packed and left home. Until the end when she began to reflect: "How did I end up embarking on such a path?"

He He is the kind of person that does not tangle in the past. She does not like to remember. Even when watching TV or reading novels, she hated the part "About the past". In those circumstances, she often jumps directly to the current development.

Su Ren Ran often jokes about her nerve. When something happens, others will

panic / cry or even laugh. But instead He He often becomes the spectators outside of her own stories. For example, there is a year while in school, He He fell and had a head injury. She lost conscious for half a minute. Everyone else were in a panic, dialing emergency numbers while crying due to worry. A moment later, He He woke up and frowned... she said: "Don't cry. Really noisy. Give me water. I'm thirsty."

She is the kind of woman who has never been hurt in the fall of spring and autumn, and all the elements of the literary and artistic female youth have nothing to do with her.

Today, the reason why she went back to the old memories is because Ms Yang Wei Qi career reminds her of the days when she was impulsive of her decision.

| |

## Chapter 14.2 : Our Childhood

*Finally, Xiao He He's inner thoughts is revealed. What would that lead to, I wonder.....*

### Chapter 14.2 : Our Childhood

Zheng Xie does not like the profession of lawyers. He had previously said: this is a career that can confuse the right and the wrong, which is contrary to conscience. This is erode the human nature gradually.

This is a tribute to Ms Yang who is different in his mind.

He He constantly has a very peculiar understanding of Zheng Xie. Zheng Xie is the kind of person whom is un-emotional in front of other people. His emotions are hard to see from his face, but He He would always feel it.

For example: Zheng Xie is very pleasant to a person. He He afterwards would say: "You hate him." Zheng Xie would look listless and He He would say: "You must have completed a big business talk today. So now you do not have new target, hence there is nothing for you to look forward to." The fact proves that He He guess is very right.

This time, He He saw that Zheng Xie is very serious with Yang Wei Qi. This is because she also have a very good impression of Ms Yang and thinks that both of them when standing together looks very compatible. He He has always found it difficult to have a good impression of the women around Zheng Xie. This is because they are not matching with Zheng Xie. He He is very concern about this problem as her relationship mostly did not worked out because of her occupational diseases.

He He of course is not jealous that the women appearing beside Zheng Xie will result in her being left out.

In fact, those women around Zheng Xie that comes and go, Zheng Xie never took the initiative to introduce her to his new companion.

But the few places that she likes, are the places that Zheng Xie took her before. So the chance of encounters are more comparable. Today's attitude indicate the

more intimate relationship between Zheng Xie and Yang Wei Qi.

Those time, she treats it as watching a show, she is the audience while the woman is the protagonist and Zheng Xiew is just the props. Watching that is just so funny. Not like now, she can still recall how the woman looks like.

If Su Ren Ran knows about this, she will certainly make a fuss and say: “Xiao he He, you are jealous. You really like Zheng Xie.”

Of course she like Zheng Xie. Her parents were orphans. So in addition to her mother, Aunty Qian as well as Su Ren Ran and a few of her girlfriends and even her female boss, she treats them like her love ones. The male relative, she only had Zheng Xie. From her childhood years, Zheng Xie in her mind acts as her paternal grandfather, maternal grandfather, father, uncle, brother and sometimes even younger brother..... all these roles.

Except her dream lover choice.

He He is not a love tangled person. She just by opportunity to indulge herself the emotional feelings of letting go of something.

Want He He to be emotional is not very easy. The last time she was emotional was a few years ago when her idol Jay started dating.

He He likes Jay is not those young girls like feelings but more like mother love. Often in the forum, she enthusiastically together with others will discuss: “Our family children when will marry ah.” In fact, Jay has countless scandals that are not serious, so He He often laugh it off. Until that day, in front of the audience, he admitted that he had met with his fated love.

He He is so surprised that she shed tears and rushed to the official forum and left a message: “I’m so happy for you. Bless you ah. You guys must be happy ah.” The fact that she had shortness of breath that night, stayed up all night with a indistinct feeling, ultimately boiling it down to: “I’m selfish and emotional. Love is so shallow, deep down want to monopolize but I know that something that does not belong to me, I am aware of the weakness and must try to get over it.”

This evening, at the first greetings, she is also worried about being tangled. Deep inside her, she felt that she is selfish and her emotional state has reoccurred.

He He has never had the idea of having a future with Zheng Xie. Not even a small spark. Before she even had the perception of men and women, the perception of them together had been kicked out of the world.

He He can remember the exact time because it is the year where Zheng Xie is sitting for his college entrance examination. She is also in junior high school and it happen to be summer holidays. But her mother had to spend half of the summer with her students so she had spent half of the time in Zheng Xie's home.

Zheng Xie was extremely busy that holiday and is always out. But she was not allowed to go out on her own to explore the street. So she always nest in the house while going online until her dark circles are all around her eyes. Later Zheng Xie occasionally takes her out to mix with him.

At that time, He He does not have many female friends. She lives in her lonely circle. Most of the people she knew are Zheng Xie's buddies whom are many years older than her.

Each time Zheng Xie brings her along, she would be laughed at: "Yo, Ah Xie is coming out with his young pet."

Those big boys always bring their older matured woman. Obviously only fifteen or sixteen but had chosen to make up and dressed like a twenty year old girl. He He has also seen such girlfriends of Zheng Xie.

The little girl, Xiao He He although is thirteen, still look less than ten years old. It is a joke that is taken for granted. Fortunately, Zheng Xie did not put much care into it, so she does the same.

They're playing cards and also seems to have been gambling. It is inappropriate for children, so He He dodge in a far corner, alone playing computer games. After playing for a while, fell asleep and dreamed in the noisy place that she has grown up and became an adult. With the hairstyle of Scarlett, makeup like Cleopatra, dressed in "My Fair Lady" famous dress attending a social event but barefooted.

In the dim room, someone cover her with clothes and was immediately ridicule: "Ah Xie is competent enough to be a nanny."

"What nanny? I think he simple wants to be 光源氏!"

"Who is 光源氏?"

光源氏 – Genji is the protagonist in *The Tale of Genji*. In the story he is described as a superbly handsome man whom is the 2nd son of an emperor that is delegated to a civilian life for political reasons. [Wikipedia Information on 光源氏](#)



“Don’t know the culture should just keep quiet, how embarrassing as an adult.”

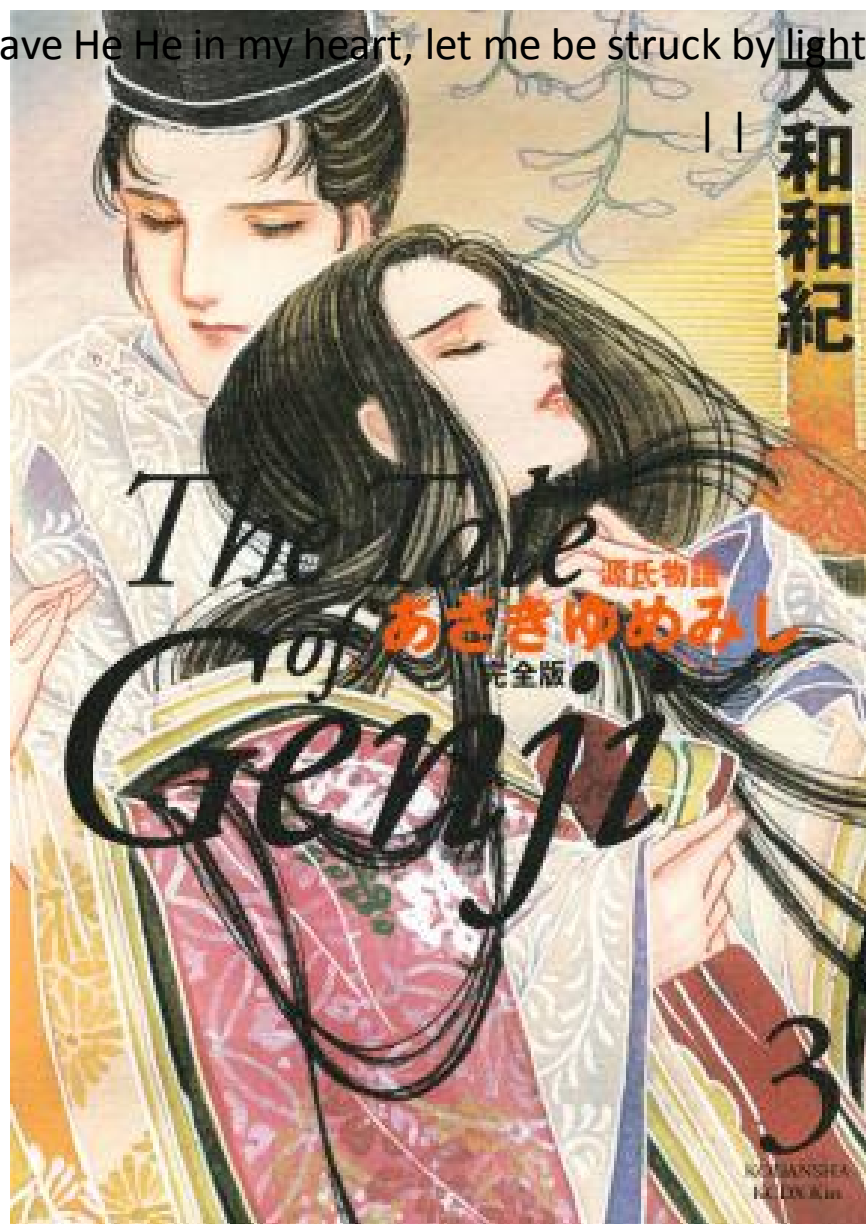
“Damn, you do not have culture. Who don’t know that you plan to develop a beautiful girl?”

Zheng Xie scoff: “A group of scum.”

“See, we strike the point. So he is angry.” People started laughing and joking. “Look, Zheng Xie is always better than us in planning ahead. We would never have such thoughts.”

“Scam.” This time, in the voice of Zheng Xie, one cannot hear the mood. “If I

have He He in my heart, let me be struck by lightning.”



## Chapter 15.1: A Special Corner

*No Xiao He He in this chapter apart from a brief mentioned towards the end only . This is the chapter where we focus on Yang Wei Qi. We will discover her thoughts about her relationship with Zheng Xie (or I shall say the unspoken relationship that she is a little confused about).*

### Chapter 15.1: A Special Corner

Perhaps in everyone's heart, there is always a special corner.

Lawyer Yang Wei Qi could not understand. What is the recent relationship with Zheng Xie counted as, but lately they are indeed very close. Just that both are unwilling to point out the special relationship between them.

They get along very well and is very understanding.

Zheng Xie is very silent, Yang Wei Qi also do not way much. Probably because of the nature of her work where it would requires unraveling quibble, so after work, she is already usually tired from talking.

And Zheng harmonic is the wise man, anything as long as she open her mouth, he knew what she want to say next. As long as there is a small smile at the corner of his mouth, she knew that he already understood her meaning. Then she had no need to say more.

Moreover, a long silence when they need a little time to adjust to any subject, the co-ordination degree is very high. Yang Wei Qi found that Zheng Xie is very smart. Often when that have watched a popular movie and she also listened to any same piece of quirky offbeat niche songs, he is able to talk a little of history and politics. He never despise her views as a women, even had the patience to listen to her statements on a romance novel while listening to her complaining about the author lack of understanding of the three main points. Sometimes he had also kindly solved her distress, for example: "You certainly do not wear pajamas slippers to go shopping, not the fault of the clothes, just the clothes does not match your action." Then she will let go.

Yang Wei Qi do not believe in the so-called love at first sight. It is true that



when she first met Zheng Xie, she had a good impression of him. And this is the kind of affection continue to warm, but she does not think that it is a good sign.

Modern people are often like that. Not in the heart will feel regret, once met, will feel uneasy. In the decision to invest and pay, will first settle the heart, so that it would stay in the safe place.

The world is wonderful. Before they met, she had never seen him. But when they came into contact, they discovered that both were mixing in the same circle, always meeting up mutual friends or acquaintances.

So inevitably often been jokingly reminded by others.

Zheng Xie is a very cold man, a little bit of a loner. He does not really care about woman, also not very serious.

Zheng Xie not only does not care about women, he simply does not care about things. He knows everything but he is just not interested in it. Although he is not interested in things, he will however very seriously do it and do it perfectly.

In her eyes, Zheng Xie is like a deep pool of water, calm, chilly, bottomless in a single glance, arousing her desire to explore more.

A direct result of often meeting acquaintances, Yang Wei Qi's uncle invited Zheng Xie for dinner.

After returning back into the country, Yang Wei Qi rarely meet her parents. Since she reached her adulthood where she left home to study, she has a more intimate relationship with her aunt and uncle. The childless couple loved her like their own child.

Speaking of her uncle whom now had retreated to the second line had worked with Zheng Xie's father for many years. He had seen Zheng Xie growing up/ When Zheng Xie's father was transferred, they had lost contact. Today, he heard about Zheng Xie and his niece, hence naturally intended to come forward as her elders while renewing the old friendship.

Yang Wei Qi is still hesitating to speak to Zheng Xie about this. She thought that he would rebuffed. She happens to had to go back and did not expect that Zheng Xie would promised to meet the uncle.

The atmosphere during the meal is quite good. Although Zheng Xie is always cold but when facing the elders, he is very courteous. He would always be calm and his emotion well taken care of.

During the meeting, they reminisce some of Zheng Xie's childhood memories. Occasionally there were reference made to Zheng Xie's mother and "He He." Yang Wei Qi had discovered long time ago that Zheng Xie had hard to read expression. He is always calm and decent just like he is wearing a layer of mask. But whenever he hears the mentioned of his mother and He He, there will be a subtle hint of emotion on his face, making it seem real.

Uncle Yang meeting up with the grown up version of the young boy from before, he got into high spirit. He filled up many of Zheng Xie's wine. A little drunk, half-jokingly and half seriously, he asked if Zheng Xie intended to marry his niece and become a part of his family. Zheng Xie smiled but kept quiet. Yang Wei Qi immediately declared that the two of them are just friends.

Drinking too much, she couldn't help to feel a little discourage. Uncle has poor health while after going out together with Zheng Xie for a while, she had never seen him touching wine. Taking the opportunity when Zheng Xie went out to answer his phone, the quiet aunty smiled and said: "You uncle has identified, such as the character after drinking wine. Seeing a lot, the kind of people who in a drunken state will betray themselves to others. This is for you to examine. Zheng Xie as a child has always been a good child with deep thoughts. After so many years of no contact with Zheng Xie, he want to verify it. So far, he is not bad."

Yang Wei Qi is dumbfounded and eventually drove Zheng Xie back.

Zheng Xie drank much more than uncle. While uncle had reached his limit, Zheng Xie's complexion remains the same. He just had a little misty eyes. An elbow on the window, with head leaning on the hands, he sigh slightly and said: "The last time I drank so much was presumably seven or eight years ago." He seems to carefully try to recall and added: "Seven years ago."

"Your alcohol tolerance level is not bad. Not many people can drink better than my uncle."

"A little more I will vomit. That uncle Yang, this time I accompanied him to

drink to the limit, then next time he will not push me. Otherwise, he will continue to torture me with alcohol next time.”

||

## Chapter 15.2: A Special Corner

*We have reached the half-way mark of this novel :)*

*In this chapter, we learned more about Yang Wei Qi identify and the little secret about her and her family. We will also slowly read about her feeling towards Zheng Xie.*

### Chapter 15.2: A Special Corner

Yang Wei Qi drove the car slowly, while think back on the words that he had just said. Not wanting to think too much about it, she carefully change the subject: "I always thought that He He is your distant sister but as it turns out, that you do not have any blood relation?"

"No. But there is no difference between distant sister and sister. I had watched her growing up." Zheng Xie said. And then seem to talked to himself: "I was the first person she see after she was born."

Yang Wei Qi laughed. "You're really fortunate. People like you in this age, very rarely have sister. Sometimes even if they have, is extremely unruly, the brother being taken advantage of. Unlike yours whom is very well-behaved."

"I remember that you have a brother. But I do not see you unruly."

"That is not the same." Yang Wei Qi lowered her voice. She hesitated for a moment and then gently added: "My brother and I are not born by the same mother. My mother is not my birth mother....."

Quiet for a long time, Zheng Xie said: "I'm sorry."

"It's okay. My older brother and my mother treated me extremely well. But I felt ashamed, so do not want to go home. As so not to remind myself from time to time that I am Mr Yang's disloyal derivatives and result."

"Do you call your father Mr Yang?"

"Yes, I have been calling him that since I knew the truth about my birth."

"Your mother..... when did you know that?"

"On my 18th birthday. My mother..... you mean the mother who gave birth to

me? She died when I was very young, and I do not have any memory of her. I only have one mother.”

“Your stubborn look really looks like.....” Zheng Xie said half of the sentence and stopped, not speaking after a long time.

They returned to Zheng Xie’s permanent residence.

Zheng Xie is really drunk. He also hold a strong appearance all the way home. After getting home, he said: “Thank you” and went into the bedroom and lie down.

Yang Wei Qi went to get him a glass of water but found that he had fallen asleep.

She stayed for a long time in his apartment. She is not good in cooking, so spent a lot of effort in the kitchen to cook him porridge. She took a short tour around the apartment looking into each room where the door are wide open but did not touch anything that is private.

The apartment that Zheng Xie is staying cannot be called a home.

The apartment is located in the posh districts. A garden like scenery outside of the window with sophisticated interior decorations. Every corner is branded but with no life in them. Too simple, sober and too solemn with no frills. Very cold place. Rather like an office suite.

Yang wei Qi did not think that Zheng Xie, a jade like superiority, and extraordinary taste will have such a boring lifestyle.

But she sighed again. The handsome man will get different treatment. If it is other man, she will give him minus points. But having this happens to be Zheng Xie, and he seems otherworldly.

Later, Yang Wei Qi found a very humane place. In the partial hall in a very inconspicuous corner is scattered a few straw futon. The craft is very bad, just like DIY initial works. On the futon is also a few patchwork cushions, patterns and colors that match up very elegantly. There is also a hand sewing needle, but with sophisticated technology. Next to it is a short rattan frame that hang a homespun cloth of a strong of fish, two cloth made mouse, a slender strips and veneer logs makes up into a forest hut and a fish-shaped antique vase, handmade. She picked it up and see that at the bottom is engraved with “He

He's Handmade" words. There are a pile of books, six or seven books, each of the sets are with cloth cover, style and patterns that varies. She picked up and turned a little, could not help laughing. This beautifully chic covered books are actually popular romance novels over the last 2 years.

In the cold apartment of Zheng Xie, there is such a playful and unique place which actually looks very coordinated. Yang Wei Qi thought for a moment and try to recall the look that seems like a little girl. But she vaguely remember clearly a matured urban woman. She has superior memory and is actually confused.

It is getting dark. She saw that Zheng Xie is fast asleep, so left him a note to tell him that she has gone home.

Later she received a sincere phone call. Zheng Xie asked: "After sending me home, you cook porridge?"

"You're awake?"

"Ah, what I remember last is uncle Yang forcing me to drink a glass of wine. Then I have no recollection. When did I get home? By the way, how did you get me upstairs?"

He obviously walked himself calmly upstairs and did not look drunk. Yang Wei Qi felt very weird.

Then she once again confirmed that any shortcomings of Zheng Xie will really become very special.

Yang Wei Qi is very sad that he has no principle.

||

## Chapter 16.1: Understanding that is too deep

*Chapter 16 is an extremely long chapter. So it has been broken down into many parts. Sit back and enjoy the read!*

*A little surprised news in this chapter..... someone is getting married.... who? Read on.....*

### Chapter 16.1: Understanding that is too deep

Understanding but can also be full of surprises

Zheng Xie look at the invitation card on the table. He felt that the world is changing very fast.

The groom is from the city shipping industry, and he had met a few time. What is more surprising is the name of the bride. It is actually Su Ren Ran.

He still remembers that long ago, Xiao He He has also strongly recommend her friend to him. And Cousin Qiang Wei also had solemnly added this lady's name on his blind date consideration list.

The round moon had not even turn two full cycles, a lot of things have changed.

The wedding is created in a new style where it is to be held on an uninhabited green island. Each guest will be send to the island on the yacht. Very different from the usual wedding car, this wedding will be using rows of yacht. Only a few thousand square meters island that will be surrounded by a dozen of luxury yacht moored, it would totally amazing.

To Zheng Xie's understanding, wedding is a place provided for everyone to join in and have fun while catching up with each other. He is often confused on who the wedding couple would be.

On the same tables are acquaintances including Su Ren Ran's brother, Su Mao Wei. But the brother's face today is without a smile. When entertaining others, he will smile but when returning to the table, the smile totally disappear.

"Damn, the look on your face does not look like you are marrying off your

sister. Looks more like you are selling your sister.”

Su Mao Wei had a little too much to drink. He glumly look at the person who has spoken: “As a person who does not have a sister, you do not understand the brother’s pain. A dearly loved sister, suddenly is going to belong to someone else. Damn, no difference from being stolen.” He cast a little resentful eyes towards the direction of the groom.

“Who say I don’t have sister? I have lots of sisters. I have a few really good sisters.....” The man whom have also drank a little too much replied in a playfully.

Su Mao Wei’s face stiffen. Sitting a few seats away Zheng Xie smiled at him and comforted him by saying: “Initially would be hard but after a while you will get used to it.”

“I almost forgot that this person also has a ‘sister’. Mao Wei, you should learn how his psychological development.” Some people started joining in the fun.

Ah Xie, your He He has changed a lot. Today, I could not even recognized her.” Someone helped to change the subject.

Zheng Xie turned to look at He He, one of the bridesmaid standing next to the bride. Today is is very elegantly dressed up in a lovely Greek-style white dress with her hair roll up, slim, composed and gentle. Indeed looking very different.

“Which one is He He? The one of the left? Oh my.... I remember that when I saw her last month, she still look like a little girl, a little doll hiding behind Zheng Xie.”

“Ah Xie likes to dressed He He up looking like a doll. He is a LOLI control.”

Zheng Xie did not bothered with them and turned to the new direction. The bridal party are divided into two groups of people. Xiao He He stood behind the couple with the dress and make-up that is different from her usual. Even her facial expression is a little strange. Although her smile looked very dignified, Zheng Xie felt that He He’s smile is a little forced.

Moreover, Zheng Xie looked at her going around in the group of people. He He is representing the bride in drinking the bridal wine which attracted a round of applause. She have to drink double of the wine serving. Originally the wine cup is



only 1/3 filled but the bottle of wine was snatched and He He's cup was deliberately filled to the brim. He He holding the cup and half turn before the best man beside her took the cup from her hand and bottomed it out. He He slightly bowed to him but did not laugh.

Zheng Xie's secretary Wei Zhi Xian is also at the scene, helping out here and there. Most people around there also recognized her, so after the table, fight back into the crowd to toast her a drink.

Wei Zhi Xian had a corsage with the word "Friends" written on. Only a few very close friends will wear that. Someone teased her: "Ms Wei so beautiful, how come did not become a bridesmaid?"

Wei Zhi Xian laughed: "I have done it three times. As per the old people saying, more than three time as bridesmaid, will not be able to get married...." She bow to pay respect to the crowd before leaving. She also bid Zheng Xie farewell separately.

Zheng Xie whispered: "The best man looks a little familiar. Is he someone we deal our business with?"

Wei Zhi Xian immediately know which one he was referring to, because they are very familiar with each other. She whispered in response: "The groom's friend. We do not have business dealings with him. Perhaps you have met on other occasions. I think his surname is Cen..... Cen Shi. Right. That is the name."

Zheng Xie looked for a moment, he paused his voice and said: "I know. You go and get busy. And do not let He He drink too much. She rarely touched alcohol. So she do not have any sense of proportion."

"I'll be careful."

He turned back to see the two buddies around the table looking at him with a faint smile and then coughed: "Becoming bridesmaid and best man for more than three times will lead to difficulty to get marry, this is the first I have heard about it. I have done three times as best man, so do not look for me when you all get married."

"Go, even if the national sex ratio is imbalance to the extend we need to allow gay marriage, will not affect 'Prince' Zheng in finding a wife, what hypocritical

strength are you showing?”

“It is hard to say. This person has the taste and level of expectation of almost the impossible. Most people do not meet his criteria in his eyes.”

It is usually hard to gather together just like today. A little eccentric Zheng Xie whom usually does not attend many parties, so they took the rare opportunity to seize the chance to create some damage.

“I heard you recently are very close with the daughter of Yang Zhong Xing. Is that true? I have seen the lady a few times. She is difference from your usual kind of women. You drag people into the water to accompany you to play games, really not kind at all.”

“That is, do not pick such a challenging one to play. Yang family is big. If you ruin the relationship, it will not look good.”

“How do you know I’m not serious?” Zheng Xie said casually and received a reply “靠” in return.

*靠 – Pronounced as kào is a vulgar word that means “fxxk”*

||

## Chapter 16.2: Understanding that is too deep

*In the last post, the little surprised about Su Ren Ran getting married and not surprisingly He He is one of the bridesmaid whom is beautifully dressed as everyone commented. Although Zheng Xie noticed it and also noticed that He He is not her usual self as well (he noted that her smile was forced), he did not think too much to it. As usual, his concern for her is beyond any sibling love where he understands her so well to the extend he actually instructed his secretary to look after her ensuring that she did not drink to much.*

*The news about Zheng Xie seeing Yang Wei Qi is already in the market.... and interesting enough, Zheng Xie is not denying it instead we got to see a glimpse on his thought on the 'relationship'. So would their 'relationship' progress further? Read on.....*

### Chapter 16.2: Understanding that is too deep

The newly-wed couple came over for a toast with only one set of bridal party. And it is not He He's group. The bridesmaid gave him a sweet smile, seems like an old friend but he could not remember where he had met her. Zheng Xie subconsciously turned to look for He He. He found her standing a few meters away with Cen Shi. Both of them are standing at arm's length between them. He He had a slight smile that does not reached her eyes. Cen Shi was looking at her, with not much expression on her face.

At noon, the wedding gradually come to an end. Zheng Xie pulled out his cell phone to see a missed call. He called Yang Wei Qi back.

I heard that you are attending the wedding on the island, Yang Wei Qi said. "I seem have not been on the boat for six or seven years."

Zheng Xie said: "If you really want to go out to the sea, I have a yacht."

"Surf boats? I will get seasick."

"10 meters long type. Will not get seasick. Today the weather is also good to go out into the sea. You want to come? An hour later, meet me on Dock No. 3."

There will be another dinner at the seaside hotel for the wedding couple. He

He left with the newly-wed couple while Zheng Xie went to meet Yang Wei Qi.

They have not seen each other for a week. But they occasionally keep in touch, so they do not really missed each other. Zheng Xie felt a little anticipation in meeting Yang Wei Qi, even though it is because he needed to do something to divert his attention.

Zheng Xie did not had too much to drink. So when the boat is out of the coastline, the driver left the control room for Zheng Xie to drive. Zheng Xie taught Yang Wei Qi patiently how to sail.

She learned very quickly. Within 20 minutes, she is able to do it on her own but with Zheng Xie accompanying her on the side. When Zheng Xie step away, she cried in astonishment and reached out to pull on Zheng Xie's clothes. Totally disregards her image as a lady. Zheng Xie laughed.

At night, the moon rose slowly from the east missing the big sky with clear stars in the sky.

Yang Wei Qi lying on the lounge chairs on the dock looking at the sky: "so many stars, so bright. I remember only seen this as a child."

"You don't travel a lot, right?"

"Yes, if I have time, I rather sleep in at home. I used to always think that travel is a dedicated thing. Might was well stay at home, watching the scenery photos, as there will be a sense of immersive."

Zheng Xie laughed and found that he could not respond to this. Yang Wei Qi said: "Really, I remember a scientist said that a lot of people look at things that happen to other people. When it happen to them, as it will produce the feeling of sadness, joy, pain and anxiety. Perhaps it is a mild comparison, but the feeling is the same."

Zheng Xie said: "I have heard to the contrary instead. As long as things happen to them as it happened to someone else, make their own spectators, they will not be angry or sad but not what as the scientist say." He remembered He He said it when she was younger so he was astounded. Thinking about He He, his heart somewhat felt guilty.

After a while, Yang Wei Qi broke the silence. "Sometimes the heart is tired,

want to get a house at the beach, forest or a cabin in a field. On one living around the area, everyday fishing, picking fruits or vegetables. See the sunrise in the morning, and the sunset in the evening. Watch the stars at night for the whole lifetime.” She did not see Zheng Xie respond, automatically added: “Is it hypocritical?”

“You can stand without running water and electric lights? No network, no television and mobile signals?”

“Cannot stand, so I just think about it.”

“When I stay at the beach, forest or cabin in the field, each time I could only stay for just a day or two.”

“Cannot see you would enjoy. I thought you were the kind of person who had the greatest pleasure in work.”

“Did not feel like that is enjoyment. Took a two days rest for the better work spirit. Work to earn more money while more money is to be able to enjoy better conditions. But also to enjoy a better work..... it is simply a vicious cycle. I do not know what to do in the end. The result is a kind of rest but also felt like work. There is no fun to it.”

Yang Wei Qi giggled again and continued to look up the sky. Zheng Xie in the meantime, lean against the fence, sitting in the dark with his head down. He do not know what to think.

“Zheng Xie, you are not in a good mood today?”

“Ah?”

“When you’re in a bad mood, you will look down at your fingers.”

“Is that right? And you found out this? In fact, I rarely have moments where my mood is very good.”

“But you look exceptionally bad mood today.” Yang Wei Qi look at the time. “Why don’t we go back? You have accompany me for a few hours already. Go to bed early.”

Zheng Xie sighed softly: “In fact, nothing much. Just met an old friend today. And thought of some unpleasant memories...”

“The wedding?” Yang Wei Qi see that Zheng Xie did not deny and tried asking:  
“Your old flame?”

||

## Chapter 16.3: Understanding that is too deep

*Why is Zheng Xie in a bad mood? We know that he did not meet any old flame during the wedding? Is it because of Cen Shi whom had hurt He He so badly before in the past? What is the secret of the past between He He and Cen Shi? Will we find out in this chapter?*

### Chapter 16.3: Understanding that is too deep

Zheng Xie moved his mouth: "It would be good if it is my old love. Who can still remember who is who."

Yang Wei Qi found the meaning of his words amusing and smiled. But she did laugh out loud and just kept quiet. After a long while, she heard Zheng Xie said: "If you know many years ago, when you had a chance with your first love, but was deliberately blocked, would you blame the person?"

Yang Wei Qi slowly asked: "How long ago? Age is different so the perception of things is naturally different."

"For many years. Seven years."

"Seven years period. The child at that time is all grown up now and is able to distinguish good faith and bad faith. Moreover, if it is really so unforgettable, how someone else is able to blocked it. So, you are not the main reason."

Zheng Xie said: "Thank you. You are really comforting."

"You forgot what my occupancy is." Yang Wei Qi said: "Your sister, He He?"

"At the time, I thought that it was for her good. Her mind is unclear at the time for her to make the right choice. But now, I am not even sure that I did the right thing." Zheng Xie said as if to himself, recalling Xiao He He strange look today.

He He is the kind of person that don't keep a lot of things to heart. And the very spirit of Ah Q, good self-anesthesia. This enable her to look at abnormal things, so he imagined that she don't mind. She always think that mention of the past and memories are what elderly people do. She talks about her future plans and ideas of all kinds. When others mention about her childhood stories, she often is confused and could not remember. She have very poor memory. So even

Zheng Xie thought that she had completely forgotten.

Yang Wei Qi said: “When I was a kid, I used to hate it when the elderly preached to me. I think that they are pedantic and ridiculous. On the surface I nodded but in my heart, I rebel. Until many years later, after experiencing some things in life, I realized that what they preached is totally right. It is good for me. But at the time, I cannot understand.”

She looked at Zheng Xie who is still maintaining the original sitting position. Half of his face is hidden in the shadows while the other half is reflected in the moonlight, caged with a thin layer of halo. He has excellent skin, with an empty face without any expression. Seem so real yet with fine wax like. She is not sure if he had listen to what she had just said.

Yang Wei Qi trance for a moment and then suddenly shouted while pointing to the northern sky: “Look! Meteor shower! Quick make a wish!”

Zheng Xie looked toward the directly of her hand, saw nothing. He turned back and asked: “Where?”

“Maybe too fast.” Yang Wei Qi felt sorry for him. “Have you ever make any wish with Meteor Shower? It does come true. Really. I have tried before.”

Zheng Xie finally laughed. His smile although is generally silent but people could feel it. Zheng Xie said: “Childish!”

“Childish but also more interesting than nothing.” She smiled and then suddenly shouting: “Another one! Haiz, come too fast.”

Zheng Xie looked back. Yang Wei Qi laughed: “If you are not childish, why did you turn and look?”

“There is no meteor shower. You are bluffing.” Zheng Xie laughed.

“When you laugh, your face is more attractive. You should smile more. How? Do you think you feel better now?” Yang Wei Qi ignored his statement.

Zheng Xie smiled sincerely. He did not know if to continue or put away as it is so stiff. The phone rang just in time. It is Xiao He He’s number.

In the middle of the sea, the cell phone signal is bad. Could not hear the sound on and off. The line quickly cut off.



He dialed back. But still could not hear clearly the phone. The voice from the other side of the phone does not seem to belong to He He.

||

## Chapter 16.4: Understanding that is too deep

*Not much revealed in the last chapter about Xiao He He and Cen Shi's past. Instead, we learned about how understanding Yang Wei Qi and comforting she is when she listen to Zheng Xie's troubled heart about what he had done in the past. And we ended the chapter with Zheng Xie receiving a call from He He but the line is unclear. What happen next?*

### Chapter 16.4: Understanding that is too deep

Zheng Xie heart began to worry. He tried not to show any strange mood in front of Yang Wei Qi as she did not even know who called. But before he could speak, she spoke first: "It seems to be windier. Let's go back. Less dangerous and I am also tired."

After landing, Yang Wei Qi excused herself to go home to watch a live entertainment show so she will drive herself home. Zheng Xie is very grateful for her understanding. He drove along the beach road to the hotel where Su Ren Ran's wedding dinner is held.

The luxury beachfront hotel has been extended to the sea. From far, Zheng Xie could see He He.

She and another bridesmaid are sitting together at the edge of the sea level. They had replaced the daytime dress and is now wearing a dress that is not able to distinguish the color with fabrics that shine in the moonlight. Very visible from far.

He walked up to them, and extended his hand to He He. Xiao He He did not go and shake his hand but as usual, hold onto his arms to stand up. She could not even stand up straight, severely shaking, indicating that she had quite a lot to drink.

Another bridesmaid laughed while clapping her hand: "Xiao He He you lose. Do not try to get out of the bet!"

He He replied: "Dare to bet, dare to pay. Who is afraid of who?"

Zheng Xie extend his hand out to help the other woman. He could not help but

frown: “Drink to this extend. Why no one send you home?”

The other woman said: “He He say, after drinking too much, cannot just get into any strange man’s car. So she did not allow anyone to send her home.”

He He somewhat vaguely said: “Such anilities is not my invention. My brother taught me. Ding Ding, you must remember the teachings of my brother.”

Zheng Xie had to send these two drunken female home. They leave after a staff member confirmed his identify very conscientious. He drove out of the parking, saw Cen Shi in another vehicle from the rear view mirror. Their eyes briefly intersect for a moment, nodded slightly to each other.

After Ding Ding got off, He He climbed from the back seat to the front seat. Zheng Xie already started the car, see her acrobatics, immediately stopped the car. He did not agree at her indecent behavior.

He He said: “After all, I am already drunk. I will not remember your nagging.”

“I could nag you tomorrow.”

“At that time, I will not remember tonight. I can deny it.”

Zheng Xie shook his head and continued driving.

The car is too quiet. He He began to gently hum. For a while singing “小白船” and after that singing “两只老虎.” He saw her naïve drunkenness and simply let her be. After a while, he asked: “You playing betting game with people again. Each time such boring game. Each time you lose. This time what did you lose?”

小白船 (*Little White Boat*) – [小白船 \(\*Little White Boat\*\)](#) / 两只老虎 (*Two Tigers*) – [两只老虎 \(\*Two Tigers\*\)](#) are popular children songs

“This time is, fortunately, it is going to Ding Ding’s home to do part-time housekeeper for half a day.” He He honestly replied: “All your fault for causing me to lose. We bet that you will not come. I say you will not while Ding Ding say you will come.”

“How do you know I will not come?”

“Because Su Ren Ra will leave the driver to take us home. Ah, so you don’t have to trouble yourself. How come your date ended so early? Would Ms Yang be unhappy?”

“How you know I’m dating?”

“Intuition. My intuition has always been very accurate.” He He said cheerfully. “Do you remember Ding Ding? She went abroad for many years and recently came back. We often play as a child. She once sprained her leg from playing. Because she is a little fat, we could not move her and there were no adults at home. Then you piggyback her to the clinic. She had a crush on you for many years.”

“Fat little girl? She looks thinner than you.”

“You were carrying her up the stairs. Your back were all wet. Ding Ding since then work hard to lose weight and finally turned into a thin girl. This is the power of love, yeah, brother!” Xiao He He literally use her arm to draw the shape.

Zheng Xie folded back her stretched arm for her. “This drunken girl is so drunk to the state of disorder. For so many years have not been so polite and call me brother. I get goosebumps just from that.”

“When I call your name, you find me rude. I call you brother, you are uncomfortable. You’re indeed high maintenance.” She seems to speak to herself very vaguely: “If Ding Ding comes back one month earlier would have been better. I could be her advisor, teaching her how to get closer to you. I would have fun watching while earn extra money. She loves you for so many years, I could have mold her in accordance to all your favorite standard. What a pity. What people say is true. There must be an appropriate time for people to meet.”

They reached the downstairs of He He’s home. Zheng Xie thought for a moment, hesitated and said: “He He, do you have anything to say to me?”

“I am telling you that Ding Ding had a crush on you ah. She never had the courage to say, so I speak on her behalf. So she will not have any regrets while you do not have anything to lose.”

“What about yourself?”

“No. Nothing really.” He He shake her head like rattling, looks like naiveté. She shook herself while feeling dizzy. She puts her hand around her head while tapping her fingers on her temple.

Zheng Xie leaned over, push her hand and then rubbed her temple. Turn three

times, reserve and three time and then repeat. This is what He He thought him in the past.

He He said: "Why are you so good to me tonight?"

"Am I not good to you in the past?"

"In the past, if I am drunk, you will first nag me first, then threw me into my house no matter what. You don't even pour water for me. Leaving me to fend for myself."

"You've never drank so much. And you say that you are drunk, so nagging you is useless."

"Whatever you have train and nagged me, I have remembered. See, today I did not let any stranger to send me home."

Zheng Xie pulled his hand away from her temple and get off the car. He open the door on her side of the car. "You look pretty alert. Get off. We go home."

He He get off the car. She took a few steps behind him. Suddenly she threw herself on his back, slinging to his waist while in a sweet little voice said: "Brother, you carry me upstairs."

Zheng Xie reflexed. "Xiao He He, if you make more scene, I will throw you here." He flashed back immediately after half-step. He He lean to the other side and crooked past. He quickly grabbed at the back of her and He He homeopathically threw herself into his arms and then stop moving.

Zheng Xie looked down. She was fast asleep.

| |

## Chapter 16.5: Understanding that is too deep

*Zheng Xie to Xiao He He rescue again especially on a night where she drank sooooo much..... He sent her home and yet could not leave her side as he is worried about her. Did anything happen between them? Read on.....*

### Chapter 16.5: Understanding that is too deep

He tucked her into his arms. And brought her from the underground parking to the top. Walked for a long time. He pulled the key from He He's bag to open the door and put her on her bed in the bedroom.

This series of actions is very strenuous. He He is very light and thin. Just that when she lay down, her hair had tangled to the buttons of his shirt. It took him a long time to unravel them.

Zheng Xie look down and checked her out in the moonlight. She already had her make-up removed and her hair are hanging down. She has a very small face with long eyelashes that covers almost half of her face. She look like a porcelain doll. Zheng Xie went into a trance and a kind of illusion. It seems that it brings him back to their childhood memories. Everything he takes her out to play, she will fall asleep and he finally had to bring her home. There is usually no one in her home, so Zheng Xie always had to take off her shoes and cover her with quilt.

Zheng Xie at that time always felt himself compelled to playing live version of house.

His moved to switched on the bedside lamp. The sleeping He He is lighted up with the light. She frown and turned over. Her face is buried in the pillow, the hair all scattered on the pillow.

Zheng Xie worried that she would suffocate. He carefully turned her, combed her hair to the side and then take off her shoes.

Her dress is very tight. Even sleeping she is heaving deep breath. Zheng Xie subconsciously snap the buckle and pull the zip down a little to let her breathe freely. When his fingers touched her skin, he felt like he was suddenly hit by the water and quickly withdrew his hand. He got up and covered her from foot up to

neck with the quilt.

In the dim glow of the bedside lamp the sleeping He He is not the familiar and lively He He that he know. It seems as if she is those women from the biographical film. The reversal of the young adult role. From the small girl whom dance and jump, in the flicker of candlelight, suddenly all grown up. Making him feel very strange.

Zheng Xie is a little irritable. He turned off the lamp and fled out of the room. With no destination to turn, he walked around the house for a while. And then he went into the kitchen to pour a glass of water to put on He He's bedside. He did not want to leave as he is not comfortable to leave the drunken and unconscious He He alone. Finally, he went out to the balcony to enjoy the starry night.

The sky is very clear. The moon was on transit, reflecting a land of brilliance but with unclear starts. The wind is blowing with uncertain directions, sometimes warmth and sometimes very cold.

The balcony is a very large and open area. He He has put a crescent-shaped rattan rocking chair as well as a few stump wood stool there.

He He is very lazy towards things that she is not interested in. So there are no conventional plants and flowers on the balcony, hence it is very refreshing. Zheng Xie remember that there used to be a big block of cactus and prickly pear because these kind of plants do not need constant care and water, high survival ability. But even these are gone now. He He must have removed them for the fear of hurting her cat. She is very selective and careful.

Thinking about the cat, from the time they walked through the door, don't know where it had gone to hide. He does not like it, so he estimated that the cat also don't like him. So the cat had dodge and went to hide.

Zheng Xie walked around the house but could not find Xiao Bao. He found the cat's nest, so thinking that it certainly had not eaten. Zheng Xie pulled out two bags of fresh cat food and put it into the bowl. He went back to the balcony and sat down on the swaying wicker chair, while looking at the moon.

He thought for a long time but could not think of what he had to do. Then he took out his cell phone to call Yang Wei Qi.

“You’re home, right?” Asked Zheng Xie.

“A while ago. All okay over at your side?”

“Nothing. What could have happened? What are you doing?”

“Watching DVD. 窃窃美眉 (pinyin – yao yao mei mei). What about you?”

“Looking at the moon.”

Yang Wei Qi laughed over the phone. “Have you seen the goddess of the moon sister, Chang Er?”

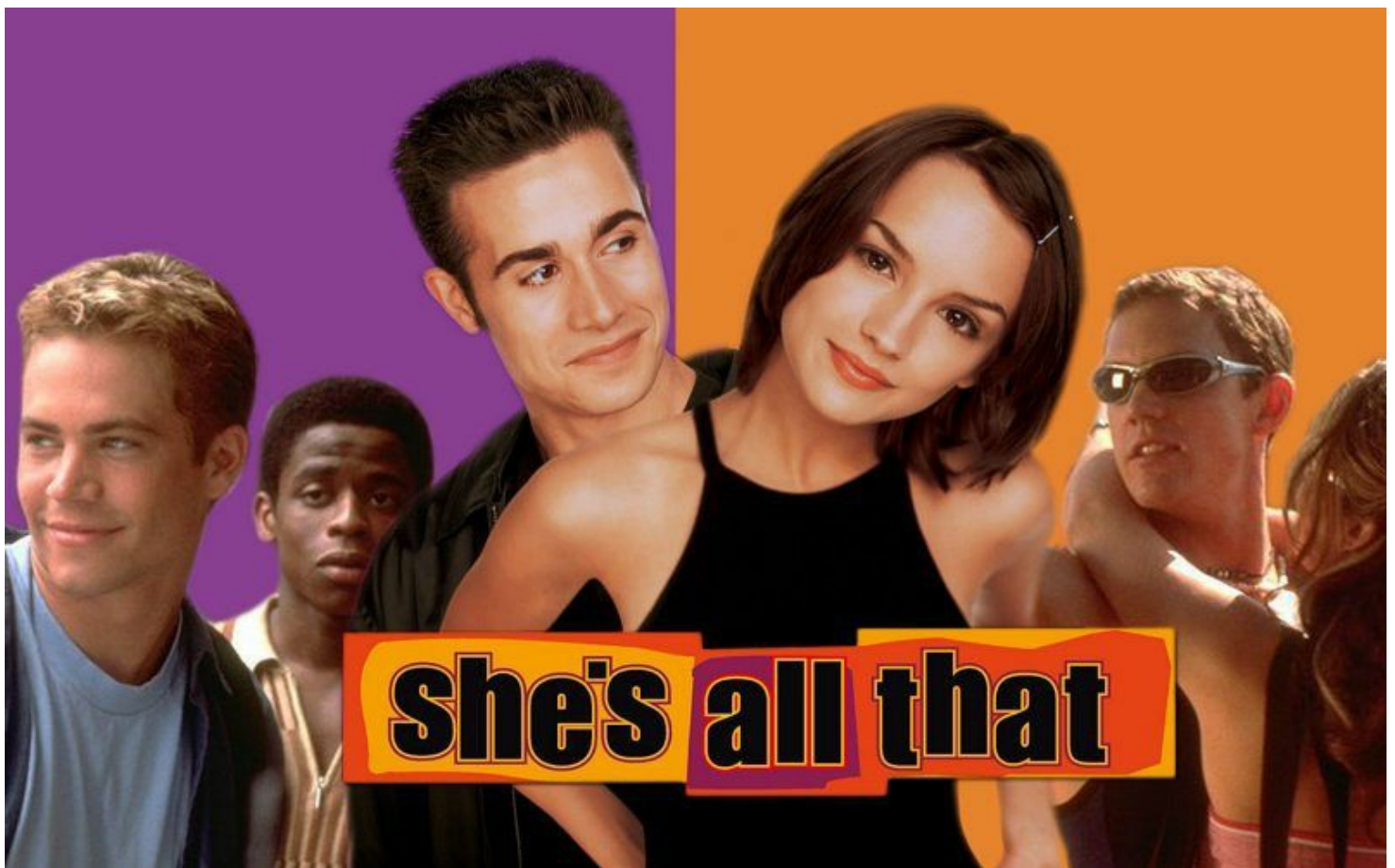
“No. Only see the bumpy surface of the moon. I think Chang Er has not place up there to live.”

“Maybe she lives on the back of the moon. The one we can’t see. Do you use a telescope? How do you see the moon?”

“Without a telescope, I can imagine.” Zheng Xie move the phone to the other ear: “You are watching the movie **‘She Is All That’**? You actually will watch youth movie. But the movie is so old.”

*She is All That is a 1999 American teen romantic comedy, a modern adaption of the 1964 My Fair Lady movie. It is one of the most popular teen movie in the 1990s which reached No. 1 in the box office within first week of release. For more information: [She Is All That Movie](#)*





“Watching an old teen movie may seem superficial and light but it somewhat is naïve and yet distinctive.” The playful Yang Wei Qi say via the telephone. “Zheng Xie, you also have watched this movie? Does not seem to be your type.”

“I have not watched it. Just heard about it.” Zheng Xie say. “Did the movie have a good ending?”

“Of course. To watch teen movie is to relax. Who would want to watch a sad ending?”

“Oh!” Zheng Xie swallow the remaining words that he wanted to say. He continue to look up at the moon, trying to determine the speed of the movement.

They did not hang up the phone. He is waiting for Yang Wei Qi to say goodbye. After a while, Yang Wei Qi said: “Zheng Xie, this upcoming National Day holiday, if you have got nothing to do, we go slightly further away for a short holiday.”

“Good. What do you want to go?”

“No matter where. As long as it is not crowded. We go and celebrate.”

“What is there to celebrate?”

“Celebrated that we have known each other for a period of time. We have

actually known each other for a month. I sometimes felt that it is very magical.”

||

## Chapter 16.6: Understanding that is too deep

*Zheng Xie ended up spending several hours in He He's balcony. The interaction between Zheng Xie and Xiao Bao the cat is so cute. Both are so careful around each other.*

*Zheng Xie felt asleep while sitting in the balcony. And what did he dream about? Enjoy the read as we get deeper into Zheng Xie's sub-conscious mind.*

### Chapter 16.6: Understanding that is too deep

Zheng Xie immediately understand the meaning of her words. He kept quiet for a moment and then he slowly said: "You have no confidence towards me or is it that you don't have confidence in yourself?"

"None of those." Yang Wei Qi quickly said and immediately change to a lighter tone and the topic. "Next week I want to invite you for a meal. I have recently learned a few dishes, hopefully there is a hero who would dare to try these dishes."

"Good."

"Remember to eat your stomach medicine first."

Zheng Xie hang up the call. Not long after, the sense of weakness gradually came back. He went back to the room and looked at He He. She was still sound asleep and was very quiet. He went back to the balcony, looked up and saw a glimpse of the moon. His thought went back to a popular song that he had listen to, 都是月亮惹的祸. Silently he smiled, touched against his pockets to look for something. This time, he touched the box of cigarettes and matches that is taken from Su Ren Ran's wedding banquet. It was a gift for every guest.

都是月亮惹的祸 *is a song by a popular Taiwanese Singer, Phil Chang, (張宇) :*  
[都是月亮惹的祸](#)

A good brand of cigarettes. He took one of them into his mouth and light a match. The wind is not strong but he had not used this thing for a long time. It took him 2 matches to get it lighted.

In fact, he rarely smoke. So after the first puff, because of the wind, he even

choked a little.

Zheng Xie wonder where is the ashtray. Then he got into this intuition. His intuition has always been very sensitive.

Sure enough, at the door, he saw Xiao Bao, the cat that gave him a headache. The cat was looking at him.

Zheng Xie have not seen it for a long time. He realized that Xiao Bao had grown a little. Even the eyes seem a little matured.

Although Xiao Bao the cat does not seem to want to come close to him, but Zheng Xie had his guard up. As a result, the cat just whiz to the corner of the balcony, took out a dish and throw in front of him and then quickly fled.

Zheng Xie picked up the bowl. It was actually a very dedicated little tin plate that is surrounded by flowers and with a carved angel cat that look like an ashtray.

Zheng Xie sat on the wicker chair and enjoyed himself rocking on the chair. Smoking without actually inhaling the cigarette. The smoke that was spit out had not yet formed any stools were blown away by the wind with the vague sound of the insects on the grass downstairs. This bring the feeling of returning back to their teenage years, especially with the little action from Xiao Bao the cat earlier. Bringing on the feeling of a fairy tale.

He looked at the moon that seems to have moved a few degrees to the west. He could see a few stars. Then he felt a little sleepy. In the dim room, his mind went back to an incident many years ago when his always stern father said: "Ah Xie. I give you a birthday present." Then he saw a wrapped pale pink cloth for carrying baby is Xiao He He. There is small package printed with many small cat print. In the middle, there is a red silk tied in the form of flower shape.

He wanted to laugh at the confused among absurd and funny dream that seems so real. Also dreams of He He grow up quickly and clumsily crawling around. Her staggered walk while babbling away trying to talk. She was wearing a red scarf that have a lot of small red flowers. In his dreams, it was like a cursory viewing gallery, then distant past in finite length within a frame that emerge. Some of the lens are blur and clear shots. In most of them, He He is laughing. Some laughing mischievously, her smug smile, happy laugh and her smirk.

But he remembered this scene the most. He is watching from afar, He He sitting on the sofa curled into a shrimp like, clutching the pillow while watching the TV. Silent tears were rolling down her face, some into the corners of her mouth although she is not aware of it. Not until she found him looking at her, she then said: “My rhinitis recurred again. She paused the screen and turned to go to the bathroom to wash her face.

Zheng Xie looked at the DVD cover on the table. A pair of youthful faces with playful actions that is of similar age with He He at that time. “She Is All That.” Obviously appears to be a youthful comedy but she had to cry.

Zheng Xie is still the half-awake trance and felt that he is being looked at. So he suddenly opened his eyes. He saw He He standing about two meters away from him watching him while holding a quilt. She had changed her dress, now wearing a light-colored flowers printed full nightdress with her unkempt hair that is half blocking her eyes from the wind blowing.

See that he is awake, He He said: “Why are you sleeping here? You will catch a cold.”

| |

## Chapter 16.7: Understanding that is too deep

*This is the last part for Chapter 16, one of the longest chapter to date in this novel.*

*Things are a little awkward between Zheng Xie and Xiao He He. Zheng Xie did not take much notice to the awkwardness between them while He He seems to be very troubled. What exactly is in her mind?*

### Chapter 16.7: Understanding that is too deep

Zheng Xie stood up and found himself numb from sitting from one position for too long. He saw He He's clear and articulate eyes. Totally sobered up. Truly magical. He couldn't help but go and put her hair back to the back of her head. He cannot tolerate to see such stuffy hairstyle.

He He suddenly took a big step backwards and she step up against the wall.

Zheng Xie did not mind and smiled at her: "You sober up very quickly."

"I am not drunk."

"I know. You're just drank too much." Zheng Xie said in a soft tone, "Next time don't drink so much. Girls are likely to suffer more."

"I didn't drink too much. I was just sleepy." Xiao He He insisted on her innocence.

"Ok. Next time if you are sleepy, do not drink. Or else you would easily fall asleep outside." Zheng Xie also start feeling a little sleepy. He did not want to talk too much. "Would you like something to drink? Milk? Honey?"

"I will get it." He He still holding on the quilt that she intended to cover him with while standing stiffly against the wall.

"Then I will go back. I would be staying opposite tonight. Call me on the phone if there is anything." He He did not like the dark night. She is afraid to look at the stars and moon in the sky and always not willing to participate in any night outdoors activities. When she is outside at night, she often show abnormalities, such as two or three hours ago, she was acting childish with him but now

treating him like a stranger.

Zheng Xie tugged his crumpled clothes. He greeted He He and turned away. He He holding and dragging the quilt walked behind him, sending him to the door.

Zheng Xie opened the door. He heard He He calling him softly behind him: "Brother."

He paused for a while and turned his head.

"When you were sending me back, I did not create any trouble. I did not say any strange thing?" Her eyes showing her uncertainty.

"No, you have been behaved well. Once you got into the car, you fell asleep."

"Oh!" she lowered her eyes. When Zheng Xie was going to shut the door, he heard her gently said: "Thank you for sending me back."

Zheng Xie paused his action of wanting to close the door, and finally reminded her: "Remember to lock the door."

After Zheng Xie left, He He put the quilt on the sofa and went to the refrigerator to take out the cat food. Walking to Xiao Bao's plate, she found Xiao Bao fast asleep after being fed. She carefully picked Xiao Bao up, wrapped it in a towel. She hold Xiao Bao and walked to the balcony. She sat on the rattan rocking chair that Zheng Xie sat earlier while starrng in a daze into space.

As a child, she has always been afraid of the night. She is more afraid of the night sky. When the sky is in a dark mass where she could not see, she felt it hard to breath. When the moon in the sky is bright enough to see the stars and the shape of the constellation, she would suddenly be frightened. She always suspected that the moon will fall and then she will be sucked into the constellations by those stars.

Zheng Xie has said that this is her symbolic phobia. He tried a lot of methods to help her to overcome this. He dragged her to go camping and even bring her for night cruise in his yacht. As a result, it caused her to a second degree of fear. Later as she gets older, Zheng Xie finally is willing to face the fact that this is a disease. He no longer thinks that her behavior as self-willed and no longer forced to accept all kinds of wonderful and natural night landscape. Although He He no longer has the fear now, she still do not like it.

Xiao Bao the cat gently snore in her arms. It suddenly woke up, struggled a few times before jumping from her lap. Xiao Bao ran back to his little nest to continue his sleep.

He He suddenly lost something that she could cuddle on, so she don't know what to do. Then she saw the box of cigarettes and matchbox that Zheng Xie left behind on the side. She stoop down and picked it up.

She scratched the side of the box of match and lit up one of the match. Then she lit up another match while thinking about the story of the little match girl. The little girl has a lot of clear visions so light the match one by one to match her fantasy. While He He watched every single match flame fluttering while feeling empty in her heart without any ideas at all. She felt like she has nothing that she is short of or missing from her life. So she really don't know what she wants. She just felt that she is often bored so need to find something to do.

Finally there is only one last match left. He He counted the cigarettes in the box and found that there is eighteen left. Zheng Xie had smoke two.

Then she pulled out one stick, using the last match to carefully light the cigarettes. She sat on the rocking chair, rocked slowly while smoking the cigarette, slowly spitting smoke ring.

Zheng Xie if see her smoking, she will surely suffer.

He He remember that she learned to smoke when she was in Senior High Three, when she was sixteen or seventeen.

She was late, so her rebellious period came later than everyone else. When her classmates were in their rebellious age, always exposing crimes against any antisocial remarks, she was the angel in the eyes of her teachers. When the other children have weathered through the most difficult years of their adolescence and prepared their first step towards maturity, He He had to go through her adolescence years alone and depressed while feeling lost for a long time. Smoking in her young mind are 'evil' just like getting into genetic relationship. It was one of her medications during those time.

She was able to put on a poker face, acting as if nothing happened. She carefully kept it hidden from her always absent mother, hidden from the kind and gentle Auntie Qian and hidden from the nanny in Zheng Xie's home. But she



failed to hide it from Zheng Xie whom was in school away from home and was only occasionally home.

Zheng Xie did not allow her to smoke. He He rebutted: “Now men and women are equal. Women smoking is normal. You see Maggie Cheung and Zhang Ai Jia in the movie. They look so cool while smoking.”

Zheng Xie said: “The other women are allowed to smoke. You cannot smoke. Other women have the temperament of smoking, while you do not have.”

“When you are in junior high school, you started smoking. On what ground you are stopping me?”

“If I quit smoking, will you also not touch this thing?”

They reached an agreement on this.

It seems that after so many years, both of them did not fulfill the agreement that they made that year.

||

# Chapter 17.1: Heavy head supporting role on stage

## Chapter 17.1: Heavy head supporting role on stage

Sense and sensibility are normally well coordinated and balance while Zheng Xie's sense and sensibility meet the 80/20 rules.

When visiting Yang Wei Qi's home, Zheng Xie also brought a bouquet of flowers.

It is not really bouquet of fresh flowers but a bunch of cloths with pig designs made into flower shape. It seems that the florist sew the flowers herself.

He had seen He He made similar bundle of cloth flowers and found it interesting. So when he saw it on sale, he bought it.

In fact, Zheng Xie new send flowers as gift as he felt uncomfortable doing it.

Yang Wei Qi is very happy when she receive the gift. Because she is born in the year of pig as her zodiac as well. When she opened the door, she was wearing The Three Little Pigs patch apron with towel wrapped hair, looking just like a pretty housewife.

Zhen Xi asked: "Do you need help?"

"No need. You find something to do. It will be ready in a while."

When Yang Wei Qi walked out from the kitchen, Zheng Xie was watching DVD.

His expression watching DVD is very special. Holding the remote control, the screen is set to quadruple speed, no sound but only quickly skipping the subtitles in English. He does not seem to be focusing.

Yang Wei Qi is amazed. It is the same movie that she was watching a few days ago, 窈窕美眉 (She Is All That) He just saw the end of the captions when he saw her. He turn off the screen with a sigh.

Yang Wei Qi said: "Such an interesting movie, why sigh?"

Zheng Xie said: "Is it? I do not think so."

"Why not? It has a good ending. The way you watch this movie looks like a real

style experts. Do you understand it?”

“Anyway, one of the lines are declining.” Zheng Xie carefully exit the disc from the player and re-insert it into the packaging box. He said to himself: “Life is like a play.”

“Of course. All works of art come from life.”

“If I were a girl, I can never return to the man side no matter how he vowed.” Zheng Xie say.

The story is on American Campus Idol. The campus idol make a bet with a friend to pursue an alternative art department well behaved girl. The whole thing came into light causing them to break up. And then they got back together to bring a successful and happy ending.

Yang Wei Qi said: “This is the difference between man and woman’s thinking. As long as the heart is sincere, it is all good.”

“How to judge sincere and insincerity? My principle is that once credibility of the partner is destroyed, it will be excluded from my scope for cooperation. Because once it has happen, it is inevitable that there will be a second.”

“Based on what you say, people who have committed a crime, there will never be opportunity to turn over a new life. If that is the case, all the world’s prisoners should be sentenced to death.” Finishing the sentence, Yang Wei Qi laughed. “So we both have occupation disease.”

Zheng Xie smiled politely, not wanting to argue with her.

Yang Wei Qi looked for a moment at the empty blue screen, and jokingly said: “I have always felt that human reason and sensibility is to have a balanced proportion. But Zheng Xie, your proportion apparently are very different from the ordinary people. Your power of reason is too strong.”

Zheng Xie said: “This is not good? Strong rational can avoid making mistakes.”

“But don’t you think that if everything in life is well planned, it is very boring? Nothing unexpected that happen then there will be no surprises. I guess that you’ve never met anything that is unexpected in your life before?”

Zheng Xie kept silent for a long time before slowly said: “Of course there have

been unexpected incidents in my life. There are unhappy incidents too. After all, it is not all triumph in life.”

The quality of the meal was only average.

Yang Wei Qi has a beautiful and neat appearance. Her things are neat and clean. Her dishes look very pretty but the taste is just not there.

Zheng Xie patiently ate the food served. Yang Wei Qi herself could not eat it after taking a few bites and said: “We go out and eat.”

“No need. Apart from a little salty and a little hard, it is actually not bad.”

“Let’s just go out. I cannot eat this.”

“What a pity. You spent half a day preparing these.”

“It’s okay. After all, I am cooking just for fun.”

Finally, they drove to the restaurant that they frequented.

While dining, Zheng Xie felt like he has been observed.

He looked up and looked around but did not see any acquaintance. After a while, his phone rang. He picked up and said something before hanging up.

Yang Wei Qi asked: “Something wrong?”

“There is no hurry. A friend of mine. I’ll be over to say hello.”

He waited for Yang Wei Qi to finish before they got walked to the other area of the hotel. Behind the screen, they met up with Cen Shi.

Cen Shi is sitting leisurely, seems like have been waiting for him for a while. He see Zheng Xie coming, stood up and nodded politely with an indifferent expression. “I want to talk about the past but you seem to have a companion. I think it is not convenient.”

“Mr Cen seem to be spending a long time in the city this time.” Zheng Xie replied with a very cool expression.

## Chapter 17.2: Heavy head supporting role on stage

*Interesting meet between Zheng Xie and Cen Shi. What did they talk about? Business? Or is it He He that they discuss? Read on to find out.....*

### Chapter 17.2: Heavy head supporting role on stage

“My friend went on a honeymoon. So I am helping him to take care of a little business.”

“Friend or a partner?”

Cen Shi laughed: “Mr Zheng would like to work with me?”

Zheng Xie also smiled: “If you want to talk about business, make appointment with my secretary. We discuss it in the office.”

Cen Shi smiled even wider. “After so many years, you still have not changed.”

“You have changed a lot.”

“It is natural. I was a student then while you were already someone big and powerful socially. Even today you are still high up on the social level but the distance between us seems a lot lesser, isn’t it?”

“I have said then, if you are not satisfied, then when you spread your wings, come and look for me. So you think the time has come?”

Cen Shi laughed: “How is it possible? I would rather curry favor with you.” Zheng Xie looked at him with a blank look on his face. Cen Shi grab the opportunity and said with a smile: “I found that I am still not able to forget He He. Out of courtesy, I am informing you. I don’t want you to think that I am not reliable.”

Zheng Xie said coldly: “Are you not a little too self-confident. Did you think that He He has no one else around her and that she is wholeheartedly still thinking of you over all these years? Waiting for you and as long as you come back, she will run back into your arms?”

Cen Shi said: “That I am not sure. But others are harmless. Not to mention a boyfriend, even her husband could be turned into nothing more than her ex-

husband. But only you, He He's brother, a word from you, I can come to naught beyond redemption. So I have to be very careful."

Zheng Xie sneered. "You are overestimating my influence over He He. If she does not accept you, it is your own problem."

"You cannot underestimate your influence on her." Cen Shi faintly and lengthy answered.

On the way back, Yang Wei Qi observed him for a moment before smiling slightly. "The person you met earlier, is that a friend or an enemy?"

"Is it that obvious?"

"Yes. In fact, I am curious. It is hard for you to like someone but for you to hate someone it is harder."

"Do not be naïve just like He He. Curiosity kills the cat." Without lifting his head, Zheng Xie said.

After sending Yang Wei Qi home, Zheng Xie looked at the time. It is still early.

He took out his cell phone to call Xiao He He wanting to invite her for dinner together tomorrow night after work. He is not able to reach her even after 2 calls as her line was busy. There is an interval of half an hour between both the attempted call.

Who is He He on the line with for such a long time to the extent that she is not afraid of the radiation from talking too long on the phone?

He change to sending He He a text message instead. He does not have mobile phone text-messaging capabilities. Unfamiliar to him, he studies the operating rules for a moment, and stumbled to type a few words. But when he tried to send it, the sending failed.

He frowned and gave up his plan for tomorrow.

It is 5 minutes after work. Xiao He He walked out of the company's office carrying a large slung back.

From the company to her home by cab only takes He He five minutes. Ten minute by bus and only half an hour by foot. Due to the road congestion, He he do not own a car nor she drive any car. Because of her slight fear of speed, she

rarely even take the cab.

There is a bus stop downstairs. But a few months ago, there is a poster that she dislike up on the building opposite that has not been replaced until now. So to avoid the eyesore that she often see, she always walk a little further towards the next stop.

As she walked on, out of habit, she took the shortcut and then walk all the way home.

Along the way, there are many stores from clothing stores to craft shops that are ready to close for the day. There are very nice aroma drifting from the snack bar. As she walked pass the road, there is an old famous street for street snacks. He He walking home almost every day, will end up with a bag of useless gadgets in her bag while her hand will carry a bag of delicious snacks.

There is another reason why she likes to take the walk between the two places is also due to the garment plaza that stood in between. He He likes to see their quarterly changes to the window display. The colorful frame that is still as elegant and ornate.

Walking and looking around, she walked slowly and finally stop. The window had silk and jewelry display. A few models casually wrapped with elegant knot that is with fantastic colors and patterns. Very beautiful and elegant.

There is a mannequin draped with purple and light green colors cloth. A very popular mix of color that is ambiguous yet unclear. Full of feeling. On the mannequin hand hung a bunch of bracelets, ten watermelon tourmaline cut into small flakes with think line green reflecting the red, just like a piece of watermelon skin. It blended very well with the color of the fabric.

She tilted her head to appreciate. Watermelon tourmaline are not particularly expensive but the string of pure and transparent collection are from the top grade.

Suddenly someone standing behind her said: "What a coincidence." She was shocked and turned back. Cen Shi appeared behind her.

## Chapter 17.3: Heavy head supporting role on stage

*What does Cen Shi want? Did he follow He He or is it really coincidence that they met on the street? Did they really ended up having dinner together? Read on.....*

### Chapter 17.3: Heavy head supporting role on stage

The corner of He He's mouth lifted slightly wanting to give him a laugh but from the shock that she suffered, she could not laugh. "Really coincidence." Amidst the bustling crowd during the peak commuting period, walking in the area will also bump into him.

"Since it is hard to meet up together like this, let's have dinner together." Cen Shi said.

"Sorry, I am not free. I have an appointment with someone."

"So lay-back and taking the leisure walk checking out stuff even though you have an appointment?" Cen Shi laughed while seeing through her lies. He had followed her for a while, and she failed to notice it.

He He blushed and calmly said: "My appointment is in half an hour time. There is plenty of time. Is that not allowed?"

Cen Shi laughed: "Then accompany me for a cup of coffee first, is that possible?"

He He said: "Thank you for your kindness. But drinking coffee on an empty stomach will caused gastric."

She walked in front while Cen Shi leisurely followed behind her. He He felt upset. She suddenly turned around and stopped. Cen Shi also stopped one meter behind her.

He He asked with a straight face: "Why are you following me?"

"This road that you are walking, I cannot go? It does not belong to your family." Cen Shi said and bring on a smile.

He He turned around and walked on. Her eloquence is bad. In comparison with



Cen Shi, they are miles apart in differences. She is not going to 算鸡蛋碰石头

算鸡蛋碰石头 (*pin ying : na jidan peng shitou*) – *this is a Chinese proverb that means : courting destruction. Functional translation means: – to pick a losing battle.*

In order to get rid of Cen Shi, He He walked to the curb and tried to stop a cab. This is the rush hour period. In the downtown section like now, there are no empty cab.

Cen Shi whom have been following He He from a distance said: “Where do you want to go? I send you.”

He He became really impatience and did something very childish. She pulled out her mobile phone from the bag and casually press a few keys but did not press the call button. She said: “If you continue to follow me, I will report to the police saying that you are harassing me.”

Cen Shi step forward. He He whom originally along the road sidewalk, seeing that he had moved forward, took a step backward. She did not expect the road behind her to be ten centimeters lower. As a result, she nearly fell but was pulled by Cen Shi. “Still so bold ah....”

He He fiercely pushed him. She found her cell phone now in the hands of Cen Shi.

Cen Shi said: “Wait here. Otherwise you don’t even think of getting back your cell phone. I am going to drive my car here.”

He He wanted to discard the phone and turned away. She thinks for a while and felt that more harm will follow, so there is actually no need to get emotional. After all, what Cen Shi can do?

As she was still in her mental struggle over it, Cen Shi has already drove over. His car is actually illegally parked not far away. The police did not come in time to tow it away. How unfortunate.

Xiao He He got into the car and sat on the passenger seat. Although she wanted to sit at the back, it would be too hypocritical. She would not know what Cen Shi would do and think if she does.

“Where are you going?”

“Go home.” He He looked at Cen Shi laughing and honestly admitted: “I am not feeling well today. Even if I am well, I am not comfortable in having dinner with you.”

“I understand.” Cen Shi did not asked her where she live but directly drove down the road towards the right direction.

As they were entering the district where He He stay, Cen Shi suddenly said: “He He, if you still mind the past and refused to forgive me.....”

He He interrupted him: “There is no such thing.”

Cen Shi ignored her interruption and continue: “Then you suppose we can be just friends that have just met. I promise I will not pester you. So you don’t try to avoid me.”

He He said: “Okay. It’s a deal.” She opened the car door and get off after saying that. Walking a few steps forward when Shi called her: “He He”. She turned to see that Cen Shi had got down from the car, leaning against the door with her cell phone in his hand. She forgot about her cell phone.

Xiao He He took a few step forward and retrieve her phone from him. She turned to leave but not without reminding him: “Yes Mr Cen, since we have just met, it is fine if you just call me ‘Ms Xiao’.”

Xiao He He throw her bag on the group after she step into her home and sat on the couch for a while. She wanted to check if Cen Yi has left through the window but stopped her urged by sitting herself down on the sofa.

It is normal if he is gone. Even if he is still there, it is only for show only. Although she is not his opponent, but she is very well verse with his temperament and know him very well.

In fact, he understands her well. So he did not explain in those days. He understand that he cannot rush for her to know his intention. And secondly, he know that even if he wants to explain, she would not be bother to listen. So he is better off to save his energy.

And then He He suddenly realized, after the ‘accidental meeting’ with Cen Shi,

she did not buy her dinner. So she only could prepare dinner herself or call for a take out.

Now, she is not hungry. Feeling a little restless, she decided to continue to work on the drawings that she had pending.

Her drawing book has a number of pages where she had already finished outlining the map with people and scenery. Every time when she is upset, she would take it out and starts to modify the line. This is not technically useful and is time consuming but it helps her to calm down. She had long ago discover this method.

He He is thinking while drawing.

She felt that she was harsh to Cen Shi earlier. Really rude of her but this is also forced after her world with Cen Shi.

In reality, Cen Shi did not really hurt her. He tricked her, although at that time she is really very sad but comparing with what she seen and heard later, it can be considered as really nothing but just a little plot similar to the classic TV series. Then he deceive her again. That in fact she knew that it is not entirely his fault. After all, Cen Shi is in a very different league from Zheng Xie. Totally not an opponent at all. Later, Cen Shi wrote to He He many letters. Sent many messages. Although from many point of view, it is completely sincere, but she refused to give him a chance to show it.

It is her own heart knot but she is repenting the anger to Cen Shi.

He He in her one mind managed to finish a map of Chinese mythology ladies. She usually leave the eyes to draw last as it gives her a sense of accomplishment. But this is also often how it would destroy one's work. After a closer look at the eyes, she inadvertently draw Auntie Qian appearance on the woman's face. Then she remembered her own mother, so decided to draw a picture in accordance to her mother's features. But she could not remember any of her mother's face features. Then she look through the photo albums.

While going through the photo album, she remembered that she did not had her dinner yet. She was feeling a little hungry so decided to go and order some takeout. She searched several drawers but could not find any restaurant number to call. This is because she had always taken these things for granted.

He He turn in vain, could not find the number even after calling 114. At last she remembered that she can go opposite to Zheng Xie's place to look for it. He has a book on a number of commonly used phone, she had patiently copy those number for him one by one. His things are always tidy, so she knew where to find it.

Before He He is able to take action as planned, Zheng Xie called her. Really coincidence.

Zheng Xie say that he is having dinner with Yang Wei Qi in the area about ten meters in a BBQ shop, asking her to join them for dinner.

| |

## Chapter 18.1: What a mess....

*So on Yang Wei Qi's invitation, Xiao He He joined her and Zheng Xie for dinner. During the dinner, He He accidentally burned her lips and Zheng Xie patiently rubbed her lips. Even reading this tells me how much Zheng Xie cares for He He and yet he has not realized it..... I wonder if he ever will realized all the actions that he had done is clearly showing everyone around him how much he cares for He He apart from himself. Enjoy the read!*

### Chapter 18.1: What a mess....

It was Yang Wei Qi who called Zheng Xie wanting to buy him dinner. She said she found a very good BBQ restaurant.

After getting to the store, only Zheng Xie found out that it is the BBQ Restaurant that is outside of He He's place. It is in a very inconspicuous location. The restaurant is also very small. Even the restaurant signature cannot be found. But the taste of the food served in the restaurant is very good. Business is good, so at least half-day advance reservation is required. Xiao He He has dragged him there several time.

The restaurant is famous for its slow service as there is only one barbeque master. The iron is only fixed for one type of roast each round. So the guests have to have patience and wait. Some will also lose their sense of hunger after a while. Biting into the barbecue, there will be squeaky drip of oil. He gets nausea just looking at it while they are so happy and satisfied enjoying the food.

Yang Wei Qi heard that He He also liked this store and staying so near. So insisted along the journey for He He to come and join them. So Zheng Xie had to make the call.

Xiao He He initially refused to go. But when she heard that Yang Wei Qi invited her, she no longer felt that she would be rude, so agreed to join them.

Yang Wei Qi is actually a comforting woman. She is able to guide the topic of the conversation and always pick her interest in making the conversation interesting. In fact, both of them are of the same age, but Yang Wei Qi takes good care of He He like a sister.

Zheng Xie is left out. He did not join into their conversation. He did not eat much as well. Just sitting patiently and distributing their rotisserie of apples and bananas.

He saw that He He ate a lot and asked: "In fact, you had not had dinner." He He told him that she had eaten dinner earlier.

He He played dumb and said: "I remember I had eaten. I am also confused." Anyway she is known to often forgotten to eat. She took the piece of baked apple that Zheng Xie put on her plate and bit into it before Zheng Xie could stop her. She burn her lips from the heat of the apple.

Yang Wei Qi got up to get her some ice. She came back and saw Zheng Xie carefully rubbed her lips from ice that he has gotten from somewhere.

He He scalded her mouth and do not wish to continue eating. She said that she is in a hurry to complete a sketch to send to her client before nine o'clock. He He apologies and asked them to continue to eat.

Yang Wei Qi said to Zheng Xie: "It is very late. Walking alone home is not safe. You go and send her."

He He keep saying no because it is very near. While she insisted on declining it, Zheng Xie has already gone to wait at the door for her.

Really only a few steps away. They reach the downstairs of her apartment within three or four minutes only. He He said: "Do not let Ms Yang wait there alone for too long. It is very impolite."

Zheng Xie said: "Never mind. I'll take you upstairs. Your mouth is better already? Always so careless. Isn't it a pity now that you can't eat more?"

"Ah." He He bow her head low and step onto her own shadow. "Ms Yang is a great person. You should quickly grab her hand in marriage."

"I am not worried. Why are you so anxious about?" Zheng Xie is amused.

"Marriage is like buying a house. While you are still shopping and looking around, your favorite set has already been purchased by others." He He said seriously.

Zheng Xie laughed. "Now the housing market is so bad. Who would want to

steal the house? And besides, the most expensive house always remain unsold...”

He He said: “Every time when I am having a serious conversation with you, you always takes it as a joke.”

Zheng Xie said: “Okay. I listen to your advice. Later I go and ask her hand in marriage.”

They both have nothing else to say, so quietly walked to the door.

He He said while looking for her keys. “The cat that you dislike, Xiao Bao am sure is still awake. So I will not invite you in. You go back quickly. Don’t let people wait too long.”

They were walking very quietly so the corridor lamp is not lighted. Zheng Xie gave a little cough and the light turned on. Zheng Xie said: “Recently, you are acting very strange. Is there anything wrong?”

“Nothing. What could have gone wrong?”

“If.....” Zheng Xie wanted to say something but did not know how to say it. “In short, should there are any trouble, remember to tell me. Before going to sleep at night, put some ice onto your mouth or else tomorrow you will look like a pig.”

He He had entered through the door, turning half of her body, laugh and said: “You are very strange recently. It is true that dating will reduce IQ.”

Zheng Xie make a gesture of wanting to beat her. He He shrink and ran from the door.

Zheng Xie said: “Close the door.”

He He replied: “You leave first and I will close the door.”

They were stiff for a while and then suddenly said: “Yeah! Mosquito.” And then bang the door shut. Zheng Xie finally returned downstairs.

Later while sending Yang Wei Qi home, he asked her: “How long have we known each other?”

Yang Wei Qi said: “From our first meeting or from the date of our first meal? The former is seven weeks less two days or the later of five weeks and one day?”

Surprised, Zheng Xie smiled: “You do remember very clearly and accurately.”

Yang Wei Qi nodded: “I have occupational diseases. And I am initially a criminal lawyer.”

“Only seven weeks, ah. Less than two months.”

“Long enough. Sometimes I would rather hope that time passes slowly again.”

“Why?”

Yang Wei Qi casually stretched and said: “Time passes slowly, we can keep our youthful chat.”

Zheng Xie said: “I hope that the time is a little faster.”

||



## Chapter 18.2: What a mess....

*In the last chapter, He He encourage Zheng Xie to ask Yang Wei Qi's hand in marriage. And Zheng Xie has casually agreed.... Would that happen anytime soon?*

*In this chapter, we will read about the annoying (well if I were He He, I would find him extremely annoying) Cen Shi is. What exactly did Cen Shi do? Read on.....*

### Chapter 18.2: What a mess....

The next day, Xiao He He swollen lips are much better after swelling in the night.

She intently work the whole morning. Nearing noon, she went to the security office to sign for the express parcel that she was notified.

It is a very light and small box. Only wrapped in beautiful paper in a simple design. There is no sender signature.

She took the parcel upstairs before opening it. Her heart quickly jump a few times. It turns out to be a watermelon tourmaline bracelet in a white velvet box. The bright color and fine texture is uniform with excellent quality. It is the piece that she saw in the window on the model hands yesterday.

Apart from Cen Shi, there could not be anyone else.

He He cover the box and slid it into the drawer. She is very flustered.

In the past, together with a large group of people, He He and Cen Shi went hiking. He He picked a bunch of flowers to bring back, and carefully made a basket from the flowers. Cen Shi pulled trees and some flowers and twisted into a bracelet for her. While putting it on her hand, he jokingly said: "Handcuffs to leash you." She was deeply moved and wanted for the time to fly so that she could marry him in a few years' time.

Now, he casually sent such an expensive bracelet to her, she only felt ridiculous.

As nostalgic as it can get, one do not miss the things and happening in the past. Just miss the time when they were happy with a pure state of mind.

Coming out of the building after the end of the work day, He He saw Cen Shi in his car waiting for her.

Cen Shi saw her, opened his window, took off his sunglasses and revealed a charming smile: "Ms Xiao. Another coincidence. Let me give you a ride."

Xiao He He opened the passenger seat door and shove him the box containing the bracelet. And then she went to sit at the back of his car. "For people who have just met, sending expensive things will only cause the recipient to suspect that you are insulting."

Cen Shi quickly started the car and smiled while saying: "I have not chased women for many years. So I do not understand the rules now. Please forgive me. Where do you want to go?"

He He said: "To the next bus station."

Cen Shi said: "Okay." He stepped on the gas and the car instantly accelerate and they quickly reached to the destination that He He requested.

Xiao He He glanced out of the window. "You have still not learned on how to respect women?"

Cen Shi replied with a very serious expression: "I'm sorry. I am not familiar with the city and the different direction. So I forgot. Violation of traffic rules is an immoral act."

He He replied indifferently: "If you could please, send me home. Thank you."

Cen Shi said: "Allow me to invite you to dinner. To express my regret for 'disrespecting ladies'. What do you want to eat? Where do you want to eat?"

He He said: "Go to a place where we could eat Honshu Abalone. Otherwise, there is no need."

Cen Shi choked a little, stunned and then could not help laughing. He He looked at him but he did not see and gently smiled before saying: "I bet that your loving brother Zheng Xie has never seen your tricky rude look. I am more fortunate than him."

He He said: "Please do not use such a disgusting way to mention him. Not everyone is like you."

Cen Shi continued to laugh: "You are already so big. Still worshiping him like a God. Do you really think that he is a white angel? You certainly have not seen him when he is cool and cutting things off with those girls? Forcing them to look like they are ready to commit suicide."

He He replied with a sneer: "How do you know that I have not seen? Even if the feeling is cold, he is honest and open about it. He dares to do it. He did not deceive anyone with that. There is no dishonesty. Unlike those who play love game while scheming."

Cen Shi stayed calm and did not get angry. His face gradually smiled with his eyes obviously laughing: "He He, you definitely understand your brother deeply. More than his understanding on you."

He He said: "Change the topic or park the car. Please choose one of the two."

Cen Shi laughed but no longer speak. He drove the car leisurely. There are many ways to He He's home. Cen Shi purposely choose the most crowded and narrow street that goes through fairs, schools as well as shops.

He He kept silence and let him play his jokes. She is fully aware that in this case, the angrier she gets and protests, the more sense of accomplishment that he would have. So she will not let him smug.

Anyway, even the longest way, she will still be able to get home within an hour. After all, she is not in a hurry.

Her cell phone rang during this time. He He saw that it is Shi Lin calling from the screen. Recently he has gone outstation, so she had not seen him for some time.

Shi Lin gently said: "I have some urgent business and will need to return to the United States tomorrow. I am asking you out for a meal. I know it is very hasty and very bold but I hope you can come out...."

He He thought for a moment and said: "Okay. I should be buying you dinner."

Shi Lin said: "Then considered you buying me dinner. You choose the place."

He He thought for a moment and mentioned the name of the place.

She looked up to check out which road she is on now, then turned to look at Cen Shi while thinking of how to get him to let her off. Before she could begin to say anything, Cen Shi had already turned the car into a quiet lane. Very quickly, they reached the main door and in less than ten minutes, had arrived at the doorstep of the hotel that she had mentioned to Shi Lin earlier. After stopping the car, he unlocked the car door for her.

He He got off the car and very seriously said to him: "Thank you." This is the first time since her reunion with Cen Shi that she is most sincere.

| |

## Chapter 18.3: What a mess....

*From the last chapter, we read about how annoying / persistent (I find it annoying while some of you readers may find him persistent) Cen Shi is. He is definitely wanting to make a 'comeback' with He He. The question lies in, is He He still waiting for him? Or she had moved on....*

*In today's chapter, we join Zheng Xie in his movie date with Yang Wei Qi over an old French film. We get to read deeper into the meaning behind the movie (which indirectly reflects the hidden / unknown feeling between Zheng Xie and Xiao He He) as both Zheng Xie and Yang Wei Qi discuss their different opinions about the movie. Some interesting conversation between them as well. Enjoy the read, everyone!*

### Chapter 18.3: What a mess....

While Xiao He He is meeting up with Shi Lin, Zheng Xie and Yang Wei Qi were watching a movie at the cinema.

Two days ago, Yang Wei Qi saw the newspaper advertisement about the French Film Week that was held in the Central Square Studios. Unfortunately she missed it. Zheng Xie said: "Get them to re-show it. Which want you want to watch?" So he called her today to watch the movie.

As a result, in the huge theater that is able to accommodate thousands of people, there are only two of them. Yang Wei Qi said emotionally: "The privileged of the upper class."

Zheng Xie said: "What privilege? There is no such matter. It is just equivalent to making some exchange."

The movie name is *Jeux d'enfants*. The Chinese name is 两小无猜 (pin ying: Liang Xiao Wu Cai)

*Jeux d'enfants* – is a 2003 French-Belgian movie starring Marion Cotillard and Guillaume Canet. This movie is also known as *Love Me If You Dare* in English.

[Love Me If You Dare](#)



The movie is a story of a pair of childhood friends. From childhood, they love to play joke on each other, forcing each other to do naughty things to embarrass each other, take silly risks and forcing the other side to cancel the engagement with the fiancé. And many years later, both of them got married with their individual partners.

Watching French movie has always been boring, nearly put Zheng Xie to sleep. In the meantime, Yang Wei Qi was so emerged into the movie, she did not even speak to Zheng Xie throughout the movie.

In the end of the movie, a big toss to both parties life when a tragedy happen. And they reunited in finally.

The lights came back on and they went out. Yang Wei Qi had tears in her eyes. Wiping away her tears, fresh one flow down. Zheng Xie is amused and said: “Such a lousy movie, why are you so touched?”

Yang Wei Qi said while wiping her tears: “You were asleep. What do you understand about the most classic movie of 2003?”

Zheng Xie said disapprovingly: “I thought it was a new movie. If I know it is a 2003 movie, it would have been better to watch it at home on the DVD.”

Yang Wei Qi said: “That cannot be compared. Movie theater screen is big and feel much better. It was nicer when we were younger. We used to watch good movies in the big theater, as big as a curtain. I always like to sit in the front row, although it is tiring but there will not be any people walking about. And it is quieter, as if one is exposed into the movie scene. Now fewer people watch movie, so most of the movie theater are converted into small hall show. Not many big screen. So except when a new blockbusters are released, there are usually no film art.”

Zheng Xie said: “小资情调”

*小资情调 (pin ying : xiao zi qing diao) – is translated as Petite Bourgeoisie French pronunciation: [pətit buʁʒwazi]), also petty bourgeoisie (literally small bourgeoisie) that means a member of the lower middle class, especially when is perceived as conventional and conservative.*

Yang wei Qi wiped away her last tear. “小资就小资, better than these big exotic capitalists. I expect that the story would have a better ending, and did not expect that it ends this way.”

*小资就小资 (pin ying : xiao zi jiu xiao zi) – Is translated as ‘Petty, so just let it be petty’*

Zheng Xie said: “You can cry even when watching a funny movie. You are indeed unique.”

Yang Wei Qi retorted: “This is a comedy of a pair of childhood love. After so many rounds of detours before they finally get together, isn’t it such a pity?”

They got into the car. While driving, Zheng Xie says: “I do not think that they are pitiful. These two people are sick in their mind and is doing it out of habit.

They habitually gamble for a lifetime playing the same game. If you really love each other, you would not get married to others. Furthermore, abandon their families and home / marriage, there is no sense of responsibility. This film is used to deceive woman and children.”

Yang Wei Qi could not find the words to refute him, so returned him with a sentence: “You obviously had your eyes closed. How could you remember so clearly?”

They went to a French Restaurant to eat French food. Yang Wei Qi is still immersed in the movie’s sad atmosphere.

“Zheng Xie, your understanding is wrong. The Chinese translation of the title is always strange. The English name is ‘Love Me If You Dare’. So they obviously love each other, but cannot admit it.”

So later.....

Zheng Xie felt that debating with a female lawyer about woman view on a movie really brings no meaning, so fittingly said: “Okay. Let’s just say that they knew from the beginning that they love each other, just never realized it.”

Zheng Xie so easily cast down the debate, Yang Wei Qi does not feel that she won the debate, so quietly immersed herself into dinner.

French meal is always exquisite with very complicated procedure. Even Zheng Xie with the supremacy do not have patience. So he decided to give up dessert.

He looked attentively at Yang We Qi eating her dessert and asked: “Recently you want to getaway for two days of vacation together. Have you found a good place yet?”

Yang Wei Qi had something in her mouth, so did not bother looking up and said: “Not yet. You really want to go?”

Zheng Xie said: “Of course. You say that ‘交往过半’ is a solemn reason, so how I do not try to fit in. What do you mean by 交往过半?”

*交往过半 (pin ying : jiao wang guo ban) means that they have already made contact / date for more than half*

Yang Wei Qi this time looked up and observed Zheng Xie’s expression for a



moment. Although he look somewhat casual, but his eyes were bright.

She carefully said: “That means, as I understand it, you are obeying the rules of the game.”

Zheng Xie looked at her for a moment and gave a very small smile. He picked up the cup to drink some water and said to Yang Wei Qi: “Why don’t we do make a bet? After three months, if we could still maintain the current stage of relationship, then we will seriously consider our future together. Counting from the time when we first met.”

Yang Wei Qi carefully choose her words and said: “What does this mean? Are you confessing?”

“Whatever you think it is, then that is what it mean to be.”

Yang Wei Qi laughed and then said: “Well, in the provisions of contract law, your ‘offer’ have already enforced by the law, so you have no way to unilaterally withdrew.”

Zheng Xie with a slight angular said, half laughing and half earnestly: “You can check if there are records that you will find my credit has always been very good as well. Your occupational diseases is too serious.”

| |

## Chapter 18.4: What a mess....

*Happy Labour Day everyone! We have now moved into the 5th month of the year. How time flies..... Hope that April had been a great month for everyone. My 6 months of career break is finally over and it is time to get back to the reality. So I am officially starting my new contract work this month. As much as I could, I would try to continue with the daily post. However, please bear with me should there are any delay. The new project that I took up would be taking up pretty much of my days as I do have a time frame to complete it. In the meantime, sit back and enjoy the read for today.....*

*This is an exciting chapter for me... Shi Lin finally confessed to He He. So what happen next? Did He He accepted him and start dating him? Read on and find out.....*

### Chapter 18.4: What a mess....

He He and Shi Lin finished their dinner and Shi Lin sent her home.

It was a pleasant dinner. Shi Lin has always treated her well, just like a big brother. He He only need to casually said something and he will take it seriously. For professional terminology that He He could not understand, he will use the most simple lay-man terms to explain the anthropomorphic to her. He has always been like that.

On the way home, they drove past a newly opened ice-shaving store. On the display in front of the door, there is a bunch of three-dimensional fruit, very bright and lovely. He He could not help but give it a few more glance.

Shi Lin parked the car a few meters away, turned around and asked He He: “Do you want to eat that?”

He He originally did not want to eat but seeing that he had stopped the car, nodded and said: “This time let me treat you instead.”

There is a small park at the end of the road. They parked the car there and walked over to the shop to have their ice.

He He dug in and ate with her small mouth. Shi Lin just looked at her. And

when she quickly finished her portion, he pushes the other portion to her and said: "In fact, eating too much of these are not good for the stomach. You should also eat less."

He He shyly said: "Oh. I forgot that you do not eat cold stuff." She vaguely remembered Shi Lin said before that he does not eat ice-cream.

Shi Lin said: "I see that you are particularly happy when eating these. Turning anyone looking at you mood to a happier mood as well. So I kept this for you, so that I could see you for a while more."

He He is a little embarrassed, and bowed her head to concentrate on eating the second portion quietly.

Shi Lin smilingly said: "I should not have said that to you. As a result, you now are alert. Your expression is different now from the earlier expression."

He He smiled and change the subject: "This time after returning to the United States, when is the next time you would be coming back?"

Shi Lin asked earnestly this time: "Do you wish for me to come back?"

"I certainly hope that elite compatriots overseas will come back to the motherland." He He tried to muddled through.

"This is a good reason." Shi Lin stopped and then hesitantly said: "He He, there is some words that I know are presumptuous, but if I do not say it now, I am afraid that I will lose the courage in the future or lose the opportunity."

He He bow her head in silence.

Shi Lin thought for a moment and continued: "He He, despite my age, I have never been in love. But I feel comfortable with you. You have made me want to have the idea of settling down."

He He continued to keep her silence.

"I do not want you to make the decision now. I just want you to know. If you.... If you still have not been able to meet anyone that have moved your heart, or you do not particularly feel bored with me, especially bored, so..... I hope you could consider me....."

He He suddenly looked up and turned to look at him. Although it is nighttime,

the small park lighting is sufficient for Shi Lin to see the clear faze undetected. Hence, he could not finished what he intended to say.

He He softly said: “Brother Shi, I have always respected and admired you as a big brother, just like how I treat Brother Zheng Xie.”

Shi Lin was silent for a moment and said with a wry smile: “He He, in fact, do you not need to give me the answer so quickly. You could at least let me have a few more days to look forward to.”

He He looked down at the bowl of ice that she is holding in her hand, the milk and the ice has melted from the temperature of her palm. She lower her voice and say: “Brother Shi Lin, you are a good man. A very good man. If I have any sisters, I would hope that they marry you...”

“Unfortunately, you do not want to marry me, so I am not good enough.”

“This is not your problem.” He He lowered her voice so low that he almost could not hear anything. “My brother’s friend, will always be a brother to me. This is the idea that I had since I was young. I have never changed. So it is not you, but because of my own.”

“If.... He He, if I am not, then..... Would you.....” He He saw the rare expression of Shi Lin. She had a sense of guilt, and found out for the first time, that her eloquence is very poor.

“There is no if.” He He finally said and looked up, but not to look at him, but to look at the light far out. She mechanically repeated: “There is no if.”

Shi Lin suddenly seems to have an epiphany. He hesitantly said: “He He, do you like Zheng Xie but he could not read your mind.” He then explained hastily after finishing the sentence: “I have no other meaning. It that is true, at least I can try to let him know.”

“No.” He He did not panic nor look lost. Her eyes firmly looked at Shi Lin and said: “Really there is no such thoughts. I just hope that he and Ms Yang Wei Qi get married earlier and live a happy life forever.”

Shi Lin sigh slightly but no longer speak.

A dinner that started off well did not end very well. When Shi Lin sent He He

home, on the road, both of them kept quiet and said nothing. When Shi Lin wanted to adjust the tense atmosphere in the car by switching on the radio station, even after changing a few channels, all are broadcasting sad love songs.

He looked embarrassedly looked at He He and laughed. She also happen to look at him, took her hand and pull out a cd. "Let's put this on."

It turns out to be a classical symphony, very out of tune to the noisy night outside of the car. But this succeeded in changing the atmosphere between them in the car.

Shi Lin said: "He He, what I said earlier, please don't put it into your heart. Take it as I have never said them. Next time when I come back, please don't pretend to not know me. Didn't you say that a few steps away from where you stay, there is a good barbecue restaurant. Let's go there when I am back."

He He said: "Good." She blinked hard and said: "This evening, apart from talking about your work, we did not talk about anything else."

Shi Lin said with a smile: "Yes ah, I am already old. So have bad memory."

Although Shi Lin was driving very slowly, they soon reached their destination. He got out of the car and open the door for He He.

He He got out of the car and took a few steps before turning back and said: "Brother Shi Lin, you go first."

"You go upstairs first. I will leave when you turned on your lights."

Shi Lin looked at He He climbing up the stairs quicker than her usual pace. He is not surprised. And the lights in her apartment turned on quicker than normal.

He self-deprecating smiled in the dark, got back into the car. Before re-starting the car, his cell phone beep to indicate a new text message received. Xiao He He had sent him a text message. Very simple words: "I am sorry."

He looked dazedly at the words until the screen darkens. And then he only think that he should reply back. Him who never had used the drawing functions, clumsily drew a smiley face and sent it back to He He. Under the smiley face, he had handwritten some words: If you need help, remember to look for me.

## Chapter 19.1: A little nerve disorder

*In the last chapter, I felt sorry for poor Shi Lin whom confessed and were rejected gently by He He. So, what do you think the reason why He He said what she said? Was Shi Lin right about He He realizing her own feelings already for Zheng Xie or she has some other secrets in her heart that she is not sharing? Hopefully this chapter is able to enlighten us a little.*

### Chapter 19.1: A little nerve disorder

This is the season for a little bit of nerve disorder. A queer reaction.

Early in the morning, someone sent Xiao He He a large bouquet of flowers. Lilies and lavender with a delicate ribbon tied together with a very delicate card without any printed label of the florist name. It looks more like a special buy. There are elegant words on the card: "Good luck. You must always be happy." And it is signed by Shi Lin.

He He carefully kept the card and put the flowers into the clay pot that she personally made.

Each designers have a cubicle each. It is hard to hide any secret in general. When the flower shop send the flowers, a few male colleagues quietly blow whistled at her a few times. When they see how dearly she treat the bouquet of flowers, additional few more whistles were blown.

He He pretended not to hear and just shyly smiled. She looked at the flowers. Lavender: meaning of waiting for love. Lilies: mean for all wishes to come true.

He He winced, feel his heart, and felt somewhat indistinct feeling.

In the afternoon, the boss personally called all designers for a meeting. The company size is small with the boss also coming from the designer background. She is also part-time head of the design department. As she was speaking, the young girl open the door, said sorry and then intended to leave.

The company has always been very casual with not much of a strict discipline. The boss said: "If you have something, do come in."

The young girl whispered: "Someone sent He He a bouquet of flowers."

Everyone laughed. The lady boss said: “Summer is almost over. Now only someone’s 桃花 is blooming so strongly?”

桃花 (*pin ying: tao hua*) – Chinese phrase that means **luck in love**.

He He is embarrassed and refuse to rise her head. So the lady boss personally took the flowers and stuffed them into He He’s hand. This time the crowd pay a lot of attention as it is a big bouquet of roses, the rare species in rare colors. It certainly took everyone’s breath away.

He He is too lazy to even look at the card. She is aware that such an arrogant attitude, there is only be Cen Shi who would do that. She exhaled softly and throw the flowers on the table.

The lady boss smiled and patted her hand. “It seems that this one is better than the morning one. If it is really not desirable, then introduced to me.”

Everyone laughed again. He He cursed Cen Shi in her heart.

Sure enough, after work, in front of the office door, Cen Shi is waiting again. He He opened his door and got onto the car. “You choose where to eat and I will pay. Let’s make it clear once and for all. Let’s just do that.”

Zheng Xie and Yang Wei Qi was eating in a restaurant. Yang Wei Qi received a phone call and went out. Upon returning, she said to Zheng Xie: “I think I just saw someone who look like He He sitting in the second row next to us.”

“Together with man?”

“A young man. I cannot confirmed so I did not head over to them. You want to go over and have a word with her?”

The position that Yang Wei Qi mentioned is just in front of Zheng Xie. He twist his body to the side and had a looked. He could not see anything and said: “Better not. She might be mortified.” Then he continued to bow his head to eat.

Zheng Xie initially guess that the person could be Shi Lin. Then he suddenly remembered that Shi Lin is now in Beijing and would be returning to United States in a few days’ time.

Big man usually are not interested in gossip, so he pressed his curiosity. But he still could not help but keep glancing at the side. Finally he had a chance to know

who the man sitting on the other table is. Then Zheng Xie no longer glanced the direction.

When Zheng Xie once again lost concentration with the conversation, Yang Wei Qi said: “Zheng Xie, you started to ‘study’ your fingers again.”

Because Zheng Xie have been caught red-handed, he just smiled and put his hands on the table. But he chooses to keep quiet.

Yang Wei Qi kept quiet for a while and then said while breaking the silence: “That man, is the one that you mentioned before? He He’s first love and ex-boyfriend?”

Zheng Xie’s eyes flashed and still did not speak/ Yang Wei Qi said: “He looks talented and good. You do not like him?”

Zheng Xie replied: “I rarely have anything that I like.”

From the corner of his eyes, he caught a glimpse towards their table and saw a new movement. This time he see that He He and Cen Shi had stood up. With her back to him, she seems to laugh while Cen Shi put on her coat for her.

Zheng Xie is sitting slightly behind, hence when the couple leave, they will not pass through his table. Zheng Xie sit against the upper back of the table. This way, even if He He turn around, she would not see him as well.

Yang Wei Qi this time really laughed. She does not speak but just laughed. Gradually she smiles. Then she think of something and then laughed. Laughed while trying to take a sip of water.

Zheng Xie said: “Do not laugh. If you choked, it would be ugly and uncomfortable.”

Yang Wei Qi said: “Ai. You looked like parent whom caught your daughter with her puppy love. You are very angry but yet want to make lightly of this. Very awkward.”

Zheng Xie moved his lips tightly: “Your occupational diseases has occurred again.”

Yang Wei Qi stop messing with him. She continued to slice the steak into small pieces. She said: “I have something to say. But you need to promise that you will



not get angry.”

“If it is something unpleasant, then you should not say it.”

Yang Wei Qi said: “Not really unpleasant. I am just curious. Towards He He, you have also been so caring and detailed. To the extent that you review her friends as well. Do you not ever thought that when she grow up, you marry her? This would justify why you constantly keep a tab and takes such good care of her.”

Zheng Xie gently frowned: “Stop talking nonsense. I just hope that she can find someone who really loves her and not be bullied. The man earlier, I do not trust.”

Yang Wei Qi said: “Zheng Xie, I really think that you are the most qualified. Really, you are the most qualified one.” She laughed again.

||

## Chapter 19.2: A little nerve disorder

*In the last chapter, even Yang Wei Qi started noticing and sense Zheng Xie's care for He He is beyond the normal siblings relationship. However, it had been shot down nicely by Zheng Xie as usual.*

*In this chapter, we will learn why Zheng Xie is adamant about never having the thought of marrying He He. Instead he insisted that his concern is only for He He's best and he wants her to be happy. Is that really all?*

*At the same time, He He finally open up and said that is necessary to Cen Shi. What exactly did she tell Cen Shi? Would they renew their acquaintance?*

### Chapter 19.2: A little nerve disorder

Zheng Xie said with a straight face: "You should have already had enough. Why don't we go?"

"Wait, I want to finish this soup."

Zheng Xie support his chin with his hand and watched Yang Wei Qi finished her soup. She neither spoke nor smile. But in fact she is uncomfortable. She felt that it is too quiet.

"My parents actually grew up together. Both have a very good relationship. When the adults are not home, my mum will cook for my dad. And my dad will help my mum with her homework. They grew up going through many different failed relationship. Then people say, it would be better for both of you to get married. So they got married."

Zheng Xie reminisced the memories of the past, not aware if he is telling to himself or for the ears of Yang Wei Qi.

He rarely mentioned his side of the family or his own personal stuff. Yang Wei Qi is slightly surprised and looked at him before saying: "My uncle and aunty are an example. Since my childhood, they like to mention the same. My uncle and aunty often said that their marriage is a good example."

Zheng Xie said: "On this issue, I must say that they have a very good basis for everything. Family and friendship. Just lacking in love only."

Yang Wei Qi quietly said: "In a marriage, love is always secondary. Trust, respect and tolerance should always be the top importance."

Zheng Xie said: "You really talk like my mother. If she is still alive, she would have liked you. My mother often said that, in the over twenty years of marriage, more than half of the time, they are not by each other side. She often planned, when your father and I after this age, we will do this.... And instead, she did not even live passed the age of fifty."

Yang Wei Qi was silenced for a moment and said softly: "I am sorry."

Zheng Xie said: "Why say sorry. I just want to share with you, it is for this reason that the kind of assumptions that you had, I have never thought about it."

"I understand. Thank you."

The conversation between Cen Shi and He He in fact is far-fetched from the beautiful conversation that thought.

He He said: "Cen She, you are fully aware. I hate playing games in circles. This is because I have a simple and straight mind. I do not want to play with you. So I would like to make it clear once and for all. If you want us to try to renew out acquaintance, I am sorry. I do not turn back to the past. If you want to close the gap between us using the identity of a stranger with me, then let me tell you. In my standard, people like you can only be friends. Do not fit to be my Valentine. I am grateful that you think highly of me. But seeing how you are wasting your time, I am very uncomfortable and sorry. I am done. Now you may speak."

Cen Shi is choked with her words and was silence for a long time. He is in deep admiration for her personality. She is no longer the kitten, quiet and well-behaved Xiao He He. Now she is a sturdy queen.

He said: "You don't need to try to avoid me. Even as ordinary school friends, after so many years, we can also still catch up isn't it? He He, you are really changed from the person before, although at the first glance, you do not seem to have changed much. You have been unhappy all these years?"

He He said: "Before you came, I have been very happy. Why, now you want to save my unhappy heart?"

Cen Shi said: "I want to save my own heart."

He He gave the expression of eating something sour and said: "Cen Shi, this is the worry. This line is long out of fashion."

Cen Shi naively asked: "So what is popular now?"

He He also felt that she had gone overboard and replied to a lot gentler tone: "Now it is popular to be a cool guy. Do not speak unnecessarily, do not suddenly appear. Just like how you were before. It is now popular again."

Cen Shi said: "You remembered how I used to be so clearly?"

He He quickly changed the subject: "Why do you keep hanging around here? Isn't this the best time for man to go and do business instead of hanging around woman."

Cen Shi said: "I will be staying in the province for a while. I will only go back to the capital city after your friend returned from their honeymoon. It should take about six months."

He He said: "Ah, no wonder you always cannot be lacking in entertainment."

Cen Shi reluctantly said: "He He, I admit that I was not good in the past and recently I wrapped myself around you, hence making you tired. But can we not talk calmly? I just want to see you smile just like how you used to be."

He He gave him a big smile. "Like this? It is not the case that you don't have any brains. Why make such a big circle around. Why it is that smart people just cannot be direct."

Cen Shi is totally confused with her and smiled while clutching his temples. "Okay, I will not bother you. But if you ever need my help one day, you must remember to come to me. I just want to compensate for the hurt that I had brought to you."

## Chapter 20.1: Something to hide (心中有鬼)

*In the last chapter, He He finally make it really clear to Cen Shi about what she thinks and that there would not chance for him to come back into her life. Would Cen Shi really be able to stay away? What happen next?*

### Chapter 20.1: Something to hide (心中有鬼)

Anyone that has something to hide will always think others are ghosts.

The next day, Xiao He He purposely took a leave of absence and got her friend Ding Ding to accompany her to look at purchasing a car.

Ding Ding said: “Did you not ever say that this lifetime, you only want to be passenger and not the driver? And you once gave me a lot of grief about how it is much more cost-effective to take a cab than buying a car. You even persuaded me to not buy a car. Why suddenly change your mind?”

He He said: “Age is catching up. So naturally one will have a change of heart. Do you remember that I used to only like to draw black and white? But now I eagerly put on colors.

Ding Ding said: “It’s strange. You still look like a young girl but your heart is just like an old aunty.”

“All things are balanced, ah. To retain the youthful look, one would have to bear the cost. Now you understand?”

Ding Ding chuckled: “A slope.... A slope....” She was brought up in a strict household and held for a long time and eventually could not spell out the word of “Pi” that she wanted to say that is indecent. “Whatever we had chat about before I return from abroad is all not visible? How come suddenly you become so vicissitudes? Is it really because someone with the surname Cen is back to confuse your mind?”

“So such thing. Let the past be bygone. Who wants to put that into heart and think about it? Only that recently a bunch of lost people suddenly popped up, so my thought went back to the past, even those that I have forgotten. Haiz. Let’s not talk about this. Very troublesome. Probably true that they say a 25 year old

woman need some time to adapt back to normal life.”

“You don’t scare me. I will be 25 years old next month after my birthday.” Ding Ding suddenly lean in and whispered in He He’s ears: “Oh! How come I have never found you to have such sick temperament?”

He He had a shocked and almost jumped up from her seat. “Drive your car carefully. I am not weary. I am full of life and I intend to live to the age of eighty and have four generations. You don’t simply create trouble for me.”

Ding Ding is very satisfied with He He’s response. “Eighty years old with four generation? You are already 25 years old and still not married. Without early marriage and childbearing, how to meet your descendants is able to meet your extravagant wish ah?”

Both of them fooling around and finally arrived at a sizeable 4S shop. He He is not familiar with car and their makes. Since several of her colleagues are using the same type of car, she decided to go straight for the same type. Carefully choosing the color, she ignored the sales person who gave her enthusiastic recommendation. She managed to settle the purchase within 10 minutes.

Ding Ding is speechless. “If every customer has your efficiency, the store would be very happy. You don’t want to test drive?”

He He said: “There is no need. It is not a new model. I had drove my colleague’s car before.”

Ding Ding sternly said: “As the saying goes, car is like a partner. One need to find the most suitable one. How can you just be so casual about it?”

He He laughing and gently pushed Ding Ding with her hand. “Come on, what matters the most if being able to adapt to it. Learning about car is difficult. But then I think that I am most suitable with a Ferrari. You buy one for me, ah?”

Ding Ding said: “Let your brother Zheng Xie buy for you. He certainly would be willing.”

He He said: “Based on what grounds? He is not my real brother.”

“Brother Zheng Xie would be very unhappy when he hear this sentence.”

He He had no cash on her. As she was negotiating on how much down-

payment is require and how to apply for subsequent procedures when the car dealer boss whom had just returned walked past her. He turned and glanced at her a few time. “Hey, you are not..... Director Zheng’s..... you are called Xiao He He, right?”

He He nodded her head, vaguely remembering this person.

In fact, Zheng Xie rarely bring her out to meet all the messy friends that he had but she had seen one or two of them but she can’t remember any of them.

The tall guy that look simple and honest person, seems to be one of Zheng Xie’s supplier. He He could remember him because a few years ago, there is a banquet that the gentlemen brought his young daughter. So happen, He He is also free for the night, so went together with Zheng Xie. While the others are busy drinking, He He had been playing with the little girl.

The man at that time had just been widowed. After a few glass of wine, is moved by the gesture and said that her laughter is similar to his deceased wife. Under the influence of alcohol, he started asking about their brother – sister relationship for a long time. This very simple and straightforward man, He He felt that he is funny and is very touched by him. He has also left a good impression on her.

This already changed industry big brother is very happy to see He He. He had constantly kept in touch with Zheng Xie but could never see her. So he personally looked into her purchase and gave a big discount plus a lot of other free gifts. When He He follow up on the procedures and advise, he said: “You do not need to run those errands. Just leave your identity card and phone details will be good. Once they are all ready, you can come and collect. If not, they can send it to you. Or they can go and pick you up and bring you here. Down-payment money? Those money are not urgent. Just bank it into the company account when you are free.”

Ding Ding is totally stunned and speechless. “You are the VIP above the VIP treatment ah. Thanks to Zheng Xie whom is not your real brother. Otherwise, you can go sideways.”

He He said: “Huh, I am just 狐假虎威 only.”

狐假虎威 (*pin ying: Hú Jiǎ Hǔ Wēi*) – this is a Chinese idioms that means, to

*bully others by the virtue of someone's influence.*

The car shop owner is very efficient. The next morning, the car is already under her ownership and is delivered to her. There is even someone accompanying her for the next two weeks. Every day, someone automatically appear in front of her and sit in the front passenger seat accompanying her when she drive.

Cen Shi really never appear as promised.

If she had known, there would be no rush to buy her car. She really don't like to drive.

||



## Chapter 20.2: Something to hide (心中有鬼)

*So, to avoid Cen Shi, He He decided to get herself a car so that he has no reason to drive her anywhere.... interesting way to avoid staying in contact with anyone though... so did that successfully keep Cen Shi away?*

### Chapter 20.2: Something to hide (心中有鬼)

A few days later, He He as usual, after dinner, is sitting on a pile of cushions on the living room floor. Leaning against the sofa, she had the TV on while placing her laptop on her laps. She is reading novel while also multitasking by chatting with her group of friends online. She occasionally looked up at the TV news while her drinks, snacks and paper towels are all placed within her reach.

He He was surprised with Zheng Xie's call. He said: "Come over and help me to look for something." It turns out that he was in the area so decided to drop into his apartment to pick up some items.

He He put aside her stuff and went over to help him. Zheng Xie rarely come to this apartment, so He He often go over to help him clean up and organize his stuff since they uses the place from time to time as warehouse. This time, Zheng Xie is looking for his new set of golf clubs.

He He things have always been very chaotic. But she would remember clearly where Zheng Xie's things are kept. Stepping on the stool, she is ready to take the set from the cabinet top, but Zheng Xie said: "You step away. I will do it."

He is tall. Standing on tiptoe, he put his hands up to take. But he was wearing a suit, so not suitable for this. Suddenly a snap was heard and his shirt cuff buttons fell off and rolled under the table. He He lying on the floor looking for it for a long time but failed to locate it.

Zheng Xie asked: "Such a heavy thing, you put it up yourself?"

Kneeling on the ground still looking for the button, He He holding her breath and said: "If not who would do it?"

"So many places, why you want to put it so high up? Some more to step on stool, it is very dangerous."

He He said: "Stepping on stool, what danger is there? Ai, I found it."

Getting up from the ground, she show off her findings to Zheng Xie, not forgetting to sarcastically said: "It turns out that the legendary custom shirt buttons will also drop."

Zheng Xie said: "Do not talk so much. Help me find another shirt." He fiddled with He He's hair as her hair is messed up after laying on the ground.

He He said: "Those clothes had not been worn for a long time. I will go and iron it for you."

Zheng Xie said: "Forget it. You help me to sew this back as I need to go to a party in half an hour."

Zheng Xie followed He He across to her home. He He said: "Haiz. Should have brought a change of clothes for you to wear. Otherwise, you want to wear mine?"

Zheng Xie held out his arm and said: "Just sew it."

He He frowned: "I am afraid that I might accidentally harm you."

Zheng Xie said: "I am not afraid. What are you afraid of?"

He He is very good at the sewing. In less than one minute, the button is firmly sewed on.

Before she sew on the button, she got Zheng Xie to bite on a toothpick. She shared that this is something that the elderly thought her before. What specifically reason there is, she is not sure. She only believe that wise words from the elderly, listening to it is not wrong.

Zheng Xie felt that they must have been an interesting sight now, could not help but laugh while biting on the toothpick. He said: "This scene must have been allusion right?"

He He froze for a moment and said with a straight face: "Hateful"

Zheng Xie said: "I mean this is like Chow Yun Fat cool look. What is there to be hateful about? Where did your mind go?"

He He turned scarlet and she could feel the heat on her face. She just casually

said 'hateful' based on intuition when Zheng Xie said about the ambiguous scene thinking about Qing Wen. The result is different from her expectation. Although Zheng Xie occasionally tease her, it was never frivolous.

It is a very smooth and easy task for He He. After checking that it is strong and beautifully sewn, she looked around looking for a scissors. Not being able to find any, she intended to use her teeth to cut the thread.

Zheng Xie propped up her chin with his fingers. "Do not use your teeth to cut the thread. This will spoilt your teeth." He then stood up with her to look for a pair of scissors. He He carefully hold the needle.

Zheng Xie suddenly stepped on something soft and still moving. He immediately realized what it was. Surprised, he dodged it a little too hard, resulting in the needle impartiality into his hand drawing a deep bloodstain. Even blood started to ooze out.

The initiator of almost a murder, the little cat named Xiao Bao did not realized the trouble that she had created. Innocently squatting on the side with her eyes rolling. Because Zheng Xie had not come for a long time, she wanted to use the opportunity to improve their relationship. So it flatteringly pushed herself between his feet. Who knows, Zheng Xie is still as unfriendly as always.

He He hastily went to look for disinfect and bandage. Zheng Xie took the paper towel and pressed on the wound. "It is nothing. Only bleeding for a while."

He He looked at the perpetrators and looking at its pure innocence look, she lift Xiao Bao on her neck and thrown her into the bedroom. Xiao Bao "Meow" sorrowfully and cried.

He He stood for a moment and see that it is all ok already. And Zheng Xie is intending to put on his coat and leave. She suddenly thought of something and said: "Two days ago, I bought a car. The car shop, Owner Lee is your friend. Because of giving you face, he took great care of me."

## Chapter 20.3: Something to hide (心中有鬼)

*While translating this chapter, I am a little frustrated. I personally felt that He He is aware the importance of Zheng Xie in her heart. She is trying her best to convince herself and everyone around her that she only thinks him as a brother.*

*In this chapter, I also felt that Zheng Xie truly cares for He He and treats her better than any brother would have treated his sister. It is obvious to everyone around them but themselves. This leads to my personal opinion where I think both of them are aware but are in denial... I wonder how many chapters more before they finally realized it and get together... We have finally reach the 2/3 mark to complete the main novel. There is another 10 chapters + 4 epilogues to go..... Some of the chapters are super long so, sit back and lets enjoy the read together.....*

### Chapter 20.3: Something to hide (心中有鬼)

Zheng Xie said: "Okay, I know. Didn't you said before that you don't want to drive a car? Why suddenly thought of buying a car?"

He He explained: "Always trouble colleague by borrowing their car, a little embarrassed."

Zheng Xie calmly said: "The car in the garage downstairs has been idle for so long. Why do you want to go and spend so much money?"

He He shook her head and said: "That car is too expensive and is very loud. I am not a good driver, always worried about hitting into someone else or someone else hitting into it."

Zheng Xie said: "Your garage is now not available right? Move the car out and you use it."

He He said: "No need. The security in the residential area is good. My car is an ordinary car, parking outside is good. And I am weak in reversing car, so very troublesome to park into the garage."

Zheng Xie decided not to say anymore and gave his greetings while ready to go. However, he is not able to look for his shoes. He He helped him to search for

it and only managed to find it in the corner of the flower pot. This kind of mischievous play, apart from the cat, Xiao Bao, there is no one else that they could think of.

Zheng Xie said: “The cat, is so like you when you were younger. I said a few words to upset you, you went to hide my things. And this causes me to not being able to find them for several days. How come you do not teach her any good points instead?”

He was going to take away those things that he came for. He He is worried about his hand and followed him, grabbing those items from him and sending him down the stairs.

When she is heading back upstairs, she touched the garage remote control in her pocket, then went to open it, wanting to take a few things to bring upstairs. The new car that she bought is the same color as the handsome hatchback car that is sitting quietly inside the garage.

Last year, after getting her driving license, Zheng Xie brought the car back. He said he is doing his friend a favor so got the car. Because He He’s garage is idle, so he put the car there.

Zheng Xie hardly use the car. Occasionally, when he comes back to stay over, he will take He He and the car out for a drive. On the pretext that it is a long way, asked He He to drive. He said that car left idle for a long time will turn moldy, so want He He to take it out often for a drive.

He He knew that Zheng Xie bought the car to give to her. But she has always been reluctant to accept expensive gifts from him, so Zheng Xie pretended that it is not. So she chooses to pretend not to know as well.

Today, Zheng Xie chooses not to say anything but He He knew that he must be very angry.

She stayed in the garage for a while. Cen Shi whom had disappeared for a few days called her. Cen Shi said that he will be heading to B city the next day and would be staying there for a few months. So He He please come out and have tea with him. Considered as sending him off.

He He felt that recently, she had treated Cen Shi very badly. Since he would be

leaving, she has no reason to refuse. And frankly, that year, apart from the bad joke by Cen Shi, he had been very good to her. He had brought a lot of sunshine into her life. Even after the affair was uncovered, he had apologies sincerely enough. But it is just her not willing to accept him again.

He He has just gone upstairs to change her clothes when Cen Shi already arrived and is waiting for her downstairs. She sat in his car and the car pulled out slowly from the residential area. The two-way street in the residential area entrance is very narrow. When there are two cars parallel to each other, it is very close.

Just as it is, when they were heading out, Zheng Xie happen to be returning back. Both car have stopped next to each other. Cen Shi politely said: "Hello, Mr Zheng."

Zheng Xie nodded slightly and said to He He: "I have forgotten something upstairs." His voice was light and then he sped away.

Xiao He He has always been forgetful. Things will also fall. Can only say that God is against her.

He He is silent all the way. Cen Shi turned around and glanced at her several time with a teasing laugh.

He He got a little annoyed and said angrily to Cen Shi: "It is not what you think."

Cen Shi said smilingly: "I am not thinking nonsense. This Mr Zheng is a gentleman. When playing, he will play. But once he is serious, there is absolutely no turning left or right and other mundane. Though I do not like him, but I totally respected his character. You really do not need to explain to me."

He He just kept quiet.

Cen Shi could not endure anymore: "I just think that your look earlier is very cute. Just like a child caught by the adult doing something naughty. Do you want to give him a call right now and tell him the truth is not what he imagined it to be?"

He He restored her calmness and wondered to herself. She obviously intended to treat Cen Shi with a better and friendly attitude before he leave. Why did she

lose her temper? Poor Cen Shi, he is always her venue to vent her anger.

She calmly asked: "Is there any need to explain?"

Cen Shi said: "There is absolutely not necessary. What is there to explain?"

He bowed her head and fiddled with her fingers. She felt there is no such coincidence that comes in pairs. Zheng Xie must have been very furious with her tonight. And she is very upset just thinking about it.

But until she departed ways with Cen Shi and got home, it was late at night. Even till heading to bed, Zheng Xie did not call to ask her. And she has not courage to call him.

||

## Chapter 21.1: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

*The last chapter ended with Zheng Xie who saw He He going out with Cen Shi in his car.... did that lead to any misunderstanding between them?*

### Chapter 21.1: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

Thunder is often unpredictable. And weather forecast is unreliable.

One day when Yang Wei Qi and Zheng Xie were together, she spoke to him about a case that she had recently completed. The parents who opposed to their adult daughter love and locked her in their home. The daughter smashed the glass and climb out of the home and ended up getting hurt. Finally, the daughter quarreled with the parents leaving them desperate.

Zheng Xie have a slight sigh. "Since the daughter will sooner or later belong to someone else. Why takes thing so hard? And earning themselves the reputation of being wicked."

"What is that feeling of yours?" Yang Wei Qi chuckled. "He He and the other person has finally got back together?"

Zheng Xie said: "Don't even mentioned about this matter. If this is what she wants, then let it be."

Yang We Qi was afraid to touch any sensitive nerve of Zheng Xie and make him unhappy. So she kept silence and only laughed.

After a long while, Zheng Xie leisurely spoke up: "I think, I will never want to have a daughter next time. Boys can fend for themselves, but if it is daughter, I cannot help but will control her a little. I will be afraid of her learning bad habits, fears of her getting injured and I would be worried all the time. And then she will be bothered by me, quarrel with me, then run away from home. Then I will cut off father-daughter relationship and finally forced me into my grave." He envisioned his sad future.

Yang Wei Qi bit her lips to hold back her laughter. She laughed for a long time after and said: "I am sorry, I am sorry. I should be comforting you but why do I just want to laugh."



Zheng Xie clapped his lips flat together but with a grave expression. “Because you are not kind.”

Yang Wei Qi laughed.

As they were chatting, a person walked passed them and suddenly turned to look at them for a moment. Then the person beat Zheng Xie on the shoulder: “Zheng Xie?”

They also looked up. It is a young man. But he is fat and in his arms is a very pretty little girl.

Zheng Xie wonder: “When did you come back?”

The man answered: “Just got back. Still have no time to contact you. This time will be back for a while, so also brought back my wife and daughter.” He pointed to a woman whom is walking in front. And the turned to the little girl in his arm and said: “Call Uncle and Auntie.”

The little girl called them in a small voice.

Zheng Xie said to Yang Wei Qi: “This is my playmates from childhood. We were classmates for years.” He is surprised to see the little three or four year old girl. “Your children is so big. I remember that we are of same age.”

The man said: “Don’t be jealous. Who ask you not to get married early?”

After the man left, Zheng Xie explained to Yang Wei Qi: “He went to live abroad for several years. We have not been in contact for a long time.”

Yang Wei Qi said: “He looks so much older than you. Really both of you are of same age? You did not introduce his name earlier.”

Zheng Xie mentioned a name. Yang Wei Qi lost in her thought suddenly said: “I have heard of that name before. The protagonist of that thing years ago.....”

Zheng Xie said: “You also know of that thing. It turns out to be famous. I thought only people within a small range know about it. And we should have forgotten about it by now.”

Yang Wei Qi said: “Actually I really don’t understand it. But then listening to them talking about it. And just recently we discussed a case and my boss uses it as an example, after a long sigh... that the law cannot protect the weak.”

Zheng Xie downcast his eyes. Yang Wei Qi decided to not continue the conversation.

On the way back, Yang Wei Qi think about it and gently sigh: “That man look very honest. Does not look like those people who will forces people to die.”

Zheng Xie looked straight ahead and said: “You are very nosy.”

Yang Wei Qi argued: “I am discussing about human nature. You think about it. A bunch of young people getting drunk and getting into drug abuse..... and it got into a chaos.... Chaos that landed people in prison, some had fallen, some masquerade while some people can calmly began a new life.... This society is just so not fair.”

A little distracted, after a long while, he replied: “In fact, in the beginning, I was also there. It was just an ordinary party. They drank a lot of wine. I drank until I was uncomfortable, so I left first. Two days later, I went abroad. After that I heard about this. I did not expect that it would have blown into so big. I have a few friends who did not know what happen but was pulled into the case. If I did not left early that day, maybe I would have been also involve in this case.”

Yang Wei Qi did not expect that have dug up such a result. She sighed: “This is the nature of your lucky life. You managed to escape the evils.”

| |

## Chapter 21.2: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

*In the last chapter, while Zheng Xie was out with Yang Wei Qi, they met someone from the past. This lead to a conversation between both Zheng Xie and Yang Wei Qi where Zheng Xie opened up about a case that happen in the past where he almost got involve as well.*

*This chapter is an interesting read and I personally when translating it, actually felt frustrated on behalf of Yang Wei Qi for the kind of attitude that Zheng Xie displayed. He is caring about her one minute and the next, when something related to He He pops up, he almost forget about the calm and ever caring Yang Wei Qi that is standing next to him. Why can't he made up his mind once and for all about how he wants to progress with her? Sigh.....*

### Chapter 21.2: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

Zheng Xie had not contacted He He for a few days.

He remembered that on that day, it was inevitable that he was angry. Worried that he could not help and would start educating her if he called her. This would result in her embarrassment, so chooses not to call her. He estimated that He He is also guilty so did not call him.

A few days later, once Zheng Xie felt that he is calmer, he decided not let it go and take the initiative to call and be concern about her.

Moreover, he knows that the honeymoon partner had returned so Cen Shi has now left the city. Although he felt good, there is a little pity for He He.

If He He really want to get back together with Cen Shi, then now the distance between He He and him is always not a good thing on her.

After all, everyone have compassionate and tolerant attitude. On the dark night, he dialed Xiao He He's number. He hope that she does not sound too sad.

The result is contrary to his expectation. He dialed the phone three times, twice it was unanswered. And the one after indicate that the phone had been switched off.

Zheng Xie whom had just calmed down is again, upset.

Not to mention that well-behaved Xiao He He, in fact from young until now, not many people dare not answer his phone, not to mentioned shutting off the phone.

He took deep breath several times. He could not completely calm down his emotion. Finally he called Yang Wei Qi to have a few words with her.

He also had to dial the phone twice before Yang Wei Qi picked up. There is a loud disco music over the phone. She had to changed several places and speak in a loud voice before Zheng Xie could hear clearly.

Yang Wei Qi said her party desperately needed the testimony of a witness whom is working here. So she came here to convince the man.

Zheng Xie said: "You wait for me there. I come and pick you up."

"There is no need as I am leaving shortly."

"I will pick you up." Zheng Xie insisted.

Zheng Xie spent only half a minute at the disco but already felt dizzy from the tinnitus.

As he got there, there is a little drunk man that was approaching Yang Wei Qi. He helped her to get rid of the man and hold out his hand to her.

His other hand went over his ears to overcome the tinnitus. "Next time, do not come to this place alone. It is not safe."

Yang Wei Qi disagree. "It is still okay. Here is quite good."

Zheng Xie said: "Last time go to the countryside, you almost got lost. And then the last was receiving threatening letters. And now coming to this kind of place. Your work is too dangerous. Your boss does not seem to have compassionate towards female subordinates. Didn't you complain about being tired lately with all these? Consider to change your job?"

"This is considered as what kind of danger ah. Drink water also may choked to dead. I have no other interest. If I don't do this, I don't know what else to do."

"The rest for a while and do nothing."

Yang Wei Qi smiled: "Why? Do you really plan to support me?"

“If you wish, there is no problem.”

“I love to eat, love jewelry and designer stuff....”

“Even at your current state and another hundred times more, I can still afford to support you.”

Yang Wei Qi smiled and said half-truthfully: “It is a tempting offer. Let me think about it.”

They did not park their car in the same place. Yang Wei Qi cannot find her car. Zheng Xie laughing at her side and went to look for it together with her.

The wind at night is a little cold. Yang Wei Qi wear very minimal and was shaking from the cold. Zheng Xie half-hugged her.

Zheng Xie suddenly slowed down and his body turned a little stiff.

Yang Wei Qi looked up at him, and saw that his eyes was looking past her. She turned to his direction and saw that his abnormal emotion was looking at an inconspicuous car.

The car license plate is very clearly remembered. That day when He He sent Zheng Xie down the stairs, she pointed to the car at the side and said: “That is the car.”

The car is parked a distance away. But Zheng Xie have very good vision and he is also very sensitive to numbers.

Yang Wei Qi generally know whose car is that, she said softly: “If you really is worried, just go and check it out.”

Zheng Xie exhales but did not make any sound.

Yang Wei Qi said: “There is a Russian cabaret performance on the fifth floor here tonight.”

“Perhaps she is here to watch the show with her colleagues.”

Zheng Xie said: “She is not a child. Let’s go back.”

“I heard that this Russian cabaret troupe is quite distinctive. I have never seen them before. Shall we go and see?” Yang Wei Qi dragged Zheng Xie’s hand and he was reluctantly dragged to the elevator.

Zheng Xie actually have been here a few times and he does not have a good impression of the place.

Today, the place is more absurd than his original impression of the place. The people on the stage are not properly dressed. The audiences looked blurred. There are sexual flirtatious between the male and the females. The air was filled with tobacco and the pungent smell of alcohol.

Yang Wei Qi bowed her head and said: "Forget it. Let's go."

"Even if we leave now, we still have to pay. Since we rarely come, let's just check it out for a while." Zheng Xie said. He took her hand and walk behind a waitress that dressed like a rabbit.

||

## Chapter 21.3: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

*Last chapter was interesting isn't it? Once minute, Zheng Xie is offering to support Yang Wei Qi, giving her the hint of him being serious about their relationship and the indication to move it into another level. While the next minute, seeing He He's car in the parking lot, he loses focus and started to worry about her. It is quite frustrating to read how anything involving He He is affecting him emotionally and he does not realized still how badly it is affecting him and the people around him, especially the lovely Yang Wei Qi.*

*Did they managed to find He He in the rowdy place? Read on and find out what happen next.....*

### Chapter 21.3: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

Their temporary location is very good. They just sat down and Zheng Xie is already able to locate the person that he is looking for.

Flickering lights flickers, Xiao He He is neither too close nor too far from him. This does not prevent him from checking out her behavior.

Xiao He He is softly leaning back on a sofa that is placed against the wall. Her legs casually moving along with the song. She looked embedded into the sofa with a lazy yet charming attitude.

Where she is sitting is an extremely secluded place. But there is a weak light reflecting her face. She performed in the stands looking a little tranced. One hand is on the tall glass while the other hand that is resting on her leg is wrapped around a cigarette.

She occasionally take a deep breathe, and with extreme skill, spit out smoke ring. Then, she looked at the smoke rings slowly dissipated, just as if she is completely appreciating her own work.

In fact, Xiao He He is not willing to come to this kind of place alone and she does not have such courage to not answer Zheng Xie's call nor even outright shutting it off. At that time, it was too noisy around her, so she could not hear the ringing. When Zheng Xie called back again, the phone runs out of battery.

That night after work, she did not go back immediately. Instead she remain in the company to work on a piece of work that is almost done. Another two colleagues are also working overtime.

In the independent glass office, her lady boss is pacing angrily on the phone. She raised her eyebrows in an angry bristle. She made a phone call and then throw the phone against the wall.

They carefully pretend to continue to work outside of her office.

After just three minutes, the lady boss's angry has subsided. Snugly standing at the door while laughing, she asked: "Today this old lady is treating. Who wants to accompany me?"

The two men, one person need to go home to look after children while the other person need to cook for his girlfriend. Both made a haste escape.

Xiao He He thought for a moment and before she could come up with the right reason, the boss 'kidnapped' her.

Originally, Chao Boss wants to drive. But as she is struggling to reverse, she reversed the car into the wall and caused a large damage to the rear of the car. The boss said: "妈的, today really is a bad day.... We will take the cab and go."

*妈的 (pin ying: Mā de) – this is a Chinese curse word that is very commonly heard. It actually sounded like 'mother' which indirectly cursing the other party's mother. NOTE: Do try to avoid using this curse word*

He He said: "I will drive."

Then they went to the famous nightclub that is said to have the charm of Russian men and women dancing.

He He's boss is in a bad mood. The worst her mood is, the louder she laughed. The more she drinks, one cup in her left hand and the other in her right hand. In a blink of an eye, she had finished a bottle. And then she open another bottle and drag He He to accompany her by playing. The person who lose will have to drink.

She started rambling on about her past. From kindergarten to talking about her bastard sex counterparts from an hour ago. He He did not interrupt but



quietly listen as an audience. As she listen, she became tired and started taking the wine and drink it just like it is a soft drink.

Her boss tip the scales and said: “He He, you are a good drinker. I have never seen it before.”

He He looked at the glass in her hand and said: “Er, this is wine? I thought it was soft drink.”

Boss Cao is a tall with short hair and a mellow voice. She had pride so no one took her as woman. She light up a cigarette and the smell of thick smoke makes He He coughed.

The boss said: “This cigarette smoke is quite chocking. Never mind, I shall not smoke then.”

He He then said: “Sister Miao Miao, this particular cigarette has a particular smell. Give me one.”

The lady boss has drunk a little too much. She went over to He He’s side and helped her to light up a cigarette while saying: “If your brother know that I brought his sister, He He to a place like this, would he end up crushing our company? Every time he saw me, his eyes shows his suspicion that I look like I am a ‘lesbian’. Would he be worried that I attempted to seduce you?”

He He is amused. “No. There is no such thing.”

“I wished now that kid Zheng Xie will appear and see how his well-behaved just like a small rabbit sister now in this virtue. I would then stand at the side to observe his stroke expression.”

“He will not come here. He hates this kind of place and programs. And even if he is here, he would not have much expression. So you will certainly not able to see it.”

## Chapter 21.4: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

*Some interesting read from the last chapter on how He He ended up in that place. And some interesting read in this chapter as we discover more about the relationship between many different parties. Enjoy the read!*

### Chapter 21.4: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

Boss Chao said: “X. In fact, he is very polite with you. When you scold him personally, he does not refute. You kick his car, he take it as he did not see it. Why do you constantly want to argue with him?”

Boss Chao scolded: “That is called completely belittling a good man with extreme speaking. The only proud moment of my life in front of Zheng Xie is when you said to him back then that you must come to work in my company or else you don’t want to stay in the city. Hahaha.... That time, he looks like he an ice-cream that just came out of the freezer. The cold air.... ”

He He said: “That time he is really quite angry and ignored me for days. He actually is not against me working for you. It is your fault for first challenging him every time.”

Boss Chao said: “I have told you before that I have a crush on Zheng Xie from primary to secondary school. In the ten years, I have wrote to him hundreds of love letters before finally have the courage to give it to him.”

He He said: “Er, no you never mentioned it before. I only you mentioning that in school, every time you see him, you would stare at him contemptuously. I thought you did not like him while you were growing up.”

Boss Chao said: “Well, girls feeling, attentive and playing hard to get, you have never played this trick?

He He shook her head.

Boss Chao said: “You are a really good child. Let me tell you. Later Zheng Xie lined up neatly all my letters in accordance to chronological order. Each seal were opened, probably to review again. Then he wrote letters back to me with only one sentence! “Student Cao Miao Miao, the more you practice the worst

your calligraphy becomes....” Later, I started dating others. Talk about failure in love. This is all his fault for leaving me with a psychological shadow!

He He is amused. “So he has such sense of humor. Yeah! I have never seen it before.”

Boss Chao said: “Oh, it seems that you have not seen all side of Zheng Xie.”

He He “Ah!” for a moment with no more words.

Boss Cao glanced at the burlesque stage: “Boring.... It should have been more exciting. According to the rumors in the grapevine, Zheng Xie this time might be getting married to the Ms Yang Wei Qi. Is that true?”

He He said: “It should be very reliable. He is really serious this time.”

Boss Cao shook her head: “I cannot imagine Zheng Xie falling in love. He does not look like the type that would love.”

He He said with a slight smile: “In marriage, sincerity and truth is more important than love. Being serious about each other is just fine.”

Boss Cao first nodded then shook her head. “In sort. I am jealous. Jealous!” She see that He He did not speak and then asked: “How come you do not have any slightest reaction?”

He He asked: “What reaction?”

Boss Chao said: “My brother is now belonging to someone else. You do not have even any sense of loss ah? Even I felt lost.”

He He said with a smile: “I have nothing to be lost. He would always be in contact. Ah, Sister Miao Miao, your love relationship on average is six times a year and you flirt with more than a dozen of men. But the result is that your crush ten years ago is getting married, you are jealous.”

Boss Chao said: “People all have feelings after all. He He, you really have a large heart. Ai. So noisy. I go and pick up a call. You sit here obediently and do not run.”

Xiao He He watched her boss and friend step away. Adjusted her sitting posture into a more comfortable position, took out the cigarette and lit it.

This is really good cigarette. The force index is also great. He He gradually relaxed with an empty facial expression.

She is always lively and sweet. Hard working and easy-going as well, very well-liked by the young and old alike. In her office, the men and the women liked her. But when there is not one, she usually have no expression.

There are lot of smokers here. She do not want to be a secondhand smoker, so the best way is to light up her own firsthand smoke.

The wine that she had drunk is gradually is taking effect. The music is very loud here. Her head is beginning to pound.

He He saw her boss heading back towards her. She adjusted her posture and put on a casual well-behaved expression. She wanted to suggest for them to leave together.

But Boss Chao is not looking at her but looking ahead of her while murmuring: "Damn. This is really a bad day today."

He He turned to the direction that she was looking.

She saw Zheng Xie standing straight about two meters away from her looking very cool.

He He calmly adjust her posture and gently put down her legs. She put down her wine glass and put out the cigarette butts. She bow her head and keep silence.

She saw Yang Wei Qi standing behind Zheng Xie looking calm although somewhat disturbed. She gently pulled his sleeve, seem to be afraid that Zheng Xie will rush over to strangle her.

So she did not have to worry about Zheng Xie embarrassing her here. As long as she remain quiet and well-behaved, then it would be fine.

He He only reflected and bow her head for a few seconds when she heard Zheng Xie said next to her ears in a cold but clear voice: "If you do not want to watch the show, then let's go home."

He He obediently and immediately stood up but did not take the hand that Zheng Xie had outstretched to her.

When she stood up, she knows then the wine slowly but very potential effect. With the sudden inclination of her body, she could almost cannot stand. She avoided Zheng Xie by falling into the direction of Yang Wei Qi. Yang Wei Qi quickly hold on to her and she leaned against the homeopathic Yang Wei Qi's body.

Zheng Xie said dismissively: "General Manager Cao, let's go together."

Cao Miao Miao has deep knowledge transacting as a hero. Rather than being a shrew, she pretended to be drunk and throw herself to Zheng Xie. In her drunken stage, Zheng Xie helped her out as well as help her pay the bill.

| |

## Chapter 21.5: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

*Last chapter ended with a cliffhanger right? So I decided to post a bonus chapter today to everyone's reading pleasure.*

*Oh no...., Zheng Xie found He He drunk and smoking the cigarette that he hated her doing in the Russian Cabaret show. He is definitely not happy at all. And He He was hanging out with her lady boss whom had a crush on Zheng Xie in the past. What will happen to He He now..... what would Zheng Xie do to her? Read on and enjoy!*

### Chapter 21.5: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

The wind outside is a little colder than previous. He He winced and very supplely said: “Wei Qi 姐姐, please send me home.”

Yang Wei Qi do not know how to respond. Zheng Xie coldly said: “She is weeks younger than you. Do not call her 姐姐.”

姐姐 (pin ying: jiě jie) – older sister. Can be used to describe older sister and also can be used to address an older but same generation female.

He He seriously said: “This is an honorific title. It has nothing to do with age. Later I need to call her 嫂子 so I cannot call her 妹妹 now, right?”

嫂子 (pin ying: sāo zi) – a greeting for an older brother wife aka sister-in-law

妹妹 (pin ying: mèi mei) – a greeting for younger sister

Cao Miao Miao puff a laugh.

Zheng Xie ignored her and lowered his tone when saying to Yang Wei Qi: “Could you please send General Manager Cao home. Drive carefully.”

Yang Wei Qi nodded and said: “Call me later.”

Zheng Xie stepped forward to carry out Xiao He He whom have been resting on Yang Wei Qi's side. He grabbed her by the arm and dragged her forward just like a little cat.

He He followed him quietly all the way to his car. There is no resistance and no sound. After getting into the car, she quietly bow her head, acting as if she is

asleep.

Zheng Xie did not speak at all. After putting on the seat belt for her, he treated her like she is the air.

The nightclub is far away from where He He live. After going through several intensive road, while Zheng Xie had gone round in circle, the car finally got onto the highway into the city. While it is quite a distance, but there is no traffic.

At this time, the highway traffic is minimal. With the corner of her eyes, He He could only glimpse the roadside railings and trees that are magically translucent as a shadow. A few meters distance reflector lamp is connected into a band of light, but he is still steadily driving. Did not feel like he is racing. He He rise to observed the speed on the dashboard without any courage.

The car took a sharp turn and suddenly decelerated. Originally there is a block on the road ahead and because of the speed that Zheng Xie was going, it was very close.

This ordeal caused to He He's stomach to churn and she quickly covered her mouth.

Zheng Xie finally turned and look at her face, slowed down and stopped at the side of the road after driving a few more meters.

He He got out of the car and vomited. She did not eat anything that night, just a little snacks. She had lots of drinks as well as wine so all she vomited were liquid. There are some on her face as well, probably from her tears, so she wiped it.

A hand passed her a piece of tissue. She took it and wiped her face and hands.

Zheng Xie twist the lid and handed a bottle of mineral water to He He. She rinse her mouth and then took big mouthful of drink later. She wiped her mouth with the back of her hand and then turned to get back into the car. This time, she remembered to buckle her own seat belt.

Zheng Xie continued driving the car but remained silence. And he drove slowly.

After passing the first intersection, he drove down the highway in a very slow speed and slid down the window. He open the glove compartment and toast a

packet over to Xiao He He.

She took it and saw that it is a box of chocolate that she love.

Zheng Xie never eat snacks especially sweets stuff, so the chocolate could be Yang Wei Qi.

After vomiting, her empty stomach felt very uncomfortable. So she ate the whole box of chocolates. After the supplementary energy, her courage and strength gradually returned. However her dizziness is very bad still, as it there are many small people dancing waltz in her head.

The air in the car is a little stuffy. Zheng Xie took out a box of cigarettes and put one into his mouth. He lighted it up with a lighter.

For many years, he had not smoke in front of He He. The last time she saw him smoking is when they were in high school. She looked down.

Zheng Xie put one hand on this steering wheel and the other one hand holding the cigarette in between fingers while staring ahead concentrating on the road. "Do you want one?"

He He bit her lips lightly and said: "No thank you. I only smoke a maximum of 2 stick of cigarette a day."

Zheng Xie gave a hollow laugh. "You don't smoke a lot but can still train your cat to be so smart. Able to bring the ashtray. Very powerful indeed. What did you do that I have never found out that you have been smoking?"

He He said: "Smoke less, smoke in the middle of the night and then brush your teeth."



## Chapter 21.6: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

*In the last chapter, He He tried to get Yang Wei Qi to send her back as she knows that Zheng Xie is really mad at her. Unfortunately, that attempt failed when Zheng Xie asked Wei Qi to send Miao Miao back instead while he drove her back. Or did they head somewhere else apart from heading home? Let's find out today....*

### Chapter 21.6: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

She looked around and found them on an unfamiliar road. But the street are lined with neon lights and bar gathering places.

Zheng Xie looked at her. "Tonight is not fun. So I want to continue to the next venue, okay?"

He He said: "I am tired and I want to go home."

Zheng Xie kept quiet. But He He continues to linger and gaze at those signs. He spoke up: "Recently you are in a bad mood is it? So you go to such place to vent your frustration?"

He He answered: "I am just curious about the décor inside."

Speaking in a non-interested mood: "If you really want to know, I can find someone to accompany you to visit these places. There is no need to visit them during the night."

He He replied: "These are all legitimate business and they also pay taxes. Why do you make it sound like these people in terms of class and social status are lower than you?"

Zheng Xie coldly said: "I am discussing with you on the issues related to your behavior. Don't try to change divert from the point of discussion. Already a 25 year-old adult. Do you not think that by starting to rebel now, you are already way over the age limit?"

He He said: "You also know that I am already 25. A 25 year-old adults do not need anyone to tell me what to do and what not to do. You are afraid of me making mistakes and caused you trouble? Do you not think that, if there is no

wrong in life, it would be boring? Looking at yourself as an example. When you were growing up, you hated people around you commanding you but you yourself are doing this now. Why do you have the confidence that everything you choose for me is all the best for me?"

They rarely have such dialogue. He He has always been very docile. When Zheng Xie says a few words, she will just smile and occasionally and shamelessly retort.

Zheng Xie said: "So now you think hard wanting to make mistakes for the experience fun in life. Because I believe that Shi Lin is right for you, you are very bent to reject him. While you know that Cen Shi is not suitable for you and yet you insist on wanting to be with him?"

Hearing the names of the two men, He He closed her mouth.

Zheng Xie said: "My friend, you will never consider. This is what you mean when you said this to Shi Lin? Is this your form of protest? Do you think that this is good?"

He He paled and whispered: "It is not what you think....."

Zheng Xie looked at her side face with a complicated look: "He He, in your mind, do you always hate me? Although you never show it. Your father, Cen Shi and the discipline that I had imposed on you. Is this what you always....."

"No." He He abruptly interrupted him.

Zheng Xie looked a little blurred. He said: "He He, if you want to bear any grudges to pursue justice for yourself, there are variety of ways. You do not need to choose this stupid way."

He He loudly said: "I do not bear any grudges. No means no! Father is killed in line of his work. Not anyone's fault and definitely not yours! Cen Shi is willing to be tempted by you just proves that I am not that important in his mind! You just exposed the facts to show it to me. There you go again! You always want to impose your views in my head! You think that women should not smoke, so when I smoke means I have learned the wrong thing. You think that women should not go to nightclubs so when I went to nightclubs, it is wrong! What do you think I am? The immaculate little swan that is raised in a clean glass room? If

I said that I am not as pure as you think I am, would you believe it? Many years ago, I am not longer pure, are you going to lock me up and not letting me meet any men?" She was getting a little excited and her little body is trembling. Those alcohol in her blood is taking their effect. She felt dizzy as if another person is talking.

Zheng Xie tightened his hand gripping on the steering wheel. He took a few deep breath and said quietly: "He He, this time you are really drunk."

He He said: "Are you disappointed? Do you not think that re-educating me now is already too late?"

Zheng Xie is a little tired. He said: "I admit that I am nosy. If I knew then that you and Cen Shi was already so close, I would not bothered to stop you. Since he still has interest in you and you are not excluding him, then you go ahead and do what you want."

He He sneered: "Why must I? Apart from Cen Shi, do you think that my market is so bad?"

Zheng Xie closed his eyes and hold his breath: "He He, after drinking too much wine, you should talk less. Or else you will regret it when you sobered up."

| |

## Chapter 21.7: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

*And the conversation between Zheng Xie and He He continued. What exactly is in He He's heart when she said these in her drunken stage?*

*Don't shot me for ending this with a cliffhanging as it is how the author ended this chapter. Sorry this is not the chapter that everyone is looking forward to from some of the spoiler shared yesterday. Though I did promised that it would get really exciting now.*

*Interesting chapter as now I really want to know what exactly happen on the night that they were talking about? And why is Zheng Xie being so harsh now with He He? Did he realized how important she is already in his heart now? After reading this chapter, I personally felt that He He in fact is already somewhat aware of her feeling towards Zheng Xie but just not willing to acknowledge that to anyone instead constantly uses the statement about how happy she is about Yang Wei Qi's present in Zheng Xie's life. What do you think?*

### Chapter 21.7: A Sudden Big Change (平地一声雷)

He He said: "I am sorry to ruin my beautiful image in your heart. I have always been like this. You just don't know it. Please do not use such eyes looking at me as if I am a monsters. Tomorrow I will continue to be the good and obedient He He."

Their car drove past a theater with a huge billboards showing 'Painted Skin'. Too eye-catching. Both of them simultaneously turned and looked.

*Painted Skin is a supernatural-fantasy film that is also an action-romance movie that was released in 2008. For more information on the movie, it is available here : [Painted Skin](#)*

香港金像精英打造【聊齋】最凄美一章



導演

徐立功

監製

董瑋

編劇

黃岳泰

美術總監

雷楚維

監製

陳嘉上

主演

甄子丹

周迅

趙薇

陳坤

# 畫皮

Painted Skin

繼萬里長城受讚賞 大陸票房破2億  
香港票房超過千萬 超越【投名狀】【色戒】【功夫】  
【代表香港角逐《金馬獎》最佳外語片】



Zheng Xie rubbed his temple and shook his head. He said: “He He, you are also acting this play.”

He He squeezed a smirk: “Who is not? Everyone is wearing a mask. Brother Xie Xie, are you not the same? Finished profiteering, then transformed into a philanthropist. Heartless when getting rid of previous girlfriend but when it is a lover, a kind person in the public. Also in your youth, alcoholism and drugs are also part of it.....” She murmured as if she is chanting a general sentence. Then she sleepily hung her head and closed her eyes.

Zheng Xie slammed on the brakes.

He made effort to cool down his livid nerve that also gradually gathered into his heart.

He grabbed He He’s arm and said: “You repeat your words!”

The groggy and awakened with his sudden attacks: “Repeat what?”

Zheng Xie hissed out the word: “Alcoholism, drug abuse and gender confusion.”

He He woke up abruptly and stared. Instantly her mind restored to normal. She softly said: “I am talking nonsense. You do not mind it. Don’t mind them.” Then she lowered her eyes and her long eyelashes flickered.

Zheng Xie still tightly clutching her arm, grasping more tightly. He He winced in pain, forced to try to un-grip it but cannot break open.

Zheng Xie said carefully while still very angry: “He He, I remember that a long time ago, you also did not come home one night.”

He He with her head down continued: “I do not remember anymore. I often stayed overnight in my classmates home.”

Zheng Xie said: “I remember. It happen just two days before I went abroad. I remembered that that was the first time you did not come home. You said you spent the night in Su Ren Ran’s house.”

He He said with a panic: “Oh, I remember that time. I was playing computer game with Su Ren Ran that night.”

Zeng Xie said quietly: “But the summer that year, Su Ren Ran’s brother

brought her to Japan, which is why he never see me off at the airport.”

He He bit her lips and said: “Ah, I remember now. That day I was with Ding Ding.”

He said: “The name of the classmate name that time is definitely not Ding Ding.”

He He got irritated: “So long ago. With my dizzy head now, how to remember. You don’t keep asking me strange question.”

Zheng Xie back down slightly his shoulder, his body seems to lose his strength. After a long while, he said slowly and firmly: “He He, it was really you that night. I always thought it was just my illusion. And after so many years, you should pretend as if nothing had happened. Today, if it is not because of your slip of tongue, I would never have guessed.”

He He is a little confused: “I do not understand what you are saying. I am dizzy. I want to go home.”

Zheng Xie caught her hand, grip it tighter making her pain. As she struggled, her other hand pulled the safety belt. But it was in vain as she could not un-grip Zheng Xie’s hand.

She suddenly began to cry like a child with big tears rolling down her face. She tearfully repeated: “I want to go home! I want to go home!”

Zheng Xie slumped and loosen his hands. He He broke away but could not unbuckle the seat belt. She then pulled the tape and managed to unbuckle.

She opened the door and ran out before Zheng Xie could react. She got onto a taxi that was parked at the side of the road and pulled away a moment later.

## Chapter 22.1: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

*In chapter 22, we will go back to the past and read more about some events in the past leading to some interesting reads (and yes, the spoiler that we had shared 2 days ago will finally appear within the next several days). This is a long chapter so it had been broken into several parts.*

*In the meantime, enjoy the read as we move back in time with them.*

### Chapter 22.1: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

If we could turn back the clock, I hope can start again.

Once, Yang Wei Qi asked Zheng Xie: "If the time could turn the clock back, at which point of his life that he wishes to return to."

Zheng Xie remember that his answer is .... No!

It is not because he had a smooth life, but he always felt that in life whatever it is mean to be, just let it be. Wanting to reverse against destiny would be against the heaven. So whichever point it is, he did not wish to go back, even though he might have regrets.

But now Zheng Xie hope that he could return to the day many years ago. To start from the morning, and start all over again.

That is the period of time where Zheng Xie is not very happy.

His father asked him to work for a year or two before graduating from the University. After examination, only then he goes abroad.

Zheng Xie completed two years of working in a large well-known company with high strength and high pressure. More tiring than the four years of study that he spent in the university. He completed all the formalities as well as broke up with the current girlfriend. He was planning to go home to live with his mother for a few days before departing to go abroad.

As a result, he thought that his girlfriend would begin to understand. He thought that all rational women are the same but unfortunately the girl that he



had relationship with is different and attempted suicide. This alarmed his mother.

And then his father encountered some physical condition and his mother went to the father's side to take care of him. Later the mother also fell ill.

He rarely did what he did not like so stayed in the city as a dutiful son for a few days before deciding to return to his childhood growing up city to spend some time to say goodbye to his friends.

He He also stayed there. That summer, she had her scheduled arranged to the maximum. From volunteering and attending classes. So she only returned to B city to accompany her mother for a week. Zheng Xie's mother also went to B city to take care of Zheng Xie's dad. So only He He and the nanny at home.

Zheng Xie only returned home for two days and found that He He is not in the right stage of mind that summer.

She smiled more than usual and is acting funny. Her words are more than normal but often lies. In fact, He He is usually very lazy and likes to star dazedly into space. But over the two days, she constantly make herself very busy but don't know what is she so busy about. Often she took over the task for the nanny.

Zheng Xie could not take out any explanation from He He's mouth but managed to take out some very close friends name in school.

Zheng Xie did not take much effort to understand the sequence of the events but roughly know about it. Nothing much other than He He has fallen in love, and they broke off. He He was badly was hurt by the good boy but pretended as if nothing had happened.

Zheng Xie felt very funny. This kind of practical joke is often played by his friends but ended up emerged badly into the relationship. Everyone often has a laugh about it

Only when the subject of the object is replaced with He He, his compassionate feeling is greatly improved. He is very satisfied at how He He is self-healing although it looks pretty bad.

But the legendary 'boy' appear in front of him.

The nanny went to Zheng Xie whom was reading in the reading room and said: "There is a young man. Said that he is He He's classmate. He is on the way to come and see her. But she did not bring her phone and is not contactable..." Nanny left He He's cell phone with Zheng Xie.

Zheng Xie looked through the missed call records. In addition to a cell phone numbers, the other numbers are fixed line and is a public number. He immediately guess who and is suddenly interested.

So the boy was honored to be able to meet Zheng Xie.

The boy is a very bright and cool guy. He is only two or three years younger than Zheng Xie. But the junior had graduated for a year and is already working.

Zheng Xie agreed to meet the boy in the teahouse within the vicinity. With some intimidation, he will be neat and quick to get rid of.

The boy is not easy to deal with. So it really means that Zheng Xie had big pressure and bullying was suspected. Later he also occasionally reflected that during the time, he was definitely not being decent.

From the moment he saw the boy, he did not like him. Hearing his speak for the first time, even more the reason why he dislike the boy. His intuition tells him that the boy is not suitable for Xiao He He. Since she is struggling and it has been hard on her, then the appearance of his boy will bring more grievance to her, so it is his duty to make her feel better.

At noon, there will be a few university friends visiting, so he invited them to a meal. So happen He He just return home as he was heading out so he brought her along.

In front of people He He has always been cute and is very likeable. However, when approaching the end of the meal, He He suddenly excused herself to step out to to make a phone call. She never came back after a long time and then a message came back saying that she has something to do and left.

Ultimately, Zheng Xie finds the gathering boring so decided to end it early. He then went to drive around looking for He He.

Just as expected, He He saw the call from Cen Shi and decided to meet him. And to his judgement, he found He He waiting to meet Cen Shi in the place

where they agreed to meet.

Zheng Xie has in fact taken He He's romance as normal just like how if she had failed or lose the cheerleading squad team. But since he has met Cen Shi, he had identified that by no means Cen Shi is suitable for He He to be associated with. So he was determine to stop it in the end. Zheng Xie successfully foiled the meeting between Cen Shi and He He.

His method is very simple. Just like how adult deals with children, not difficult at all. Just coaxing plus a little bit of treat. After he told her the facts and reason, he very calmly said: "He He, you can choose if you are determine to see him today. Then, later take it as I do not know you."

Zheng Xie is taking a very silly bet. In fact, he is all prepared that if He He did go and meet Cen Shi, he will not care about her anymore. At most, he only lost his face.

However, He He really never let him down since childhood. With her head down, her hand trembles as she hold onto her cell phone but sitting quietly with no intention to open the car door to escape.

Until there is a distant sail boat sound and then the phone rang simultaneously dropping a bunch of text message tone, she finally irrepressibly cried. He He cried for a few seconds and with her red-eyes looked up at Zheng Xie with tears still in her eyes. She said: "You are not my dad. Why you care who I am making friends with. You don't need to care about me even if I am bullied to death. It is a new experience. You do not need to take care of me like I am a puppet. I hate you! Hate you! Hate you!" she shouted aloud these words, then open the car door and ran out without looking back.

## Chapter 22.2: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

*In the last post, we finally had a bit of an insight what exactly happen between Cen Shi and He He and why they went their separate ways. Although it is Zheng Xie's doing in separating them, I could clearly see that he is doing all of it truly with He He's best interest in his mind. How I wished I had an elder brother as caring as Zheng Xie too.....*

*So in the last post ending, He He ran away after an outburst at Zheng Xie. A little surprised as from the beginning of the novel till now, we have always read about how kind-heart and obedient person she is. So what happen next?*

### Chapter 22.2: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

Zheng Xie looked at her fragile and slender back, smiled and shook his head. He gave up his plan to run after He He.

Hate him?

This is his first time seeing He He's outburst. So, she also have the capability to throw temper and tantrums shamelessly just like a child.

Zheng Xie always felt that in personality, He He is too weak, just like his mother. Totally different from her own mother. So he is always ready to make decision for her, to avoid her being bullied or gone the wrong road of growing up and she seldom resist.

Now that he finally saw her little temper, he felt that she had made a big step forward.

In the afternoon, together with a few friends, they went to play cards while drinking. There were a lot of people, walking everywhere. The whole thing dragged into the night and they continued by going to the nightclub. Someone said that it is his girlfriend's birthday dinner so there were many familiar faces but there were also many unfamiliar men and women.

One program leads to another and someone came up with a bizarre drink trick. With a watermelon, they dig out the flesh of the watermelon and turn it into a

container. Then they poured red, yellow, while and black colors wine and soft drinks. Very horrible drink even to the taste. The room was filled with pungent smoke and alcohol.

Zheng Xie knew that he could not hold a mixed drinks and tried to find an excuse to leave a few times. Because he was leaving the next day to go abroad and it is not sure when he would be back, everyone refuses to let him go. He was pushed to consume the cocktail and someone even passed him a cigarette. Taking two puff only, he felt like vomiting. Then he was pushed to sing a duet with the birthday girl before he was able to escape for the night.

Later, everything became a blur. He vaguely remembers taking the cab home and vomited. The nanny took care of him while mumbling about why He He is still not home. And then he tried calling her a few time but were not able to find her. Later he went off to bed.

Because of the worry in his heart, he could not sleep peacefully and dreamt of many messy stuff. He grandmother that he had never personally met were dying many red eggs to celebrate his birthday. He He's father whom he had only met once were playing spaceship with him in the playground. He went to attend the wedding of his first girlfriend but was mistaken as the groom, resulting in his getting cold sweat. His last girlfriend standing on top of a few hundred story building threatening to jump down. He drove strayed into the extra-dimensional world and saw a monster..... Incredible and bizarre.

Even in the most bizarre dream, he had never had such a childish dream even in the development of his youth. He leaped himself into the mysterious dreamland in the ups and downs. His mind is very clear about the party earlier where there are many possibilities that even the food would have been spiked, so he was glad that he left early.

Of course, in the object of his dream, Zheng Xie impressively illusion about Xiao He He and that woke him up. He looked out of the window and see that the sun had risen although it is still very early.

He got up and looked around. Apart from the unbearable smell of smoke and alcohol, there is no obvious abnormalities with his clothes.

Zheng Xie sighed with relief. He dizzily got up to shower and put on his

pajamas wanting to go back into bed. But despite his heavy head, he could not fall asleep.

He struggled to get up, he opened the door and saw the nanny cleaning the living room on the first floor. The nanny is surprised to see him getting up so early.

Zheng Xie stroking the forehead of his dancing head and asked the nanny: “Has He He returned home?”

The nanny carefully observed his face before answered: “..... does not seem that she came back. Her room door is open but there is no one there.....”

The nanny that had worked for two decades is full of doubts.

Last night, she was waiting for He He and Zheng Xie to come home. After he came home, he told her to retire for the night and he will wait for He He to come home. According to Zheng Xie’s habit, Zheng Xie will not go to bed without He He safely home.

And she thought that Zheng Xie would be annoyed and upset if he knows that He He did not return the night before. Although she had never seen Zheng Xie angry, but she had seen him growing up for two decades especially his deadpan expression. Analyzing his emotions this morning, she could not understand why Zheng Xie after hearing that He He did not return the night before showed a relieved expression on his face. Indeed relieve expression. She could not be wrong.

Xiao He He like to watch Doraemon since young and always wanted to have a time machine. But she did not want to go back into the past to start again but hope that time will go faster. Because she thinks that a person’s personality does not change easily. The error that is mean to happen the first time may be avoided but may not be avoided the second time. She just want to destroy the card against her shameless brazen behavior. This is her way of thinking that has been greatly influenced by Zheng Xie. And the time that is a dose of excellent amnestic agents, when it goes faster into the futire, she can easily forget the things that she doest not want to remember. For instance, when she was caught lying to her mother the first time, the time in kindergarten when she performed on stage in disgrace, the memory of losing her first love and also the example of

her guilty of the crime the night before.

*Doraemon is a Japanese Manga that is written and illustrated by the manga writing team, Fujiko Fujio. It is a very popular icon in Japan and many other countries worldwide. There are many anime series and merchandising on Doraemon.*



## Chapter 22.3: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

*In the last chapter, Zheng Xie found out that He He did not returned home the night. What happen to her? Will we find out soon?*

### Chapter 22.3: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

In the summer of the first year of university, Xiao He He tried hard to fill up every minute of her time. From taking part time study classes to serving as a volunteer, she worked hard to try to forget her unhappiness.

The art festival, one of the brains of the school of art is all to be blamed!

Xiao He He is the kind of person that reflect the fresh, clean, soft and sweet. Although her look is comfortable, she does not stand out when she is among the crowd. This is especially when she is in amidst the vibrant and offbeat characters of the Art Institute. She chooses to be quiet and rarely show person in the public. In any community activities, she is the person that would stand behind the scenes concentrating on decorating the venue, design painting that is not outstanding.

The performance at the art festival shocked the whole university, not because it is more exciting or excellent but because the programs are too far ahead of alternative modern that is also too violent and bloody. Greatly stimulate the nerve of the audience. After the end of the show, across the campus BBS posting were throughout the crusade: the Academy for Performing Arts is normal aesthetics which we humans gravely insult and so on. This is the response to the public.

When the condemning posts started to fade, everyone's attention turns the school famous boring literary young man's post: pandemonium in the touch of the sun, the macabre an angel, showing eyebrow light like willow brush bank. She smiled like spring flowers shine on the water... Below each post are the stills of smiling Xiao He He.

As it turns out, on the day of the show, He He has been hiding in the station at



the side while helping with the show. There are times where she helped to pull the curtain. The campus arena is shabby but the school reporter was taking the photos from the side, so in many of the photos, the stage is accommodating black with a silhouette in the background. Near the station is the clear light of white Xiao He He that is reverently watching the performance. Indeed a sharp contract between heaven and hell.

Therefore, the 'mystery woman' Xiao He He became the topic of discussion. People started searching for her. Suddenly she becomes famous.

She is not a person that like to stand in the spotlight, it is just the university's bored idlers that is too much.

人怕出名猪怕壮. Thus in the daily teaching building, dormitory and cafeteria, always only hanging out with girls, the quiet and well-behaved Xiao He He suddenly had a large number of suitors.

人怕出名猪怕壮 (*pin ying: rén pà chū míng zhū pà zhuàng*) – *this is a proverbs that brings the meaning of, one fearing to arouse trouble after being famous, just like how a pig was fatten up before being slaughtered. It could also mean that one that is timid and lacks in creativity even after becoming famous.*

He He was enjoying the attention but was also trying hard to avoid them. Eventually, she was attracted to the versatile boy named Cen Shi.

Both at home and in the university, He He rarely cares about the gossip around. So she was not aware of this man or his intercollegiate. If she would have known, she should have choose to hide under the covers and not get involve further.

Similarly with a TV series plot, an unknown sweet girl, Xiao He He and the campus Prince of Romance, Cen Shi. Just like a campus version of Cinderella.

Later, someone shared some insider stories with Xiao He He.

Since Xiao He He has become popular against her nature and will, a group of bored boys that are conceited and arrogant make a bet to see whose great charm will win her heart. Cen Shi also took part.

Xiao He He does not have much of a temper but she has self-esteem. She will not cry or cause trouble but just slapped him in the face. She refuse to listen to

any explanation from Cen Shi.

It was nearing examination. After Cen Shi attempted to see her a few times that was refused, it eventually died down.

It was meant to only be a joke but after a while it became boring. He He is different from the others where she does not cry nor had the mood to write her diary. She uses her own way of healing through making herself busy with a quiet life to forget her first love experience. Only occasionally she would recall the wonderful memories of her and Cen Shi but at the same time could not help but felt that it was only a dream.

He He achieved a good result. Then the first summer vacation in university started.

Originally, He He is supposed to go to B City to spend time with her mother. Her mother thought on the campus so had a long holiday as well. Unfortunately, that summer, she took a group of students to study in the south. While, Zheng Xie's mother, Aunt Qian, because of her health reasons was not able to adapt to B City summer and winter weather. So chooses to remain in the current city. Xiao He He was more than happy to accompany her and spend the summer there instead.

Because of her mother's eagle-eyed, she is able to detect He He's unusualness. Although she will not ask, but her mother will definitely scan her just like the most sophisticated instruments, which will make her feel like a prisoners in general. While the soft and gentle Aunt Qian will be there for her but never try to ask or speculate on her heart, giving He He the room to breathe that she needed.

Later, because of Uncle Zheng's poor health, Aunt Qian also left to go to him. Before leaving, she reminded He He to stay in Zheng House while accompanying the nanny while waiting for Zheng Xie to return home.

## Chapter 22.4: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

*In the last chapter, we finally found out what happen between He He and Cen Shi. Reality is harsh and for someone so loving and kind-hearted like He He, I can imagine the hurt that was brought to her when she found out. Now, I personally think that Zheng Xie did the right thing in keeping Cen Shi away from He He.*

*So, what happen next? Will we find out in this chapter what exactly happen to He He the night that she did not return home? The mystery deepens... I am excited to find out what happen.... am sure all of you would be too... So read on....*

### Chapter 22.4: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

When she entered university, Zheng Xie has already entered the working world, hence do not have any holiday. But on occasion weekends, he return to visit his mother. She also rarely had the opportunity to meet him.

Zheng Xie treat He He not much difference from before. He treats her just like a little girl, bring her out to play, buy her snacks and toys and even frowning when she straighten her hair. He was surprised when he found out that she is now much taller, her height reaching his earlobe.

He He is the late bloomer. When Zheng Xie graduated from the university, He He's height is still below his shoulder.

And then that day, Zheng Xie took her out to eat while meeting some of his old classmates. Those are no longer students and have the elite social look. Their topic of conversation are too esoteric for her, so she was not interested. Because the food tasted food, she buried her small mouth into eating. Should she find someone looking at her, she will turn and respond with a friendly smile.

She sat beside Zheng Xie. Next to other side is another guy with the surname Shi. The 'Shi' in the 时间, indeed a strange surname. When he found out that He He loves the dishes served on the table but too embarrassed to eat a lot, he will turn the dishes in front of him and then filled He He's plate up.

时间 (*pin ying: shí jiān*) – means time / hour

He He found out later about the missed calls. In addition to Cen Shi's number, there are many unknown local number.

She know that Cen Shi had come, so returned his call.

Cen Shi said: "I came to apologize to you but I promised your brother not to see you again. He He, I wish you happiness....."

This sentence from Cen Shi gradually torn the wounds that had gradually healed.

If Cen Shi did not come, she would not had mind. But Cen Shi came and for whatever reasons, easily abandon her again.

He He is more hurt the second time. And to make it worst, she is embarrassed that Zheng Xie knew about it.

She had always been growing up in Zheng Xie's shadow. He treats her like a child. She had always wanted to prove to him that she had grown up.

She had insisted to choose her own school but not heading to the school of her mother's choice or what the elders thinks. She is not even interested in heading to Zheng Xie's university in the city. She totally ignored Zheng Xie's attempt to secure her a placing through relationship. Zheng Xie sneered at it saying that she is like playing on a trampoline when she suddenly head to an unfamiliar environment, so would definitely want would hit the wall due to confusion and become depressed.

So He He is very careful in school. She study hard and had decent relationship with other people. She did not want to be a role model student but just not keen to be made into Zheng Xie's joke.

But this time, she had indeed showed him what a joke she is. All the naggings and teachings that he had given in the past.... Have all been confirmed.

Zheng Xie on one side will settle the issue while on the other side is smiling.

Later, when He He's fella student was crying and wanted to die after losing her love, He He just remained quiet and listen to her, never making the effort to persuade her. This is because she understand that people want to cry but not

necessary due to the loss of love but mostly because of the hurt pride, upset about it.

He He whom had just celebrated her 18th birthday a few days before, there is no such things. In her mind, she only had one thing so she said to Cen Shi: “Wait for me there. I have something to say to you.”

In fact, He He did not know what she wants to say to Cen Shi as she had nothing to say. She just felt that she want to see Cen Shi to annoy Zheng Xie. Her aim is to make him angry.

But when she is in front of Zheng Xie, she is always like the ‘像如来佛掌心里的孙猴子’. In the end, she did not meet with Cen Shi but instead, she threw a tantrum at Zheng Xie and then ran away.

像如来佛掌心里的孙猴子 (*pin ying : Xiàng rúlái fó zhǎngxīn lǐ de sūn hóuzi*) – *this is an old proverb that brings the meaning of ... being under controlled and could not do anything even after numerous tries*

He He is sitting on the upper edge of the road swinging her legs while reflecting. She felt that she had overdone it with Zheng Xie. He is doing it for her own good but she took him as a real brother and throw her petty tantrum. She somehow regretted it. She thought of Zheng Xie pleasant smile while thinking that she is a joke, she started feeling that she is full of disgrace. Then she felt that she was pretty cool earlier.

With an empty heart, she walked around for an hour on the street. Zheng Xie did not call her so she did not know how to ‘step down’ and how to go back home. Feeling lost and lonely, she called a few high school friends to come out for a gathering.

*Step down – it is a Chinese expression where one that knows that self is at fault, and felt the guilt but not able to admit it for the reason of losing the ‘face’ to the other party*

## Chapter 22.5: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

*In the last chapter, we only managed to find out what happen earlier that night when He He did not return home. What happen after she meet up with her friends? Read on.....*

### Chapter 22.5: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

They went to the game room to play game in the afternoon. They had a crazy time. At night, when they went for barbeque dinner while drinking beer. Then later they went to KTV for singing, drinking and dancing. Singing till their throat are hoarse while drink till they were dizzy and tipsy.

Later when Zheng Xie called He He, she did not hear in the noisy environment.

He He is very drunk although she was able to pretend that she is sober.

This is also something that Zheng Xie thought her before. Zheng Xie said: "Even if you are drunk beyond recognizing yourself, you must not let others see that you are drunk. Drunken girls are an ugly sight. Most importantly, if others see drunken girls, the girls will easily be bullied."

Her plan is to return to the house where her mother stay. Although it may be dusty, it would be much better than sleeping on the streets. But she did not understand how it happen. When the taxi stopped, she looked up and saw that she has arrived in Zheng Xie's villa. The home that she had stayed over the recent years. Even to the extent that she had stayed there more than Zheng Xie.

Xiao He He really could not afford to go back. Her original intended destination is about half a city away from here. She cannot guarantee that she is able to stay sober any much longer.

She took a look at the phone and saw that it has past midnight. Everyone should have gone to bed already, so she decided to bite the bullet and opened the courtyard door. Tip top softly bypassed the dog house and then open the door to the villa.

He He is dizzy and leaned on the stairs railing to rest for a while. She decided to

support the railing to get into her bedroom. As she step on the stairs, her sandals squeal. So she took them off and barefooted walked up the stairs.

When she finally reached the top of the stairs, she was able to see the sun starting to rise. The bright light suddenly lighted above her head. She turned and saw Zheng Xie sitting on a chair at the entrance of the second floor, looking at her coldly.

Later, she could not even remember what the argument with Zheng Xie were about. Usually, she would not dare to rebuke against Zheng Xie. That day, he said a word and she would rebuke with another word. That day, Zheng Xie is also not his normal self. He whom usually cherish words had gone beyond the normal. Usually, if he is not satisfied with her performance, he will only coldly reprimand her, making her taking a defeat without any argument.

But that day, their debate was extreme. In short, everything seems to have gone wrong. He He remembered clearly a sentence that Zheng Xie said: "Xiao He He, you are just too disappointing." He had never spoken like that. Usually he only said: "He He, you are a fool" or "He He, you are a stupid girl."

Xiao He He then climbed the stairs railing to scare Zheng Xie: "You don't force me or else I will jump from here."

The second floor is not high. Should Zheng Xie jump, he could even stand very firmly. The position where is she standing is only one step below, it is impossible to get hurt.

Zheng Xie just sneered: "You just try to jump, you would not."

Xiao He He in her drunken stage thinks. If she jumps, she would have to suffer the consequences. If she don't jumped, then Zheng Xie would also be happy. If she jump, would Zheng Xie regret it? Jump? Don't jump? Jump? She kept thinking about it while unconsciously she climbed the railing. In her mind is a naughty rebellious kid. Her mind is restless as she tried to stop herself from doing something stupid.

As she was struggling hard in her mind, Zheng Xie actually helped her. He stood up and with one movement, pulled her down and then he gave her a slap in the face.

He He finally became sober when Zheng Xie dragged her down from the railing. She realized that she really climbed the railing and half of her body was already over the edge. She was scared and had cold sweat. However, it is the slap that actually make her start crying.

He He shrank into a corner and cry silently. The more she cry the more powerful her cry became until her body curled up.

Zheng Xie sat down beside her while wiping always her tears with his hand. He pulled her into his embrace and gently patting, said in a tired tone: “Do not cry. I am wrong for slapping you. I am wrong. Is that not enough?”

The drunk He He became more childish. Hearing Zheng Xie’s apology, 得理不饶人 as she cried louder.

得理不饶人 (*pin ying: dé lǐ bù ráo rén*) – a proverb that means: showing no mercy to those in the wrong when justice is on one’s side

Zheng Xie covered her mouth: “Do you want to wake up aunty (what they call their nanny) and be laughed at?”

He He then bite his hand. Zheng Xie tried to snatch his hand away but failed. So he just let her bite. He He bite till she became tired and then open her mouth to release his hand. She then whimpered and continued to cry.

Zheng Xie became upset by her crying, stood up and said: “When you are done crying, remember to do back to your room to sleep. I am not feeling well. I am going to get some sleep.....”

He got up on his feet to go. Suddenly Xiao He He hugged his legs refusing to let him go. In the hot summer weather, he wore a single and shorts. With the ‘drama’ earlier, he is tired and sticky.

This time Zheng Xie no longer hold his temper. With a hard tug, he pulled his legs away from her and walked away while saying: “Xiao He He, if you continue this nonsense of yours, I will never meddle with you again. Up to you what you want to do. After all, I would be leaving to go abroad the day after tomorrow. When I return, I do not know if I will still remember you.”



## Chapter 22.6: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

*Interesting and cliffhanging ending from the last chapter right? So what happen next? More interesting happening which leads to me thinking if He He is already aware of her feelings towards Zheng Xie already back during the time or is it just her childish tactic to upset him....*

*A little of a shocking discovery to something that happen between Zheng Xie and He He that happen that night. What exactly happen? Read on and find out for yourself! Enjoy the read.....*

### Chapter 22.6: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

With the hard tug earlier, He He hit the wall with her head. So she took a little bit of time to recollect herself. Hearing what he said, she immediately stumbled up from the ground to catch up. Zheng Xie had just opened the door to his room when she hugged him from behind. Placing her head on his back, she cried.

Zheng Xie struggled to break away for a long time but could not. So he just head forward while dragging Xiao He He behind his back. When he finally entered his room, next to a soft couch, he pulled He He from his back and flung her onto the sofa. He He shrink into the sofa crying.

Zheng Xie poured himself a cup of water to drink and throw a towel to He He and said: "Once you are done crying, go back to your room to sleep. Close the door for me." Then he lay down on the bed, pulled the blanket to cover his face. No movement for a long time indicating that he had fallen asleep.

Losing the audience and under the influence of alcohol, she lost interest in crying but instead became angrier. She looked at the lying quietly on the bed Zheng Xie, suddenly became brave and angered till about to explode, she had an evil idea. With courage, she jumped on Zheng Xie's bed, and then hugged him.

Awakened Zheng Xie pushed her. "Xiao He He, have you taken wrong medicine? Are you crazy?" He accidently pushed his hand on her softest place and then hastily retracted.

With a sense of victory, He He finally pulled away and said triumphantly: “You think you would not care about me again? No way!”

Zheng Xie is awake and he intend to leave her on his bed to sleep while he sleep somewhere else. But He He is bring very clingy and is under the evil control while being childish. She pulled his clothes not wanting to let him go.

In fact, Xiao He He did not know what she wants to do in the end. She just know that she had disgrace herself badly in front of Zheng Xie today and she must regain the face that she had lost. In front of her, Zheng Xie has always been gentleman-like. So as long as she muddle his mind up, she regain her mental stability.

Zheng Xie has always been quick in his action, but fortunately for He He that night, he had moved sloppily. When Zheng Xie wanted to push her back, he accidentally touched her softest part and quickly retreated. He He took this opportunity and grabbed his shoulder. She bite his neck, startling him a little.

The next thing that happen is beyond He He’s expectation. She wanted to only provoke Zheng Xie and embarrassed him. Even in a drunken stage, she also knew that Zheng Xie has always been rational and would never be like her. But when her fuzzy delayed brain realized that something is wrong, everything has gone into a turmoil. She struggled but it was too late. In a dizzy pain, she broke down in tears while accepted the transformation in her life.

Finally Zheng Xie hugged her while wiping away her tears. He said with no feelings: “There is a price to pay for causing disturbance without obvious reasons. Remember this lesson.” But his embrace is very warm.

*The author use the word 胡闹 (pin ying: hú nào) which means kicking up a fuss, or causing disturbance without any obvious reasons.*

He He in tears and pain, gradually fell asleep.

She didn’t sleep well and when she woke up, the sky was still dark. She has totally sobered up. She usually sobered up quickly even after heavy drinking.

The house exudes a strong alcohol liquor smell. Zheng Xie slept soundly but does not look comfortable. He was gentle frowning in his sleep, seems like he had disturbing dream.

She drank beer yesterday, so the strong liquor taste does not belong to her. So it must be Zheng Xie also had too much to drink last night.

In a desperation, she could clearly remember what happen from yesterday noon until early this morning. So she clearly knows that whatever Zheng Xie did to her later, she initiated it herself. She had swallowed the 'poison medicine' through her own drunken state and acted crazy which provoked an equally drunk man. So she simple deserved it.

Losing her virginity is a mall matter. The problem is, after Zheng Xie has woken up, how is she to face him?

Yesterday, what make her saddest is when Zheng Xie said to her about her disappointing him and no longer would care about her. So she went crazy. However, the moment such a thing had happened, after that, there is no way that she and Zheng Xie could live a normal life again.

She thought for a moment to the situation with Zheng Xie's past relationships. He hated most women crying scene, crying while playing a fool and also hated women in their drunken stage. He also hate women tugging on him. And she just had reap all of those in full!

Once Zheng Xie wakes up, how is he going to kill her? In short, she had lost this brother, although she had never put him as her elder brother but more to relying on him as the biggest and best partner.

He He is despair and thought of dying. This way, she do not have to face the music several hours later.

| |

## Chapter 22.7: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

*Shocking discovery last chapter? I must admit that I was totally surprised at the plot as it was totally unexpected. It had never came across my mind that something actually happen between Zheng Xie and He He so many years ago. So does Zheng Xie remember what happen or He He hid it from him?*

### Chapter 22.7: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

She carefully organized her clothes and quietly returned to her room. In her confused stage, she sat for a long time in her room staring into space, until the gray dawn sky gradually turn bright. She felt extremely uncomfortable so head into the shower. After her bath, on her white towel, she found little red blots.

That little blood sobered her up. She put on her clothes and quietly returned to Zheng Xie's room. Under the slowly brightening morning sky, she surreptitiously checked if she had left something on the bed. She checked again and again but could not find any evidence of what happen several hours ago apart from some hair.

Then she put on clothes for Zheng Xie. In his haste yesterday, he did not fully took off everything.

He He wants to gamble and keep it to herself. She recalled that in most common soap drama plot, the bad woman that want to destroy other people's love, would always in the main male lead drunken, unconscious and naked state, lie down on his side and claim that both had been close the next morning. And the drunken male lead could always not remember what had exactly happen the night before.

So she wants to do the opposite. No matter what happen after Zheng Xie awakes, she will insist that nothing had happen between them. After all, she did not leave the most obvious evidence so Zheng Xie would not be able to even drag her for DNA check.

She wants to take the gamble that Zheng Xie is not like her, although is drunk,

her mind is still sober.

She knew that this is outrageous, but it is better than not having any way to continue to get along between her and Zheng Xie.

Xiao He He is at her end wit in nervousness and excitement. She not only worried about the arrival of the dawn but at the same time, hope that the moment arrives soon. Her heart is thumping hard, Bang Bang Bang.... Just like it is almost jumping out of her throat. She went into the yard to take a few minutes of fresh air.

He He sat in the chair and watched the sunrise in the garden. The bright and beautiful picture tattoo in her eyes, full of hope as well as despair. As it she is waiting for the final judgement of her death row. Her life and death is suspended on a thin line.

Almost sleepless the entire night He He, when the sun finally broke through the clouds, lay asleep until someone pushed her eagerly: "He He, how could you sleep here instead of going home? Knock if you do not have the key. Haiz, this child.... What do we do if you fall sick!"

She opened her eyes and saw the nanny.

The nanny without any explanation, hold her hand and she was dragged into the house. At the door, He He hesitated for a while and finally went in.

Zheng Xie is dressed and sitting at the kitchen table reading the newspaper. His face is a little paled. He look like he is in a bad mood.

When He He walked in, he looked up and look at her calmly. He looked at her for a moment, seems like he is watching her while checking for something on her.

He He's heart is thumping really hart. Holding her fist with her nails sunk deep into the flesh, she slightly bowed her head with her well prepared lines meditating in her heart. She prayed that she does not ended up with stage fright.

But Zheng Xie actually said something that was beyond her expectation. Zheng Xie said dismissively: "Sit down and eat. Next time if you are not coming home for the night, remember to call home."

He He did not believe that today is her lucky day.

Zheng Xie really could not remember anything that happened during the early morning. More than how she wanted him to forget.

The bet that she was betting one not only fully recovered, she is very fortunate in the whole incident.

Xiao He He bizarrely escaped the disaster that she had expected.

Everything is unexpected. Zheng Xie not only did not remember anything, he did not even investigate on the reason why she did not return overnight. She casually made up a reason. He nodded and motioned her to eat first and then did not say anything.

Later He He could not help but think that maybe Zheng Xie remember something but like her, he could not face with the messy embarrassment hence decided to keep cool about the whole thing.

In any case, she is happy with it.

At that time, Xiao He He began to believe the existence of Gods. She thought that it must be that she did half of the summer volunteering hence accumulate the virtue hence God is being kind to her.

That day, after breakfast, Zheng Xie went upstairs to rest. She also slept for a while. Her body and brain are extremely tired but she could not sleep as her heart is anxious and fearful. She got up and searched the internet for a long time. Then with a pair of big sunglasses and a sun hat, she told the nanny that she is going out to buy something.

The kind nanny said that she did not rest well that night so will go and help her buy. After declining for a long time, she finally was able to escape. She walked a distance and managed to call a taxi to bring her to a pharmacy about two areas away. Wearing a sun hat and sunglasses, she secretly head to buy the medicine. The pharmacist gave her a little pill and in kindness reminded her: "This medicine is not good if taken too often." Later Xiao He He avoided the street for the fear of someone recognizing her.

In short, that day after she took the pills, she finally felt at ease and was able to sleep. She woke up only when the sky turns dark.

Zheng Xie was leaving the next day, so did not go out that night but stayed at home for dinner. He seems to have slept all day too. His eyes are a little swollen, the eyes is not as sharp as previous and his appetite seems to be bad.

The nanny whom is half family, said: “I know the taste of being drunk is uncomfortable. It is strange that you drank so much yesterday. I have not seem you drunk so your face is saved but you had to suffer it.”

Zheng Xie kept silence while He He kept her head down, hoping that the plate could buried her.

| |

## Chapter 22.8: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

*He He was so relieved that Zheng Xie could not remember what happen and their close relationship continued. Is it true that Zheng Xie really cannot remember or he also chooses to act cool refusing to admit what happen?*

### Chapter 22.8: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

Later Zheng Xie finally spoke. He said to He He: "Tomorrow you go with me. I will take you to B City."

He He quietly whispered: "I have two more classes to finish. My mother is not at home, she had taken her students to study in the south."

Zheng Xie said: "The classes, even if you don't attend, it does not matter. You cannot stay here. My mother is over there. I will take her to her place."

And He He did not argue but acquiescence to his arrangements.

Zheng Xie is departing from B City to go abroad to study. So that day, there are a large group of people that come to his home to bid him farewell. Zheng Xie is bored and insist to go to the airport alone with the driver only. No one else is allowed to send him off at the airport. His reason is extremely simple: "I hate goodbye scene. I am afraid of people crying."

Everyone is noisy while gossiping. He He sat in the corner and was silent. Then the elders smiled and said: "He He is the most reluctant to let Ah Xie go. Once he is gone, she lack one big backer. Look at He He, sad before words."

He He looked embarrassed and did not know how to answer. So she sat there quietly.

Zheng Xie laughed: "Two days ago, we argued till an awkward point. So she is still in a fit of anger."

Zheng Xie's mother soft rebuke: "Ah Xie, you are already an adult. And you even have the nerve to bully He He?"

He He became more embarrassed and laughed while suffered.



Aunty Qian gentle looked at He He and said to Zheng Xie: “I am also afraid of parting scene and saying goodbye. So I am not going to send you off at the airport. But you let He He send you off. There must be someone who personally send you off.”

In the end, in additional to the driver, He He is the only person whom personally sent Zheng Xie at the airport. As she say goodbye to Zheng Xie, there were no tears. She obediently walked behind him with her head bowed in silence.

Before boarding the flight, Zheng Xie said to her: “Are you still upset with me? Even now you are still not willing to give me a smile.”

He He shook her head and then reluctantly give him a very bright smile.

A gush of wind blew her hair into her eyes. Zheng Xie wanted to use his hand to push it aside but halfway, close his hand and only said to her: “Once a week, write a letter to me. I will call you once a week. Anything, just leave me a message. Call my cell phone for anything urgent. Once I settle down, I will give you my contact details.”

He He obediently nodded.

After heading back to school, He He continue to be the law-abiding and good student. An ordinary student, she is also very popular with the teachers and students. Occasionally she will create one or two particularly stunning works. Every time they look forward for her to continue to glow in the art of life, she gradually change from a white swan into an ugly duckling.

He He accordingly to Zheng Xie’s request wrote the letter weekly to him. Not much words in each letter, just reporting what she has been doing, such as: “I won second scholarship. I almost flunk a course. The flowers on the tree below the dormitory has already bloomed.” And sometimes it includes: “I went shopping today and bought six pieces of clothes, three of the same style but different colors. Very cheap.” Even when she is ill and was admitted to the hospital for a week, her letter was never late. Of course, she never share with him in the letter about being admitted to the hospital.

Zheng Xie’s reply to her are also very short, containing instruction to her not to learn anything like losing weight, do not play outside late into the night.

Occasionally, he would also share and update her about things over on his side, usually only a word or two and then leaving her to imagine the rest.

Across the far distance, they get along calm and friendly. A little awkward at times but also seem very close.

Another holiday came and He He went home for New Year. She did not see Zheng Xie because he was participating in a project hence he did not go home. Then when he finally went home, He He had gone back to school.

Aunt Qian called He He to chat with her and shared with her about her missing Zheng Xie with a tone of regret.

He He however was secretly relaxed.

Before when she was feeling awkward and looking abnormal, Zheng Xie only take it as she is throwing tantrum at him because she is upset with him. Now, if they meet, she cannot guarantee that they will be restored to the normal state. Of course, she is not willing to face him yet.

A new semester started. In the same dormitory filled with girls, there is a person that stay with her boyfriend. One person where every weekend, a car will pick her up on Sunday evening and then returning Monday morning. One person that changes boyfriend as often as changing clothes. One that had wanted but in trance while one that is in contact with a long-distance love. Sweet moments, quarrels, whether it is joy or sorrow, love and sharing, He He is always dragged along.

Only He He on a daily basis immersed in her own world. Reading, painting or do her hand-made items while occasionally participate in community activities. Living every day in a relaxing manner.

By comparison, the most distinctive Xiao He He became the campus most uncharacteristic individual.

Of course there are many temptations, on the campus and off the campus. But she was not the slightest interested. Seeing her roommates going through the sad, sorrows and joyful moments, her experience gradually faded away, only occasionally muddle her mind a little.

Fortunately, every time Zheng Xie returns from abroad, it is only for a few

days. She hardly see him and even when they meet, there are a bunch of other people together.

||

## Chapter 22.9: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

*In the last chapter, Zheng Xie could not remember anything about what happen between him and He He that early morning. And then he left to go abroad while He He went back to University continuing her life as a student. They corresponded via letter as per the request by Zheng Xie on weekly basis. And they did not managed to meet till some time later. What happen next? When did their relationship finally restored to the normal relationship like how it was before?*

### Chapter 22.9: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

As long as it is a decent background, the play is very easy.

After another semester had passed, she finally saw Zheng Xie. And it is in a foreign country.

The University where He He is studying has established a friendly relations with some European Universities leading to both doing Student Exchange groups. He He was supposedly not have taken part in the student exchange program but when both of the Universities did a joint activities, her work had attracted the interest of someone very important in the other University. So she was invited as an exchange student.

Towards Western country, He He is not very interested, so even without discussing with her family had refused the offer. She is after all, not an ambitious person. But her name was still included in the list of the University exchange student group.

The University and where Zheng Xie is located is very close. She dare not hide the fact from Zheng Xie so informed him about her exchange program.

They had an extremely full itinerary. So only had free time on the last day.

She did not expect that Zheng Xie would actually drove a few hours to head over, and with a lot of effort got the permission of the caretaker to bring He He and another female student whom are very close with He He out. They toured

the local scenery, dine in the best restaurant for dinner, watched a show and within the specified time, returned to their hotel.

With the company of the female student, He He acted naturally, just as how it was previously when Zheng Xie brought her out to meet his friends. Zheng Xie is gentle, polite and graceful.

The female student had a full two month of love sickness. The mentioned of Zheng Xie, red hearts will reflect from her eyes. “You do not know, He He’s brother is so handsome, and full of style. Standing on the street, even those burly blond good looking guys will be shot down. Now I know why He He frown up those middle-school guys handsome guys. Having such a brother, her standard is very high.”

He He only smiled but never say anything amidst the bunch of curious inquiry.

She felt that it was a good start. Once Zheng Xie is back, even if they often meet, they will certainly able to return to how their previous relationship was. There is no flaws.

Heaven once again meet the requirement of He He but not in the way she wanted it to be.

That time, it was another holiday season. He He had gone back to her mother’s place to spent a few days there. Then she went back to stay with Auntie Qian. In fact, like Auntie Qian, she did not like B City’s air and weather where the temperature and humidity are unusual. The barometric pressure constantly resulted in He He getting nosebleed and also breathless.

He He remembered that day, she and Auntie Qian together with another relative were making DIY snacks. She got her face covered with flour. They were making fun of her so she went to change and wash up.

She quickly changes and went back into the kitchen. Before she step into the kitchen, she heard the auntie said: “Since beginning of Zheng Xie’s University days, He He is becoming more like your daughter. When occasionally Zheng Xie is back, he also leave right away. Seems that he is more like the son-in-law.”

Auntie Qian said: “He He will be back in a moment. If she hears you, she would be shy.”

Aunty said: “All these years, you treat He He like she is your most precious. But in my heart, I see you treating her like your daughter-in-law.”

Aunty Qian smile slightly: “Those kids’ issues, I cannot get involve. I am afraid that both He He and Ah Xie does not have such feelings. Forcing them together will have no meeting. I am a very good example right? I really like He He. She is like my baby. Not because there are any other reason.”

“Ai, that is true. If Ah Xie had such intention, according to his character, he would not have so many girlfriends, left and right one.”

“Ah Xie is an assertive child. Let him make the decision himself. Only He He this precious one, so good and sensible. What kind of man that I can give her hand to so to ensure that she would be well taken care of?”

He He stood at the door for a long time. Only entered just like there are nothing happen inside.

That night, Aunty Qian unusually asked He He to go and sleep with her. She shared with He He about some of Zheng Xie’s childhood stories. There are memories that He He remember herself. And she also shared her childhood memories with Aunty Qian. They chat way into the wee morning till they are tired before they gradually feel asleep.

The next day, she woke up feeling uncomfortable. All the people at home persuaded her to go to the hospital. This visit to the hospital, she never returned home.

Zheng Xie’s father rushed back only to be able to see his wife for the one last time. By the time Zheng Xie flew back, all he saw was his mother’s cold body.

According to the wishes of the deceased’s wishes, she was buried in the city where she life for nearly two decades.

It was a very low key funeral, only the closest people get the message.

Zheng Xie’s mother has always treated people well. Friend and family thinks that her death is too sudden. Many are crying. Even the nanny at home were crying out of breath.

Both father and son, Zheng Xie and his father are the quietest people. Zheng

Xie's dad dropped a few tears while Zheng Xie had only 1 expression from the beginning till the end.

In the afternoon, after all the rites have been completed and calmness enfolds, they found out that Zheng Xie did not go home with them. And he did not bring his phone. A few hours later, they still could not find him so the relative became anxious. They worried that he could not get over the facts and wanted to make a police report.

This is because, that particular year, Zheng Xie only spent a few days home with his mother. He plan to get his degree ahead of time and head home early. So during the holidays, he did not even come home as he uses the period of time to complete his thesis. However, who would think that his plans would all be changed.

He He stood up and said: "I go and look for him. I can find him." As He He was heading out, she saw that the driver and the secretary of Uncle Zheng are following her. She insisted and said: "I will go alone. He does not like too many people around." Her eyes are a little swollen from her crying and she spoke with a heavy twang. Several of her acquaintances had never seen her so strong, so after some observation, let her go with the cab.

## Chapter 22.10: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

*In the last chapter, He He finally meet Zheng Xie and spend 1 day with him when she went abroad under student exchange program. After the day, she was relieved that their relationship seems to be back to normal before the incident that happen.*

*Aunty Qian (Zheng Xie's mother) whom had always treat He He like her own daughter passed away. And after her funeral, Zheng Xie went missing. He He headed out to search for him. Will she able to find him? What happen after she found him?*

### Chapter 22.10: Two People's Time Machine (两个人的时光机)

He He went to the mountain that she and Zheng Xie used to climb together. On the back of the mountain, there is a singular form of boulders and has a very beautiful scenery. The cars are not able to go up the mountain. Access is only via walking a very steep stone steps with the chain for hands to hold on the side. Climbing this mountain is extremely difficult.

Happy or bored, Zheng Xie like to climb this mountain. He He as a child likes to follow him, so he often bring her along. Climbing halfway, when He He becomes tired and could not move, he would piggyback her up the mountain. In fact, when he is bored, from his words and deeds it is hard to determine. But these are the time when he does not like others to disturbed him. He He by his side would pick a lot of wild flowers, scaring the butterflies and sometimes got frightened by the other insects. While Zheng Xie would quietly sit on the rock in daze watching the sun setting down. When the day color fades into darkness, he will piggyback the half asleep and tired He He back down the mountain.

Later when He He is bigger, he refuse to piggyback her up the mountain. When He He climb and is out of breath, he will lead her like a pig by grabbing and dragging her up to the summit. Soon after, He He stopped following him up to the mountain. Sometime she suspect that he will bring his good physically fit girlfriends to climb the mountain.



With great effort, He He climbed the mountain. On top of the hill, she need to climb over another two small hills to get to the back of the mountain. These are little bare hills with no stairs. There are only some roughly cut holes in the boulder, just like rock climbing. He He climbed the first hill and thinks to herself. If Zheng Xie is not there, then she would have no strength to climb down, and could only wait for people to rescue her.

But Zheng Xie did not disappointed her. He is really sitting on the stone of his favorite spot. His back is facing her, looking at the sun. The wind on the mountain is very strong. It feels like one can be flown off anytime.

He He stood about ten meters behind him. She dare not move forward. Her eyes are a little teary as she don't know what to say to him.

Zheng Xie keenly turned to her direction. He saw her and then he moved a little to the side. He patted the space next to him, motioning for her to sit down.

Just like that, she sat down quietly beside him. Accompanying him to watch the sunset. The sun settled down, the red ball covered the beautiful horizon.

Zheng Xie is silent and He He kept quiet. When the red ball finally sand around the horizon, the wind suddenly become cold.

He He winced and leaned toward Zheng Xie. She only wore a black T-Shirt and jeans that day.

When she leaned on Zheng Xie, she found that it is wrong so moved away. Zheng Xie's hand gently embrace her, giving her a little warm to rely on.

Zheng Xie still looked ambiguously at the unclear skyline. He said quietly: "You still remember this place although you have not been here for a long time. My first time here, my mother was the one who brought me. I climb every step on my own. She was very happy. Not long after, she had her heart attack. Since then, she was not able to climb mountain, always climbing halfway before turning back down. She once said, the sunset here is more beautiful than any other places."

With a heavy heart, He He's tears start to fall again. She looked hard at the sky, trying to force back her tears. She found a lot of stars in the sky.

She was a little afraid of the stars, so subconsciously looked down. There was a

bright flash that rolled over, so she thought it was meteor shower. So she turned to look but only see tears rolling down Zheng Xie's cheek. He is silently shedding his tears that looks like shining stars in the dark night.

For a long time after that, He He almost forget the ridiculous night that happen between her and Zheng Xie but she could clearly remember this moment. Zheng Xie's head on her shoulder, the drops of tears on her neck, down her collarbones a little wetting her clothes. And she is held him like a child in her arms, her tears dripping onto his hair and face. Eventually their tears fall together. At the moment, they were really the closest, even replacing the accidental intimacy memories.

He He cannot remember when and how we got home. She woke up feeling very weak. She is on a drip and the surrounding is very bright.

A bunch of people around her cheered when they see her awake. "Awake! She is finally awake. Xiao He He, how could you scare us like this?"

Her mother was sitting at the side of her bed. She was relieved to see her waking up, revealing a little tears in her eyes, and then quickly concealed it. She quietly said: "How could you not know how to take care of yourself. You had a fever and you did not know about it. Finally fainting on the mountains. Zheng Xie had to piggyback you while take careful step by step down the mountain. The mountain stairs are so steep and it was also so dark. Very dangerous. If you both accidentally slipped....." She stopped, turned her head and then after a moment, turned back.

He He was hospitalized and on drip for a full five days. In fact, the morning of the funeral, she had already felt a little uncomfortable. She held on and then later forgotten about it.

Her mother accompanied her for two days. She receive many calls asking her questions or to report some results. Later, Zheng Xie persuaded her to go back to school to continue the experiment in order not to lose the months of hard and exhausting work. He will take care of He He instead.

The remaining three days, Zheng Xie turned into a very dedicated nanny. Cutting fruits for He He to eat, he would cut it into small bites. When He He want to read, he said that reading book when having a high fever will hurt the eyes, so

patiently read to her. He He is afraid of being pierced and see blood. So he carefully helped her cover her eyes.

And on the fourth day, He He was finally able to speak. She said: "You must be bored. Let someone stay with me, you go and do your own things."

Zheng Xie said: "I have nothing else to do. This is interesting. Just like how when you were a child, playing house while holding a pile of dolls."

He saw He He revealing a slightly pouting face. He reached out to squeeze her mouth and said: "Your expression just now look exactly the same as when you were a newly born. You were this tiny when you were just born." He reached out and show her how tiny she was, smaller than a cat.

He He said: "You must have lots of homework to catch up right? Why don't you go back to school?"

Zheng Xie said: "I have already got enough credit. Have also passed all the papers. So no need to go back until graduation time. Your next semester you do not have any internship, come over to my company to do odd jobs."

He He said: "I want to think about it. I am very sought-after."

Later He He often think, at the cost of her love, she had killed her own demons in exchange for true spiritual tranquility. She and Zheng Xie could safely adjourned their siblings' relationship, starting all over again.

It is said that a woman's 25th year of life, there will be a hurdle. The mood will not be quiet. He He had always not believed this and now she finally believed it.

She spent several years unscathed. She thought she had completely put that incident behind her. Her heart no longer hold any grudges and in moderation having Zheng Xie in her life. But because of the two witnesses in the same afternoon in front of her, all the work of covering the incident have all been broken.

## Chapter 23.1: Rather that it is a dream

*Some sweet memories in the last chapter between He He and Zheng Xie when He He was ill and hospitalized. Zheng Xie's dedication to He He, I personally felt that it is beyond what a brother would do for a sister.*

*Today's chapter, we come back to the present time, continuing what we left off in [Chapter 21.7](#) where they had an argument in the car before He He got down from the car and ran off from Zheng Xie. Now that we finally managed to read about what happen between both of them during the fated night that that they were talking about in [Chapter 22.6](#), what happen next in the presence? Read on.....*

### Chapter 23.1: Rather that it is a dream

When he was younger, Zheng Xie often had nightmares. He often woke up glad to be able to return to the real world. He did not want to feel ridiculous to have such a bizarre dream that may potentially turn into reality.

In Zheng Xie's memory, he had never been so puzzled before. He was cast into an unusual space, surrounded by wilderness and could not see anything as it was pitch dark. There is a kind of mechanical sound where he does not know where it is coming from. It has impacted his eardrums. A long time after, he realized that it was the sound of his veins throbbing.

When Zheng Xie came back to reality, He He had disappeared from his field of vision. He tried to go on the road but his hand was shaking. He drove a few hundred meters and then stopped. He slowly drew and ignite a cigarette.

He tried to suppress the chaotic feeling. So he went home to think about everything that had just happen. But the trivial messy thoughts was spontaneously merged into a clear line, just like a snake that was twisted with the intention to bite him.

He touched for a long time looking for his phone. He vaguely realized that he should first determine whether He He has safely got home. His mind is in a major state of confusion at the moment.

He dialed He He's number. Somewhere in the car, he heard the kitten cry sound. He immediately hung up the phone and his body turned stiff. The kitten sounds disappeared. He suspected that he had imagined it. He hesitated and then dialed again. The mew sounded very weak from the ground near his feet. Zheng Xie switched on the car light, bent over and picked up the bag that He He had dropped on the ground.

He nervously flipped through the slightly bulging big bag. Going through the bunch of useless things, he found He He's phone, keys and wallet. His back oozes a layer of cold sweat.

Zheng Xie quickly calmed down. He quickly drove to He He's place. He hopes that He He had some change on her or the taxi driver is kind enough not to embarrass her. And He He is now waiting for him downstairs.

He remembered that He He often forgets and locked herself outside. Then she will borrow a phone and call him. She will ask him to send her keys over. This is because Zheng Xie had her spare key. Zheng Xie reminded her to be careful several times but she will always forget.

The last time He He locked herself out was spring this year. When Zheng Xie received her call, he was on the way to her place. It was still very cold early spring where the temperature was low. When he arrives, He He was sitting in front of a garden on the children's rocking chair while waiting for him. She was wearing only a thin pajamas with cartoon printed fresh fruits. She was barefooted wearing only flip-flops and her hair was messy. She was trembling from the howling wind. She almost cried when she threw herself like a child clinging to his arm.

At that time, he was extremely angry but when he saw her aggrieved look and grabbing his hand with a cold hand, he did not have the heart to scold her. He was only worried about her future.

But today, there is no miracle at all. Around in the area, he drove slowly around several times but failed to find He He. He grew increasingly worried and his body became colder.

Zheng Xie finally thought that He He might head over to her friends' place. He flipped through her phone directory and tried to call Su Ren Ran and Ding Ding. He

only knows that He He had two friends in the city. He suddenly became more worried and called a few of her colleagues. The result again once again a disappointment.

Zheng Xie utterly in a confused state tried to use relationship to get help when suddenly he had a shimmer glitter of hope that soon disappeared. He dialed Cao Miao Miao's phone but without much expectation in his heart.

The Ms Cao that could barely walk straight an hour ago is now articulated and had quick thinking. She unashamedly said on the phone: "He He is here or He He is not here with me at my place? In short, I am not telling you!"

Zheng Xie said in a soft tone again: "Director Cao, I have something important to look for her... if she is there....."

Cao Miao Miao said: "Omnipotent Mr. Zheng Xie also would have such a helpless moment.... Ha ha ha ha ha ha ha ha ha ha.... God has eyes!"

Zheng Xie was almost pleading: "Miao Miao....."

The phrase finally broke the spell and Cao Miao Miao lady heart suddenly soften: "Okay. She is here with me. She is asleep."

Zheng Xie said: "I want to see her."

Cao Miao Miao sighed: "Zheng Xie, He He is already an adult. Good or bad, the way you reprimanded her is like a child. From the moment she entered my house, she had been crying till she fell asleep. This is still not enough? It is just one trip to the nightclub for a short while. This aging mother uses this month wages to threaten and force her to go with me, ok? You go and file a cast against me for abduction of underage girls! Damn... you really thought that you are her real brother? If you are so addicted to be a parent, you go and get married and have your own kids."

Zheng Xie said very weakly: "She left her stuff in my car."

Cao Miao Miao said: "Send it over."

When Zheng Xie arrived at Miao Miao's place, she was already standing downstairs with a queen posture waiting for him. He had just parked the car when she came and open his door. She took the bag and closed the door to step

away.

Zheng Xie got out of the car and stopped her: “I want to see her.”

Cao Miao Miao extended three fingers in front of him. “Firstly, I am still single and I do not welcome man in my home. Secondly, you don’t think that the earth is your home. Thirdly, He He said that she don’t know you.”

Zheng Xie gave up his attempt and said: “Then I will find her tomorrow. And let her have a good rest. Please take good care of her for me.”

Cao Miao Miao said without any sympathy: “As what you said, I will certainly take good care of her. But it is not ‘for you’... devil.... Doing things for you.”

Zheng Xie no longer want to argue with Cao Miao Miao and left without another word. He drove the car while the memory of He He crying also tried to give reason to Cao Miao Miao a good reason. His heart is throbbing. And the phrase, “Do not know him!” is very hurting and sadden him.

||

## Chapter 23.2: Rather that it is a dream

*Cao Miao Miao refused to let Zheng Xie bother He He that night and assisted in keeping him away from He He. Failed and finally giving up the attempt, where did Zheng Xie go? Did he go to Yang Wei Qi?*

### Chapter 23.2: Rather that it is a dream

Yang Wei Qi called him and casually asked him: "Have you got home?" He hastily answered her: "Some friends were looking for me" and hung up the phone. He felt very upset and confused. He remembered that earlier some friends had approached him, saying that there is a social event this evening. He felt that the place is too crowded, so with some excuse had turn it down.

Now, he suddenly is afraid to go home and face the cold wall. He feared that he would go crazy in the dead of the night. And when he is bored recently, he had looked for the companionship of Yang Wei Qi, however, now he is not able to face her with the most appropriate expression. So he decided to go and join his friends.

The group of friends had booked the entire club for a friend whom would be getting married the day after tomorrow. This is mean to be the childhood buddy bachelor party. The entire scene is in a mess, just like it had been robbed. There is a large gift box where showgirls with ribbons tied to their body dancing out of the box.

The appearance of Zheng Xie seems more popular than those dancing showgirls. The prospective groom was almost in tears when he said: "My buddies, my face is so big ah.... Even Zheng Xie came to join us!"

Before Zheng Xie could respond, the person next to him said: "This guy, Ah Xie, most certainly felt guilty in his mind, so suddenly came here. It is so late." Zheng Xie just squeeze the corner of the mouth into a smile but did not laugh out loud.

The group of people started playing guessing game of questions and answers with the groom. They asked questions like, when was his first time. Where? How old both parties was? If the guess is wrong, then the groom need to answer or be penalized to drink.



The prospecting groom is tipsy and started to speak confusingly: "The most embarrassing thing with my wife.... One day after high school reunion, I woke up to find myself lying naked next to a female student that I had not seen for years. We were awkward and overwhelmed. So we decided to date and see where it lead it. And we ended up getting together. The next time we had sex, the result is we found her still a virgin. Damn.... I can't afford to lose!"

All the people laughed and knock on the bottle ring. The one that laugh the loudest said: "This face is really lost. You do not know even if you had done it or now? Or just even half of it?"

The groom said: "When you are drunk and unconscious, who would remember if it is a real or just a dream? I always thought that it was true."

The group of people scoff and pound of the table.

Only Zheng Xie did not mix with them. He sat quietly on the sofa in the corner, while staring silently at the big screen on the wall.

He has always been fond of quietness expect in cases where he was drag into the playing group. Most other times, he do not get into trouble together with hem, only stood by the side as spectators. To the others, they have taken that for granted. As long as he is willing to attend, he has given enough face.

Someone handed a can of beer in front of him. He shook his head. "Do not drink. I had quit."

The other laughed. "Really know how to pretend. The day before yesterday you drank a lot." Zheng Xie looked up. It is Su Ren Ran's brother, Su Mao Wei.

Zheng Xie said: "Just quit today."

Su Mao Wei sat down next to Zheng Xie and said: "Why are you looking so glum."

In the bunch of people, someone said: "Ah Xie heart is desolately, because the next one would most probably be him."

Zheng Xie lifted and eye but did not say anything.

Su Mao Wei said: "I heard that you even got your beach house renovated. Everyone said that this time you are serious. It is hard to believe. You just got to

know each other for a short period of time. It is enough to determine that this is for lifetime?”

Zheng Xie quietly sigh.

Su Mao Wei isn't aware of it. He just had a little more to say. After all, his relationship with Zheng Xie is much closer than others. He turned and looked at the group that is still playing with the groom and said with a smile: “I want to say something but you don't get angry. Before Yang Wei Qi appear, you are never serious about any relationship. We always thought that you were just waiting for He He to grow up.”

Zheng Xie picked up the bottle of beer in front of him and took a mouthful. Su Mao Wei is very surprised to see him, thinking of what Zheng Xie said earlier about he had quit drinking.

Su Mao Wei is startled. “I will get you a bottle of water.” He came back a moment later and even helped him to unscrew the cover of the bottle. “You do not look very good. Are you not feeling well?”

Zheng Xie said: “Nothing. I am just a little tired today.”

Su Mao Wei opened another bottle of beer and drank half of the bottle in one breath. He had drank a lot so his speech was a little blurry. He pat Zheng Xie's shoulder and said: “At the mentioned of He He's name, you face immediately changed. Is it that the little girl had made you angry again? Haiz, I tell you. Sisters are like creditors that we owed them in previous life. For twenty over years, you had treated her like a treasure, loving, caring and spoiling her. At a turn, she will ran to the other man. And for the 'other man' she is willing to turn her back against you. Letting your heart turn cold.”

The groom suddenly paid attention and shouted towards Su Mao Wei: “You do not think that we don't know. In your life, your greatest wish is hoping that you and your sister, Ren Ran are born into different parents. This way, you could take her home and marry her.”

These unkind man said: “One should tell his sister about him. I can see the suspense there!”

Su Mao Wei scolded: “Go!”

Zheng Xie felt his mouth is very dry. He calmly picked up the bottle before filling his mouth with a big gulp. When the cold feeling once again spread to the nerve, he realized that he had just drank beer. He had taken the wrong bottle.

| |

## Chapter 23.3: Rather that it is a dream

*Zheng Xie is desperate to speak to He He and find out what exactly happen that night. While He He is trying her level best to avoid him. Would He He be successful in avoiding the discussion?*

### Chapter 23.3: Rather that it is a dream

By the time Zheng Xie and He He finally meet, it was already the following afternoon.

That night, he mingled with his friends until almost four o'clock in the morning. Then he drove back to the company directly.

This is the company's office suite. It comes with bedroom, bathroom and everything else. He transform the bedroom into a private meeting room that also serves as a lounge.

He slept on the lounge sofa fully clothed for a few hours. The next morning when his secretary was about to open his office door, she was stunned to see a tired looking but neatly clothed Zheng Xie walking out of the side door. She nearly drop her folder onto the ground.

Zheng Xie took some effort before he was successful in reaching He He.

It is really not him whom managed to contact He He. He called her mobile twice but only hear the mechanical female voice reminding him over and over again that the number is not reachable. He looked at the pile of files on the table and felt really tired. Finally he called Secretary Wei and said that he is not able to reach He He. He had to see her today.

Secretary Wei work style has always been in tune with him. After only half an hour, she informed him of the time and place where he would be meeting He He.

Zheng Xie felt a little mean. He know that He He when facing other people will give him face, so he had to force her through tricks to meet him. But he really did not have any other way. He must confirm the matter before he went crazy, although in his heart, he had already recognized the fact.

The place that He He selected is a quiet tearoom. Only black and white interior.

White walls with black low table. On the wall is a simple picture. The cushions are white, making the whole place feels cold.

It is too quiet. So quiet that Zheng Xie felt that a needle falling on the ground could be heard.

When Zheng Xie arrived, He He has been waiting for him. When the waiter opened the door, He He bowed and knelt at the table. When she see him, she hurriedly stood up and her leg hit the table. She gently wrinkled her brow but did not utter any sound.

It is a Japanese-style room. Zheng Xie remember mentioning in the past to He He about not liking to do business in the Japanese-Style room. With the curved legs and bend body, confidence will be weaken at some points. When he take her to eat Japanese food, he had insisted to choose the normal package. He He don't want to remember and definitely know how to deal with him. He wanted to praise her indeed.

He He even dressed up and put on make-up. Although very light make-up, her eyes look larger than normal. Perhaps it is because she did not sleep well last night, perhaps because she had put on eye-shadow. She had excellent skin. When one leaned in to see the pores, one would not be able to find any. She is too lazy to care about her skin not even to mention putting on make-up. Sometimes when he returned from a trip abroad with expensive cosmetics, she would ask him directly for delicious food and snacks next time.

He He sat down again and bowed her head refusing to look up at him. Her long eyelashes cover her face, looking as if two small black butterfly gently quivered. She tried to make tea but it was bad. Water splashing out from time to time. Several time, she almost got scalded by the water.

Zheng Xie pushed her hand to take over the tea. When he hit her, current bounce off He He's hand as if an electric shock.

In the quiet room, there is only the sound of the water pouring and very light breathing.

The boring action of pouring the tea had helped to calm Zheng Xie down. He looked up and looked across him. She still had her head half-bowed. One will see that she is nervous but she had her lips tightly pursed firmly.

Suddenly Zheng Xie had a headache. He realized that in the past over twenty years, he had never fully understood Xiao He He. He had only see her in what he most willing want to see the side of her.

Zheng Xie decided to break the silence. He tried to put on a soft voice: “He He, let’s talk about those words that you said last night.”

Xiao He He slowly looked up and her eyes gentle sweep Zheng Xie. She quickly dodged and gently bowed her head, recite in a machine like voice: “I should not be drinking and smoking. And should not be willful and mischievous. I would not do that again next time. Please do not stay angry with me.”

Zheng Xie felt the right side of his temple chug jump twice. He continued to repress his temper and softly asked: “I just want to know. When you’re not willing, right afterwards, is there any more serious consequences?”

He He paled and said: “No! Not..... I drank too much, do not remember anything.... Not, in fact, nothing happened!”

Zheng Xie throat is a little dry. He took up his glass only to found it empty. When he reached for the pot, He He also just picked up the pot and almost hit into his hands. He He sheepishly retracted.

Zheng Xie also withdrew his hand and gave up plans to add more water. He gently sigh: “He He, you were only a child that time. You should not have to bear this alone. You should have let me know.”

He He said: “It is not what you think.....” She looked up and saw Zheng Xie’s face. She rarely saw him with that expression, a very tired and very helpless look. As if when she was a child making a mistake while he did not even bothered about it. She finally gave in, with a muffled sound said almost pleading: “It is all in the past already. Please forget about it.”

Zheng Xie rubbed his temple with his fingers the second time. He said: “I too failed to have you hiding this from me for so many years. Back then you were only a child.” He said while seem to remember the time.

He He replied with voice not less than before: “I am no longer a child. I did not deliberately not tell you. I almost forgot about it. It is the truth.”

Zheng Xie continue to rub his temples. After a long while he said: “He He, you

give me a little time. I go and solve some things. Let me think about what we will do in the future.”

He He looked up with her eyes wide open. She could not help but raised her voice: “What do you want to do?”

Zheng Xie looked at her, did not speak.

He He said with a tearful voice: “I beg you. Forget about it now.” She got up from the seat and knelt down beside Zheng Xie just like when she was a child and pulled his sleeve. “Please, could you forget it? Take it as I have said nothing. As if nothing ever happen. We continue as how we were before. You go ahead in accordance to your plan to marry Ms Yang while I continue to date. Isn’t this better?”

At the mentioned of Yang Wei Qi, Zheng Xie felt a gentle earthquake in his heart a little bit. He said slowly: “He He, do you think that I would be at ease to marry her?”

Tears falling down from her face. She loosened Zheng Xie’s sleeve. “Why cannot? You had a lot of girlfriends. Not everyone is pure when you are with them but this does not affect you and Ms Yang together.”

Zheng Xie said: “He He, you are different from those women.”

He He burst into tears. She wept sorrowfully with her shoulder quivering.

Zheng Xie had a heavy sense of powerlessness. He instinctively want to reach out and pat He He on the head, but halfway, turn to the other direction and finally gently pat her on her small arms. A moment later, he recovered his arm.

Just at this point, his cell phone rang. He listened for a moment, and then said: “Okay. I will be right back.” Then he stood up.

He He put down her hand and looked up with tears still on her face.

He reached out and pulled her up. “I will send you back. Where do you want to go? Company or home?”

He He did not resist, obediently wear her shoes. She followed him. After sitting in his car for about ten minutes, she said: “Drop me off here. I forgot that I drove over today.”

Zheng Xie did not stop the car. “Give me the keys. I will let Chen take your car and send it over. Take a good rest this few days. Do not think too much. I will not bother you for several days.”

||



## Chapter 23.4: Rather that it is a dream

*Finally Zheng Xie got the answer from He He although it was indirectly. And that leads to more knots in his heart now. What will he do next? Read on.....*

### Chapter 23.4: Rather that it is a dream

The company issue is deal very quickly. Because it is a loopholes in the management, a meeting was called. Those cautious people found that Zheng Xie was not in the right frame of mind.

He had always very careful in the meeting with observance eyes. He never interrupt other people when they are talking. Even if he disagree, he would never say anything but put it mildly: "If I do....."

Nobody dare to skip the meeting, because he only need to glance at them and it is enough to cause shame.

But today, Zheng Xie is beyond his normal self. More than one person realized it.

The meeting was chaired by vice president. The departmental manager responsible was giving a lengthy discussion. But most of the time, Zheng Xie did not raise his head. He only paddled with his pen on a piece of paper.

The eloquent spokesman felt a little embarrassed. Suspected that his speech is making his young boss bored. After he finished, there is a short pause, not knowing how to end. Zheng Xie suddenly said: "Can you explain in details on the third point that you mentioned earlier? I do not understand the content on what you are trying to say."

"Uh?" The spokesman temporary was stunned could not give any reaction.

Zheng Xie repeated his complex sentence again.

All that was presence were scared, felt that they had deeply wronged their boss.

Only Wei Zhi Xian could see through him. Zheng Xie really is not himself but his memory works very differently from the normal people. Sometime his brain is

like a tape recorder, the content is mechanically stored and he had the ability to turn it out later after finishing, just like what happen earlier.

Because Wei Zhi Xian took half a day off the next day, she stayed in the company to complete the stuff for the next day in advance. When she was getting ready to leave, she realized that Zheng Xie is still around. So she went in to remind him. She saw him carefully reading some papers.

She usually placed in the file according to the urgency into different color folder. Every two days, she would go and adjust the files again. What he had not finished processed, she will rearrange the order once again. The black file is typically the most urgent one that needs to be reviewed.

Zheng Xie had signed a huge stack of documents and placed them on top. And now, he is looking at the black file folder.

Wei Zhi Xian said: "That document is not very urgent."

Zheng Xie replied: "I know." In fact, he rarely work overtime as he considered overtime shows inefficiency and no manifestation of the humanitarian spirit.

Wei Zhi Xian stood for a moment and said: "I will help you to order your dinner."

"No need. I am not hungry. Thank you." Zheng Xie did not look up.

When yang Wei Qi called, he had already completed the black folder. He placed on the table to look at what he had completed. He was bored so played chess on the computer. He is a little tired and his mind is in a mess. In short, he does not want to go home.

Yang Wei Qi said: "A few days ago, you mentioned about a new store opening today and you want to go and try it. I have been waiting for your call."

Zheng Xie suddenly remembered. "I am sorry, I forgot."

Yang Wei Qi very generously said: "Never mind. Another day then since you are still busy in the company."

Zheng Xie looked up on the big screen on the computer. "YOU HAVE LOST." With some of confidence, he said: "Not too bad. It is almost over."

Yang Wei Qi said: "You have not eaten, right? I have not eaten too. I will wait

for you.”

Zheng Xie said: “No need. You go ahead and eat.”

He stayed at the office for a while. He had never had such a bad habit. When he intended to leave, Yang Wei Qi called again. She said: “Are you still in the office?”

Zheng Xie said: “I am planning to go now.”

Yang Wei Qi said: “Finished your work? I brought you some food. I am downstairs now.”

There is no one else in the empty building. When he went to the elevator to pick up Yang Wei Qi, he saw her carrying a bag filled with delicate little boxes.

“You do not need to trouble yourself. I can go home and eat.”

“When you get home, you will forget to eat.”

The rice is still hot. Zheng Xie took a few bites and then put down the chopsticks.

Yang Wei Qi said: “You eat so little. I queued for more than half an hour to buy these.”

Zheng Xie ate half of it.

He sent Yang Wei Qi home. Where she went to buy the food is an old city’s most lively streets. So there is no parking hence she took the taxi.

On the way, Zheng Xie is very quiet. He seems to have something to say but do not know how to begin. Yang Wei Qi noticed his silence and chooses to keep quiet as well.

Arriving at her house, she asked: “Do you want to come up today?”

Zheng Xie shook his head and said: “I am a little tired today.” Then he suddenly remembered something, turned to look at her and said: “Some time ago, you said want to go out for a two days’ vacation. Have you choose the place yet?”

Yang Wei Qi carefully looked at him. “Not yet. You seem very busy recently. Forget about it.”

Zheng Xie said: “I promise to accompany you for a short trip. I also want to tell

you something.”

Yang Wei Qi suddenly opened the door. She said: “I will probably have to travel tomorrow for work. Let’s talk when I come back. You go to bed early.” Not waiting for Zheng Xie to get down from the car, she turned and walked away.

She left in a hurry. Zheng Xie looked at her slender back disappearing into the door. He stayed in the car for a while and smoked a cigarette before leaving.

He almost did not sleep last night. He came home feeling sleepy and his head began to ache. He rummage in the medicine cabinet and found two aspirin and two sleeping pills. Checked that it is not expired, had some water and swallowed the pills.

Once he had cold and fever. Did not go to the doctor nor took any medicine. He held on for one night and the next day, weakly called He He. He He later came and prepared the medicine cabinet for him and put in all the long standing medicine. She rarely come to this residence but each time she come here, she would check again the medicine, throw out the expired one. She will then head downstairs to the pharmacy to get new ones.

Thinking about He He, his headaches became more severe. Even his chest began to ache.

Zheng Xie did not bother to shower and just went to bed. But he could not sleep peacefully and dreamt of a bunch of messy things. The story of the dream is confusing with no logic. He found himself waking up in a dream to found that it was another dream in the dream.

The next day, he was still in a low spirit. And everything was not smooth from early in the morning.

Without Wei Zhi Xian around, nothing seems to have gone right. Even when his subordinates makes mistakes, when correcting their mistakes he felt so bored and felt that there is no meaning to everything.

Zheng Xie is excellent in keeping his emotion, never get angry at his subordinates. But those who went to his office that day, would had prefer for him to throw his tantrum. It would have been better than getting the cold eyes looking at them.

At noon, he unexpectedly received a call from his father in person. His father is a busy man, unless it is something urgent, he would not call him. He usually ask the secretary to inform or to look for Zheng Xie. While from childhood, Zheng Xie had not done anything that would disrupt his father's affair.

Zheng Xie had a bad feeling about this.

Father asked a few question about his current situation. He generally reported in concise words about the recent work progress. Later his father said: "I heard that you have been dating a girl recently. And there are even marriage plans. Bring her back for a few days for me to see." Father's voice revealed a rare little joy.

Zheng Xie started feeling cold from his fingertips. He paused and then carefully asked: "Where did you hear such news." He is sure that his father never had a chance to hear any gossip. And even if he does, he will only laugh.

His father said: "He He"

The chill from his fingers gradually spread to the whole body.

||

## Chapter 24.1: Losing something beautiful

*In the last post, it was a cliff-hanging ending with Zheng Xie receiving a call from his father. From the telephone conversation with his father, we discover that He He had wanted to avoid Zheng Xie from making a rash decision because of what happen in the past, and decided to take it into her hand by telling Uncle Zheng about Yang Wei Qi and their intention to get married.*

*On the other hand, Zheng Xie finally realized a little how much He He mean to him. Or is it just him wanting to take responsibility over what happen? What did Zheng Xie do next? Read on and find out.....*

### Chapter 24.1: Losing something beautiful

When everything became out of control, it is an unspeakable experience.

Zheng Xie remember that a long time ago, someone had asked him, what He He actually means to him.

Perhaps it was his father asking, or perhaps it was his mother. He cannot remember exactly.

He really never thought about it. To him, He He is a matter of course existence. Just like how he cannot change who his parents are, nor change his personality. He He gets along with him well, eating and drinking every day. It is just so natural that they breathe the same air.

Maybe there were a few special moments where his mental state of mind will crack a little. He will have moments of trance and confusion. Fortunately, it had always been just an illusion, he could quickly change it.

For so long, he never had wanted to change anything. He felt that there is no need to change anything because He He have always been there. And he kept the most appropriate distance, taking the step back a little further. A little further and then a little closer. The distance is a balance. Even if the external conditions are changes, nothing will affect their relationship.

Until that night, he suddenly realized that in this world nothing is really right and proper. Any existence will eventually deteriorate.

He did not managed to think carefully about the whole thing. But in the jumble of his mind, a voice told him clearly, he had to make some changes. Otherwise some of the outcome may potentially be undesirable.

Zheng Xie had never had met with such a tangled issue.

A friend once said that his brain is like a high-precision calculator. No matter how complex things are, he can quickly break down into numerous parts and then use the most expeditious way to solve them. Just like simple arithmetic.

So this time, he tried to use the most reasonable procedures to solve the issues on hand.

After confirming the truth, appease He He and then gain the time on hand..... he really thought about how it would be good in the end. He thought that there may be some upsetting time. But he believed that, giving it a little time, he would come up with the best solutions for everyone.

But he never thought that He He will surprised him and even cross the line, completely messed up his plans.

In his heart, he has always been deliberately kept a good image for many years in front of He He. At that time, as a child, He He is very timid, very delicate and often gets into helpless trouble. Constantly rely on him, pestering him to help her resolve while she obediently wait for the result.

He He did not know since when, He He is no longer the same He He in his memory.

In the evening, Zheng Xie called Dr Sun.

Dr. Sun is father's longtime friend while mother was still alive. After retirement, he served as his father's physician. His father is in a poor health recently. Outside of work time, Dr. Sun has been by his father's side substantially.

Zheng Xie asked about his father's health before intentionally topic turned to himself. Sure enough, Dr. Sun asked: "Ah Xie, you cover the whole thing very tightly. Have already discussed marriage with girlfriend but never share with family. I am very happy about it for you."

Zheng Xie quietly asked: “Where did you hear that?”

Dr. Sun cheerfully said: “Go... and play the fool. Before this, I have heard about it in the wind but did not take it seriously. Until He He confirmed it, only I dare to believe it.”

“He He? She specifically call you to share this with you?” Zheng Xie pretended to be surprised. He felt that she would not have taken the initiative to call his father so he need to confirm the severity of the matter.

“You still have the nerve to say. He He is closer to your dad than you. The last time I told her about your dad’s illness strike again. So this morning, she purposely called me to share some old folk’s remedies, let me refer to use. Today when she called, you father happen to be here. Once he knows that it is He He on the phone, he took over the phone and chat with her for a long time. Your dad really liked He He.”

Zheng Xie knows that He He often contact Dr. Sun. This is because Dr. Sun and her mother are neighbors. Whenever her mother is not well, He He will know about it through Dr. Sun.

But He He usually pick when his father is not around to call Dr. Sun. Because from childhood, she had been a little afraid of his father. She once said that when she see his father, she always had the feeling like she is meeting an interviewer, so she is normally nervous.

So she is very clearly when Dr. Sun is by his father’s side and only call when he is alone.

From young, his father had always been fond of her. In her childhood, when his father saw her dancing, he will always tease her. He will coax her with stories. When she has grown up, when seeing her, often would ask her many questions.

So He He today deliberately picked the time when father is around when she call Dr. Sun.

He did not know when the usual like small rabbit has become so smart and calculative.

Dr. Sun said on the phone with a smile: “That Wei Qi is a very good girl. I have meet her a few times. Very calm and not squeamish. Her home and your family



origins are deep with her grandfather as your father's old boss. Her uncle is your father's former colleagues and his partner for many years. I never seen you so serious about a girlfriend to the extent of wanting to marry hastily. Now I guess my fear is really redundant. Today, even your dad say, you have a sense of proportion since childhood. You rarely hear your dad praised much as it is not easy for him to boast."

Zheng Xie gently pressed his forehead. His veins began to gently jump. Each jump as if his head is pumping.

Dr. Sun said: "Ah Xie, your love relationship is so smooth, but how you can interfere with other people's love relationship?"

Zheng Xie slightly frown: "What do you mean?"

"Ha Ha. We asked He He today if she have a boyfriend. He He kept quiet for a long time and then answer that you do not like her boyfriend. As a result, we laughed for a long time. What are you doing?"

| |

## Chapter 24.2: Losing something beautiful

*He He made the first attack before Zheng Xie was able to make some plans... Hahahahahaha..... that has certainly taken Zheng Xie by surprised as he had never expected that from her. So now, his father thinks that he wants to marry Yang Wei Qi. While on the other hand, Zheng Xie is getting more and more desperate about wanting to make the right decision. So what will he do next? What is He He going to do next? Will she try to avoid him and leave?*

### Chapter 24.2: Losing something beautiful

After ending the call, Zheng Xie still hold on the phone for a long time. Until the beep sounded only he realized that he never hang up the phone.

His mind still echoed Dr. Sun last sentence: “He He said, she wants to come back and live with her mother.”

Zheng Xie is in no position and no way to stop He He from returning to her mother’s side. So he can only wait just like waiting for examination result or judgement for He He to inform him that she is leaving.

Suddenly he lost the initiative and did not feel good. Zheng Xie felt too weak.

But the one who told him is not He He but her boss Cao Miao Miao. And it was just a day later.

Cao Miao Miao said: “He He applied for a long holiday and I have approved it. Anything happen within her family? Of you have scared her away?”

Zheng Xie heart a little tight. He asked: “When is she leaving? For how long?”

Cao Miao Miao said: “From the day after tomorrow. Three months.”

Zheng Xie suppressed his breath to calm down and said: “What is the reason for her to apply for the leave?”

“He He said that her mother recently are in poor health, so she wanted to go back to spend time with her. Also, her former boyfriend is also over there. He He has always been a very obedient person. It is hard to refuse her request. Not to mention that all the cases that she has been working on have all been completed

yesterday.”

Zheng Xie found that he had undervalued He He’s capability.

He finally made the phone call. He asked He He: “Do you intend to only tell me after you have reached the destination?”

He He whispered: “I have not taken vacation for a long time. I just want to go home to see my mother. It is only a few hours away on the road. If I really want to escape, I would have fled to a place where no one could find me.....”

Her phrase ‘home’ suddenly stung Zheng Xie. All along, the city was never considered as ‘home’. It is only a place where his father work, the administrative center of the province. He, His mother and He He, they have been staying in the home here, and later after studying abroad, they had returned home here as well.

In this heart, this city is home to He He and him. Although he has a house in this city, he only was able to meet He He a few times a month. But he always felt that even though mother is gone, the city’s home still exists.

He never thought that the home in He He’s heart and in his heart, is it not the same.

And He He is not secretly slipping away.

Since He He has said it like that, so close in distance, then stealing it away has no meaning.

But she did not say goodbye to him obediently.

When he was with his client, He He sent a short message: I am leaving.

Zheng Xie excused himself and went out to make the call.

He He answered in her usual tone: “I am now at the train station. They have started checking the tickets.”

Zheng Xie asked: “Are you alone?”

He He said: “Yes. There is nothing to bring along. Everything is available at home.” At the mentioned of ‘home’ again by He He, Zheng Xie felt his heart pricked.

An impulse suddenly raised in Zheng Xie. He wanted to keep her from leaving. He said: "You wait for me there. I will be right over."

He He sounded a little anxious. "You do not come. The train is just about to start."

Zheng Xie said: "If I am not there, you are not allowed to go."

He He said: "It is really too late. The train is leaving in about 15 minutes."

Zheng Xie said: "You wait for me." He hang up.

He returned to the conference room and explained before rushing downstairs. The driver, Chen has already parked the car downstairs. He did not call for the car. This must be the arrangement of Wei Zhi Xian.

He let Chen off and drove the car all the way to the train station. The road is always congested. So no matter how good his driving is, there are many cars that he needs to slog through. There were a few times where the driver of the other cars glared at him.

The phone rang a few times. He did not pick up the calls. When he was finally forced to stop in front of a red light, he took out his cell phone. There were three missed call from He He.

He called her back. He He said in a little crying voice: "I have changed my ticket to the next train. So you do not hurry. Drive slowly. I guarantee you that I will not leave before seeing you in person."

His nerve finally relaxed. He found himself holding tightly onto the steering wheel. His palm was a little damp too.

## Chapter 24.3: Losing something beautiful

*And so He He made the decision to leave. Would Zheng Xie be able to stop her from leaving? Will both of them finally cleared their mind and heart and realized that they cannot live without each other?*

*As I was translating this chapter, I could imagine some of the scene as it is happening on the TV screen.... Some interesting and dramatic read. Enjoy!*

### Chapter 24.3: Losing something beautiful

He He really did not leave. She was sitting in a corner of the waiting room looking at her cell phone. There is no luggage in front of her.

There are many people in the crowded and noisy waiting room. But he saw her with one glance. He walked towards her.

When Zheng Xie is only a few meters away from her, she suddenly looked up and then saw him.

He He smiled and said: "I am not a child. I am going to a place that is so close. You do not need to send me."

Zheng Xie could not laugh. He looked at her quietly: "You want to go back to accompany aunty or to avoid me?"

He He's smile slowly disappear. She looked down: "Both. I am going back to accompany my mum as her health is really not good lately. And also to escape you. Because you now need to remain calm. I would also like to take a break. I had recently worked a lot of overtime....."

She paused, looked up with courage: "Cen Shi is now also there."

Zheng Xie gradually cooled down. He said: "Xiao He He, is this considered as suddenly it has become urgent?"

"No." He He bravely looked into his eyes. "I used to like him. Really like him. You know already, things that I like, I cannot change easily. I am determined to end it before because.....I have a knot in my heart. So when he contacted me again, I turned him down. But now that I have the knot in my heart resolved, I

am willing to give him a chance and also give myself a chance.”

Zheng Xie kept quiet as he does not know what to say. So he just look at her flatly. He He saw in his eyes a variety of emotions that she had never seen before. Those entwining emotions make her uneasy.

She continued to smile. She laughed very reluctantly but fortunately Zheng Xie does not intend to appreciate it. Though he seems to be looking at her, she knew that he had no idea what he was looking at.

He He said: “What I said the other day is the truth. We don’t mention about that incident anymore ok. Take it as you never know about it. And I in fact, have long ago forgotten about it. If not..... if not..... because both Shi Lin and Cen Shi came simultaneously, I really have forgotten.”

“Then why you want to leave?”

“..... I missed my mother. I want to take a rest.....” He He continue to adhere to her reasons.

“He He, what are you afraid of?”

He He bowed her down, for a long time before softly said: “As I told you before, you will always be my brother. Protect me for lifetime. I do not want to change our relationship.”

Zheng Xie said: “I will protect you forever, will never change. You stay. Don’t leave.”

“.....It is better for us to be separate for a while. If you see me often, it will interfere with your judgement.”

This sentence make Zheng Xie think of what has been avoided over the past two days: “He He, you should not make decision for me.... You should not interfere.”

He He looked at him with a sparkling eyes: “I did not make any decision for you to Uncle Zheng. I am just stating the fact that you want to marry Ms Yang. This is true....”

Zheng Xie cried: “He He!” but could not continue.

He He recite just like she is reading: “Do you want to tell me that you love me

for over twenty years already. From the moment I was born you had love me. You have been waiting for me to grow up. All those relationship with those women are just my substitute. This also goes to Ms Yang. Now you realized the fact that the person that you want to marry has always been me....”

Zheng Xie paled but was unable to say anything.

He He said quietly: “哥哥, you have thought me before. It is important to be honest and honor the commitment that you had promised. You had promised to be my brother and protect me my whole life. And you have also promised Ms Yang to marry her. Although you may not have formally proposed, but your attitude towards her, your eyes at the mention of her in front of others, have explained how much you really want to marry her. You can cheat others but you cannot fool yourself. Isn't that right? So please..... do not over some trivial manner, go against your principles in life.”

哥哥 (*pin ying: gē ge*) – older brother

The waiting room is very noisy, someone talking on the phone loudly. Children are crying. But the corner where Zheng Xie and He He are, it is quiet. They fell silent. The way they look at each other, is trying to see the result of their argument from each other eye. However, there is no result.

There are so much emotions in Zheng Xie's eyes that it is hard to tell anything. In the eyes of He He, it is clear, obviously nothing.

The loudspeaker voice sounded: “Are there anymore XXXX train passengers that have not gone aboard? The train is about to start.”

He He suddenly come to understand, that is the train that she is to take. She said: “I am leaving. You take care. Less smoking and less drinking.”

Zheng Xie sent her off to the platform where the train stop. Because it is the departure station, the passengers had boarded, only the crew standing at each car door.

Zheng Xie sent He He to the car. He looked at the slender back of He He. When she was about to step onto the car, he shouted: “He He!” His voice was light, almost only he can hear. He does not know why he call out her name.

But this time, He He turned back her head. She looked at him and then

suddenly ran off the train and into his arms gently hugging him. Her head on his chest, she said softly: “哥哥, goodbye.” She did not wait, she turn and ran back to the train. While boarding the train, she slipped a little and the crew helped her by holding her hand. Then she got onto the train and then the train slowly glide out of the station.

Zheng Xie stood there watching the train go farther and farther away. He remembered back in his childhood where he accompanied his mother to watch soap drama on the TV. In the train station, people in the train will leaned out of the window desperately waving while the people outside of the train will run all the way with the train until they could no longer keep up.

But just now, he did not even see where He He seat is mean to be. And He He also did not leaned out of the window to wave at him. He stood on the spot, the foot seem to have been rooted to the ground, unable to make any move forward.

His heart felt empty. As if there had been a burglary at home, and everything is turned upside down. He was anxious but do not know what exactly he had lost.

| |



## Chapter 25.1: Separation does not mean pain

*This is the start of the 4th week since I returned to work. It has been a busy and crazy period for me as we were also rushing against time to complete the project. What usually takes 3 months needs to be completed in 3 weeks! Tough but fun at the same time. Tiring but reading and translating this story had helped to make the day bearable. Here, I would like to thank you everyone for the lovely message and support. Truly appreciate the encouragement words, concerns that you all have extended.*

*He He left in the last chapter. She decided to go back home to spend some quality time with her mother. Is it really heading home to spend time with her mother or she is running away from Zheng Xie although she claimed that she is not? What is up her sleeves this time? What is she thinking and planning to do? Three months is a very long sabbatical.*

*I must admit that I am a little surprise when I started the translation of this chapter. Indeed another unexpected twist to the story. From the last round, I thought that Cen Shi finally had left her life. Unexpectedly, Cen Shi is back! And some little surprises about his side of the story from the past. Interesting read I must say... so enjoy the read today!*

### Chapter 25.1: Separation does not mean pain

Every route can lead to Rome (每条路都可以通向罗马 – Měi tiáo lù dōu kěyǐ tōng xiàng luómǎ)

In the B city train station parking, Cen Shi sits in the car waiting.

In the car, the songs quietly flows. He casually looked at the clock, He He will arrive at the train station in about ten minutes.

Cen Shi always had a good time management. When he was still in school, he always step into the class one minute before the class starts. Always attracting the attention of the teachers.

By stepping into the classroom at the ring of the bell while giving them a sunny smile, the teachers will not stay angry.

He almost laughed at himself. Today, he had arrived so much earlier.

He He had asked him not to pick her up. But he heard that in the recent years, trains had arrived earlier, so he decided to sit back and wait.

He stared at the station main door. The crowd streamed out through the gates. This should be the arrival of a train. Calculating the time, this should be the train that He He took.

He got down from the car and try to look for He He through the crowd. The stream of people continued flowing.

His mind start wandering from his highly concentrated gaze.

He tried his best to remember the first time he met He He. Where and what time?

Perhaps they had cross path many times in the playground, cafeteria or study room but never paid any attention.

Until that day, they were playing basketball in the court. Opposite the basket, a group of boys occupied the seats.

The group of girls' level are pretty bad. It is estimated that they are there to take a break from the pressure of preparing for the upcoming examination.

Suddenly a senior brother said: "Look! Faster look. Isn't that the little cameo angel that suddenly was talked about on the campus BBS?"

Cen Shi turned and looked over the direction that they were pointing. Just at the same moment, the girl must have felt their gaze as she unconsciously turned and looked at their direction. So the ball that she was throwing heavily hit the rim and rebound. Cen Shi walked straighter towards them. The girl trot chasing the ball. Cen Shi move to block the ball. Then gently lift the leg to pick up the ball and using his hand, reached out to her.

The girl shyly said thank you, her face turned slightly red for a moment.

Cen Shi remember the discussion about this girl on the BBS. Very unusual for a girl, dressed in a simple and clean look. Not easy noticeable in a crowd. When looking in a close distance, one could see that she had a pure, almost transparent and cute look.

His buddies said: "This little girl is really pretty looking close up. Hey, did you hear about her mysterious life. Some people say that she is an orphan. It was also said that her father was a provincial official. Haiz, children of cadres."

Another man said: "These two identities are similar ah. One of those pampered princess at home."

A third brother said: "Do not only look at this little girl clean and simple look. She is not simple. The school brother next door wrote to her a few love letters and sent a week of flowers. As a result, he was badly bruised from rebuffed. And now every day would sing a heartbroken song in the corridor. We learned that the brother, is an experienced man, so this little girl is definitely somebody."

Cen Shi said: "Oh come on! Obviously someone whom had never fallen in love before."

"Cheah!" A group of people booed him. Then the moment of the mischievous gambling was established.

When Xiao He He fumbled the second time and the ball rolled over to them, Cen Shi took the initiative to pick up the ball and give it to her. "Your posture is wrong. Let me teach you."

At that time, he did not put the gamble too seriously. He He whom is will not act pettish, is very happy.

Later, in fact it was him whom was dumped. But he did not mind too much. He was too young back then. He had tried to save the relationship but without success, so he just let it go.

Until years later when he unexpectedly met her again. He then realized that his regret in the past is more than expected. But he never really want to think about it.

He did not fully figured out He He's temper. But he can confidently say that, in fact, he understand He He more than Zheng Xie. Those words he said when they were saying goodbye the last time they met, he was only polite when he said "Look for me if you have anything" he never expected that He He will really call him.

He He have a stubborn personality. Once she had decided on something, no

matter what others say, will not change her mind. Now she had not wanted to see him, so she would not bother calling him for any help. Not even to mention that she has a magical wand omnipotent brother.

So when He He called him the day before yesterday and said: “Cen Shi, are you willing to do me a favor?” He was total surprised.

A few minutes later, the crowd has become scarce but He He is still nowhere in sight. After another few minutes, people began crowding up again. Another train must have arrived.

Cen Shi began to dial He He’s phone as he would like to ask her whether the train was late. Ringing over and over again, there is still no answer.

||

## Chapter 25.2: Separation does not mean pain

*Wow! It is already the last day of the month. Time really flies when one is busy. We have already almost half way into the year. Hope everyone's year been a fantastic one so far.*

*Anyone surprised to read that Cen Shi is back? I am.... But after reading his side of the story, I personally feel that he may not be what we all thought of him to be? What happen between him and He He now? Is she using him to get rid of Zheng Xie?*

### Chapter 25.2: Separation does not mean pain

He decided to go and query at the train station. But He He's call came just in time.

She was still on the train. It is not a quiet car. There are the sound of the tracks and children crying.

He He said: "I missed the time, so took the later train."

Cen Shi is finally relieved.

When He He finally walked out of the station, she had her head looking down. She walked in front of his car but did not see him.

Cen Shi honked and scared the daylights out of He He. She finally realized his presence, open the car door and sat down.

She only brought a big bag, stuffed bulgingly. Not much different from her normal style.

Cen Shi wondered: "Did you forget your luggage on the train?"

He He said: "Nope. I did not bring any. I only had this."

"Thought you would be staying for a long time?"

"There is not much that is required. Anything that I need, I can buy them here."

Cen Shi laughed: "Are you running away from something?"

He only said it casually but seems like he had strike to the point, she glared at him. Cen Shi did not mind.

The car moved ahead. He He said: "You have gone onto the wrong direction."

Cen Shi said: "You have not taken your lunch right?"

He He said: "I am not hungry. I would like to go home to see my mum."

"Considered it as you accompanying me for lunch. Besides, at this hour, aunty should still be working. After dinner, I will take you home, and visit aunty at the same time."

In a panic, He He asked: "What do you want to do?"

Cen Shi said: "Is there an issue? We are now 'boyfriend and girlfriend'. Meeting aunty is also being polite right?"

He He frown: "In fact, I am only using you. This is to escape the blind dates that the elders are arranging for me."

Cen Shi gave a bitter smile: "You have said this two days ago, so I am not misleading you. You really do not need to re-emphasize to break my self-esteem."

He He is apologetic: "So, you don't have to get into so deep. Just for show only after all."

Cen Shi laughed: "My work ethic is very good. Even if it is temporary, I will give my best."

He and He He bickers and smiled. Then he took her to the hotel where mountain chicken soup is sold as their main dish.

He He said: "I do not eat meat. Very greasy."

Cen Shi said: "Replenish your body a little. You lost weight from the last time I saw you. You look pale too."

After dinner, He He took out some paper and handed to Cen Shi: "You read these. If there is no problem, we should sign this."

Cen Shi said: "What is this? A marriage agreement?"

He He stared at him: "Talk less. Let's do an agreement for 'Friendly Co-

Existence'. It is better for us to list down five principles of this relationship."

"Only five?"

He He said: "There are several rules for each principles."

Cen Shi puff out laughing: "Xiao He He, you have watched too much Korean dramas."

He He retorted: "You watched too much Korean drama. Your family watched a lot of Korean dramas?"

Cen Shi continued to laugh: "Isn't it in Korean drama that they constantly signed this kinda of agreement?"

He He became angry: "Based on what that these are exclusive to Korean only? Are you Korean? What is yours? Even Marks is yours!"

Cen Shi said: "Well, I withdraw these words that I have said. You are so long winded. Since when your words become so good? You have not come across a river and you are already looking for the bridge?"

He He said: "Well, this is the matter of principles related to national dignity."

Cen Shi said: "Okay, I am wrong. I am a traitor to the nation. I will sign it, okay?"

He He's phone rang. As she picked it up and offer greetings, the phone disconnected because it had ran out of battery.

He He searched in her deep and wide big bag. Searched for a long time but still not able to find the other battery.

He He's things from the bag messed the table. She saw from the corner of her eyes, the laughing Cen Shi.

She looked up and glared at him. Cen Shi re-track his smile. He respectfully offer his own phone.

The call just now came from Su Ren Ran. He He returned her call and chatted for a while.

She holds the phone and thought, she should also reported her safe arrival to Zheng Xie.

Cen Shi's phone is the same brand as hers. She compiled a text message and sent it to Zheng Xie. After pressing the 'send' button, she remembered that this is not her phone but it is too late already.

Cen Shi realized it and then gently pulled He He's earlobe. He said: "Cannot remember the phone number? Stupid. Just change the phone card over."

He He said: "No need. There is no need to inconvenience you further. I will go and get a spare battery later."

Zheng Xie should know that it is her. They will always have this level of understanding.

||



## Chapter 25.3: Separation does not mean pain

*So He He is using Cen Shi as a 'fake' boyfriend. I wonder why Cen Shi and not Shi Lin?*

*In the meantime, back over the other side, Zheng Xie is clearly missing He He. And he is slowly realizing how much she mean to him. Is it too late? How is Zheng Xie coping with the heartbreak now?*

*Enjoy the read!*

### Chapter 25.3: Separation does not mean pain

Zheng Xie sent off the guests. He went back to his office tiredly.

He looked at the time. He He should have already reached. He dialed her phone over and over again and received only the message that says that her phone is out of reach. Zheng Xie's heart cool a little bit.

He then viewed the missed calls and text messages and finally see a 'I have arrived safely' message from an unknown number that is not signed.

It is a local city number. A relatively new number. Zheng Xie suspect that He He perhaps wishes to save money on roaming charges hence had gotten herself a phone card. In order to confirm his hunch, he dialed the number.

He dilated three times in a row but received the engage tone. The number has been busy.

When he patiently dial again, someone finally pick up. A familiar male voice said: "Hello. Who are you?"

Zheng Xie kept quiet for a moment. His computer brain generally tried to remember who this man is, even the phone manners become lacking.

He was thinking of saying a few words about calling the wrong number before hanging up but God is deliberately going against him. He heard the voice that he wanted to hear. Very far away, does not sound real. But he could still hear her voice, as if she had shrunk into a tiny villain, hiding somewhere in the corner of the phone.

On the other end, Cen Shi has been picking up calls after all. He was on the phone for at least twenty minutes.

He He is sitting on the lounge waiting for him while flipping through at least two travel magazines.

She finally got impatient and when Cen Shi picked up another call, turned and said to him: "Cen Shi, I take the taxi home on my own. You go and do your own stuff." Then she turn to go.

Cen Shi clutching the telephone receiver away from him and said: "Hey, wait for me for a short while. Haiz, why is your temper getting more and more strange...."

He He said: "I am menopausing. You forgive me."

Cen Shi said "This is not menopause. This is obviously a rebellious youth symptoms."

He then remembered that the call earlier is a strange number, so apologize to the caller. But don't know when, the other party had hung up the phone. The phone fell silent.

On the sparsely populated wide roads, Zheng Xie drives alone.

The sky is hazy, the weather forecast had said that there will be heavy rain in the evening.

Insects are flying very low, leaving a little trace on the car windshield as they hit against them. When another dragonfly hit on the glass, Zheng Xie slowed his speed.

Today was his mother's birthday. When she was alive, she love quietness. So she choose the family cemetery in a secluded outskirts.

There were very few cars all the way. Although there were trees on the roadside, but it was extremely lonely.

Over the years, Zheng Xie have gone through this way countless times, up and down the same road for Mother's birthday, Anniversaries, Tomb Sweeping Festival, Halloween and Mid-Autumn Festival. But he never felt like this barren road so lonely.

He recalled that in the past, each time, He He is by his side. So he did not go alone.

In fact, not so long ago, he had thought, the next time he is visiting his mother, he will take Yang Wei Qi along together.

And when he think of these things, his heart will turn into a chaos.

He has many things to sort out. But when he often think about them, he will get a headache. He will subconsciously refuse to think about them.

Before this, an elder love to say this: “车到山前必有路。” When he was younger, he felt that the meaning of this phrase is too passive, unwilling to agree. But now, he finally realized that what the elder said is true.

车到山前必有路 (*pin ying: chē dào shān qián bì yǒu lù*) – *mean directly translated: The cart will find its way round the hill when it gets there. This phrase means that things will eventually sort themselves out.*

The happening recently to me is like a calculation problems. Using different approaches will lead to completely different results. In the past, for so many years, he specialized in using the most concise way to solve problems that leads to only a definite answer.

So now, he is confused. As if he is caught in the mud. Cannot do anything. The more he struggle, the worst the situation becomes.

A heavy truck roared past him. Zheng Xie got scared a little. He realized that he had actually drove off the road a little.

Before mother's gravestone are piled with baskets and bouquets. There had been people whom had come before him.

The basket is very chic. It is a rectangular basket patchwork clusters with pale blue lined with white daisies. His mother's favorite flower. Like a little bonsai garden, the ribbon tied around the basket is very dedicated and detailed, fasten with silk flowers.

Next to the basket are two bunnies. One fat and the other thin. One looks naïve with a grin while the other with a simmering mouth looking like it had been wronged. The clothes stiches on the rabbit are embroidered patterns.

He He had come for a visit without him knowing.

From the last visit it has been several months. But around the tombstone it is very clean. Not a single leaves are around. Zheng Xie using his fingers, swab the stroke along mother's name on the tombstone. Not a single dust on his fingertips.

He He probably stayed a long time there, cleaning every single place surrounding the tomb.

He looked at the tombstone inscription. There is no father's name on the inscription, only his and He He's name on the monument.

He He had never call his mother 'mother' in this lifetime. She has always been calling mother 'aunty.' But on his mother's monument, it is inscribed as 'Daughter He He'

He had previously never paid any attention to this detail. But in his heart now is an unspeakable feeling.

||

## Chapter 25.4: Separation does not mean pain

*Zheng Xie is surprised to hear Cen Shi's voice over the phone when he called back the unfamiliar number. So he hang up when he heard the voice that he wanted to hear badly in a distance from the phone.*

*A little surprised when he visited his mother's tomb and found out that He He was there before. And her name inscribed as Daughter on his mother's tombstone. Wow! His mother really love He He that much.*

*Another interesting read today. Seems to me that the chapters are pacing much faster than how it was before this. Enjoy the read!*

### **Chapter 25.4: Separation does not mean pain**

The first drop of rain started falling. Zheng Xie remembered that he forgot to bring the umbrella. And his car is parked at least a few hundred meters away. The rain that the weather forecasted has actually started ahead of time.

He adjusted the fabric flowers and rabbit that He He made in a few positions before finding a place where it will be hidden the most from the rain. Then Zheng Xie quickly ran back to his car.

The rain is very anxious. After a few raindrops, the rain soon becomes very heavy. When Zheng Xie got into the car, he has already been semi-drenched.

The rain becomes harder and harder with heavy fog. Zheng Xie could hardly see the road.

Zheng Xie's heart felt uneasy. Such a remote place, how did He He come? If she is driving her car, has she safely got down yet? When he was coming up the mountain, he did not see any car.

He grew more and more unease. Finally coming down, he called over and over again but could not get through to He He.

Zheng Xie told himself. It is He He not wanting to answer his phone. There will never be anything else.

Because it is the weekend, and the heavy downpour, there is a bad traffic jam

on the road into the city. There are lots of car seen on the road, unable to move.

Zheng Xie is trapped in the middle of the road. He switched on some soothing music but it did not helped him. Instead he got more and more impatience and nervous. So he began to dial He He's phone while getting more and more despair.

Finally someone picked up the call. A strange voice asked: "May I ask how you are related to the owner of this phone?" Zheng Xie felt his heart sink into the abyss at the moment.

Zheng Xie heard someone say: "I am her brother." He was not sure whether it was his voice.

"Your sister and a friend had a little accident. They are now in XX Hospital. You come over and have a look."

The traffic congestion on the road is serious. It is difficult to even move one meter. The rain continued blurring the car window.

Although the other party had confirmed that He He is alright, but sweat started to form on Zheng Xie's forehead, back and even palms. He found himself unable to hold the steering wheel.

He barely moved his car forward a few metres. He then call his assistance phone: "I am on the seventh road. There is a bad traffic jam. Immediately come over and help me deal with something."

Then, he took the umbrella, open the car door and got out.

This is the most central part of the city. Dressed in raincoats, there are several policemen there to maintain the order. Someone immediately came towards him. "You! What are you doing?"

Zheng Xie hands over his car keys and a business card into his hand. "Sorry to trouble you." Then he walked away through the layers of cars. The surprised young policeman took a long time to react. He then shouted angrily behind Zheng Xie: "Rich people can be so arrogant ah?"

From where he is to the hospital mentioned over the phone earlier is only two blocks. Because there is a bad traffic jam the whole road, Zheng Xie ran all the

way. Even the umbrella that he took is not used. After all, his clothes were already wet.

The feeling of heading into the execution ground before Zheng Xie entered the emergency room. His brain is blank, as it just waiting for result.

When Zheng Xie went in, He He is sitting on the stool beside the bed quietly with her head down wearing the clothes that look too big on her. From his point, He He although looked pale but does not look hurt.

Also the man lying on the bed, probably the 'friend' that was mentioned over the phone.

But Zheng Xie heart finally returned to normal.

He He sense someone had come in and slowly raised her head. Their eyes met. He could not see any expression on He He's face. Surprised, wronged, pitiful, no expression just a blank look.

Zheng Xie turned speechless for a moment. He just look and feel happy to see He He is okay. Now to say a few words will only feel hypocritical. So he just kept quiet.

He He looked at him for a while, then lowered her eyes to look at the man lying on the bed.

Zheng Xie turned at the direction that she is looking. The man who does not seem to be hurt, face is very clean with a layer of bandages wrapped around the head. His eyes are closed, apparently still in a coma.

In such a state, even the most familiar people will feel strange. But Zheng Xie recognized him.

Cen Shi. He He's first boyfriend and first love. As well as perhaps her current boyfriend.

The Emergency room is a bit messy. Zheng Xie appeased He He with a few words and then went out to make a phone call. Pretty quickly, people change Cen Shi into a single suite. After a while, another person, the President came. With him is the doctor on duty to deal with the accident and traffic police whom explained to Zheng Xie patiently what had happen and the patient's condition.

On the slippery road due to the heavy rain, along the way down, the other vehicle driving on the wrong lane caused the accident. At the moment of the crash, Cen Shi instinctively hit the steering wheel. And he was hugging He He, so he got into a more serious hurt. While, He He only hit her head by the impact and was in coma for an hour.

||



## Chapter 25.5: Separation does not mean pain

*From the last chapter, Zheng Xie became restless in his heart when he discover that He He is back and could not reached her. Worried about her, he called over and over again and finally someone picked up her phone. To his despair, He He was involve in a car accident. So he rushed over to the hospital. Luckily He He looks okay and is not seriously hurt.*

*In the meantime, Cen Shi whom was protecting He He during the accident was more seriously hurt and still in coma. What happen next?*

*Enjoy the read!*

### Chapter 25.5: Separation does not mean pain

He He just sat and stared, refused to drink and do not speak.

The Hospital Dean said: "This girl is probably in shocked. The young man's man injury is not too serious. He should be awake before nightfall."

Very quickly, Zheng Xie's assistants arrived with a set of dry clothes for him. After that, they went around to help him deal with his instructions.

Zheng Xie arranged everything for them. And then he moved in a bench and sat down beside He He, quietly accompanying her while waiting.

He He look very tired but been struggling to stay strong. Her lips are very dry and she gently lick it to keep it moist.

Zheng Xie got up and handed her a glass of water. "You go and lie down for a while. When he wakes up, I will call you." He would like to ask, why you didn't tell me when you come back but finally decided against it.

He He turned and gave him a childlike look. Zheng Xie gently place the cup of water into her hand. She finally decided to have a drink. But she drank the water too quickly and choke herself.

Zheng Xie gently pat her back. He He took a gentle breath and gently ducked his hand.

Zheng Xie said: "Do not worry. According to President Wang, he will be fine...."

He He nodded slightly. After a short moment, said: "He said there will be heavy rain here today but I insisted on coming back. He recently caught a cold and he is not familiar with the road here. If..... In short, it is caused from my stubbornness." After she finished saying it, she bit her lips, leaving a white print.

Zheng Xie stood up, wanting to reach out to touch her hair to appease her. But in the end, he decided not to. He said: "I go out for a moment."

Zheng Xie smoked a cigarette on the terrace. It is still raining outside. His newly changed of clothes has gotten a little wet. He waited for the smoke to be cleared before heading back to the ward. Cen Shi has woken up. Zheng Xie stood at the doorway and chooses not to go in.

Cen Shi is not badly hurt. He could easily sit himself up after waking up.

He He helped him to sit up while keep saying: "Be careful and don't do any drastic movement."

Cen Shi looked confused: "Who are you? Where is this?"

He He's hand stopped in mid-air and she turned paler. Zheng Xie also was taken aback.

Cen Shi saw Zheng Xie, he bowed his head slightly, cracked his lips and turn towards He He and laughed: "Playing with you. You thought it is true? Such a gentle hit, you think it would be so serious?"

He He hold up her hand wanting to punch him but Cen Shi turned held her hand while lively playing with her. But tears ran down her face. She thought about the joke and started to smile but tears still in her eyes and face.

There is a box of tissue next to the bed. Cen Shi pulled a piece of tissue and handed to her: "Laughing and crying. You are really funny. I am fine. I am only teasing you. Are you hurt in anyway?" Cen Shi turned and look towards the door at Zheng Xie and smile: "I am sorry Mr Zheng for alarming you. Thank you for coming to see me."

Zheng Xie barely squeeze a smile: "I should thank you for protecting He He."

No one accosted the moment, the scene were cold. Zheng Xie said: "The doctor will be here shortly. Later there will be nursing care that will come and

take care of you. He He, I will send you home to change your clothes.”

Cen Shi said politely: “Do not bother. I will contact the company to come later and help.”

Zheng Xie more politely said: “It is not a bother. This is considered He He’s matter. It is weekend. Contacting your company over the weekend, I will feel very sorry.”

Cen Shi said: “Then, I will politely accept the arrangement.”

He He turned to Zheng Xie and said: “I will not go back. I will stay here with Cen Shi.”

Zheng Xie glanced at her: “Okay. I will get you some clothes. You go and get some rest. Ah Liu has been outside. Look for him for help if you need anything.”

Cen Shi turned and said to He He: “Why don’t you go back and rest. That way, you can help me cook some porridge.”

He He said: “There is a porridge shop outside the hospital. I will go and buy for you.”

Cen Shi showed a pitiful and naïve miserable look: “I prefer to eat the one that you personally cooked.”

When He He turned to leave together with Zheng Xie, Zheng Xie turned to look at Cen Shi. At the same time, Cen Shi are watching him too. His eyes indicated that he is thinking hard about something.

No matter how he wanted to express, Cen Shi is still He He’s savior. Intentionally or unintentionally, he had just did Zheng Xie a favour earlier. Zheng Xie tried to smile towards Cen Shi but could not do it.

Cen Shi face is equally stiff.

## Chapter 25.6: Separation does not mean pain

*Luckily Cen Shi and He He were not badly hurt. I wonder if Cen Shi knew the reason why He He is using him to act has her 'fake' boyfriend? Is he aware of He He's feeling for Zheng Xie and how she is trying to avoid him? Is Cen Shi aware of Zheng Xie's feeling for He He yet?*

*Today in this chapter, we get to understand more about what Zheng Xie feel and think about the whole thing between him and He He. Things are definitely not going in accordance to his plan. What is he going to do now?*

### Chapter 25.6: Separation does not mean pain

Zheng Xie took Xiao Liu's car and send He He home. He took a blanket from the back of the car and handed it to He He. "You get some sleep."

He He shook her head, turned to him with a hint of regret. "Cen Shi needed to go back tomorrow, so the timing is very tight. So..... I was planning to tell you when we were leaving."

Zheng Xie said: "Never mind. As long as you are okay. How are you recently?"

He He gently nodded.

Zheng Xie sent He He home. Because he was worried about her, so he stayed with her.

He He wash the rice and pour the rice into the pot and started cooking the porridge. Then she moved a chair and sat in the kitchen. She hold a book in her hand but rarely reading it. But she patiently stare at the flames, stood up and opened the lid to see from time to time the porridge.

Zheng Xie asked: "Would it be less troublesome to use the electric pot to make the porridge?"

He He replied: "Cooking this way is more fragrant."

He He is still wearing her clothes from the hospital. Looking tired but with a stubborn expression.

Zheng Xie said: "You were rained on today, right? Go and take a shower. I can

help you monitor the fire.”

He He whispered: “No. I really am okay. You do not worry.” When talking, her eyes keep looking at the pot and does not turn to look at him.

The atmosphere in the house is very boring. Zheng Xie wanted to say something but just don’t know how to start. So he paced the floor in circle and asked: “Where is your cat, Xiao Bao? You did not bring her along with you when you left.”

He He said: “I left her at a friend’s place. My mother does not like cat.”

After cooking the porridge for over an hour, the porridge is finally ready. He He wash the container several time before carefully pour the porridge into the container.

Before that she asked Zheng Xie: “You are some porridge as well. This porridge is very good. This is the first time I cook it.”

Zheng Xie shook his head. And waited for He He to get ready. Then, he insisted on sending her back to the hospital.

When he sent He He back to Cen Shi’s room, he did not enter. After He He has walked away, Xiao Liu that Zheng Xie has asked to help around in the hospital came over: “The doctor say, Mr. Cen will be discharged tomorrow. Ms He He is also not hurt, so you do not worry.”

Zheng Xie said: “You stay here and let me know if there are anything. Tomorrow, please arrange for vehicles to take them back. If there are any other issues, you go and solve it.”

Xiao Liu nodded: “Then you go back and rest early. You look pale.”

Zheng Xie went back to his resident. He felt very tired. He fell asleep fully clothed the moment he lay down.

Zheng Xie rarely have a dream, only occasionally perturbed dream. But now his dream began with confusion. He dreamed of the first time he met He He, the tiny baby that opened her eyes for the first time and revealed toward him an angelic smile. Then as she grow older, he held her, carrying her, holding her hand and on various occasions where she followed him. Later she stated to quarrel with him,

refuse to let him lead and ignored him. As she walked further and further away from him, Zheng Xie came forward to pull He He and hold her hand. And this time, she just hold his hand. He turned back to laugh but there is a flash and the face become Yang Wei Qi.

Then Zheng Xie woke up full of sweat. His head is spinning. He got up and found that it is already nighttime. He turned to look at the table, it is very late at night.

He got up to get himself something to eat. Although he did not had any appetite, he tried hard to swallow.

It has been many days where he tried his best not to think about Yang Wei Qi. Did not expect her to appear in his dream.

Back then, he did not finished his words, Yang Wei Qi hurried to get away. Although she is sometime silly, but most of the time, she had a sound mind. She probably know that he wanted to say. Then she travelled for work and has not come back. She did not give him a call while he never bothered to call her. Things are just left as it is.

Zheng Xie felt guilty towards Yang Wei Qi.

Everyone did not misunderstand. He really wanted to marry her. Perhaps not really love but he did liked her. She is the right person to be his wife. He has never longed for earthshaking love.

His life since the age of five had always been in a placid. There are no little surprises and he had the same behavior towards marriage as well.

He never thought that things would become like this, to the extent that he could no longer calmly fulfil his life plan.

These days, Zheng Xie occasionally recall the moment when he knew the truth. What exactly came across his mind? It is because of the grievances and heartache of He He over these years or is it because he had done something wrong and he is ashamed once he acknowledged it?

In fact, he really had nothing to think about as his mind is already black. It is only clear to him that this time, he will ultimately lose the trust of people. He should end the relationship with Yang Wei Qi as soon as possible.

He could not use the identity of Yang Wei Qi's boyfriend to go and discuss about the future with He He. This way, he will insult three people.

He was planning to marry He He. In addition to this, he has no other way but to make himself feel at ease.

Is it to compensate for what happen between him and He He or is it because of other reasons, Zheng Xie had never carefully thought about it. He instinctively feel that it is something that he must do.

As in over the past years, he had never imagine to want He He to be his wife. But at the moment that he decided, he does not exclude such a thought, except that he had not been able to live up to his promise with Yang Wei Qi.

Why? What does He He man to him? What does it mean? He never made it clear.

But perhaps it is no longer valid so there is no need to figure it out. The more he want to make it more clearly, the more useless it is for him

Like some words, he never had a chance to say it. And now there is no need.

||

## Chapter 25.7: Separation does not mean pain

*Poor Zheng Xie with his dreams over and over again. I have always believe that our dreams represent our inner thoughts that we try to hide deep down in our heart not wanting people to find out. In Zheng Xie's case, I personally felt that he unconsciously realized that He He means so much more to him than what he had expected. And He He avoiding him not wanting to give him the chance to voice his heart is torturing him. Will he move on now that he thinks that He He truly loves Cen Shi? Will Zheng Xie continue with his plan to marry Yang Wei Qi?*

*This novel is picking up its pace so quickly, I wished I had more time to complete the translation. The excitement and anticipation of wanting to read what happen next..... Now if only there are 48 hours in a day, right? Anyway, let's enjoy the read today. And Have a Blessed Sunday everyone!*

### Chapter 25.7: Separation does not mean pain

When he was sending He He back to the hospital, he asked He He: "Are you adapting to staying over there?" This is because He He and his mother did not like the climate in B City. Staying over there, they will get chapped lips after only several days. They will also often get nosebleed. So for many years, He He had been staying over here with his mother, rather than spending time beside her own mother.

He He said: "Ah, still trying to adapt to the living habit over there."

"When is your vacation ending?"

He He was silent for a moment and then she choose her words carefully before whispering: "At the end of my vacation, Cen Shi would also end his job there. He had asked me if I would go back with him."

Zheng Xie avoided a car, the car swerved a little. He was silent.

He He continued and said: "He is good to me. And in that city, I had lived there for four years. I really like it."

Zheng Xie could not remember later if he had said something. Did he give her



his blessing or advised her to still seriously consider it? Did he actually say something or not? Or he just kept silent? He can't even remember.

Zheng Xie groggily and incoherently thought, unknowingly when he fell asleep. His sleep has always been regular, usually not like this.

It is still weekend the next day. At daybreak, he was awakened by the sound of the phone vibration.

Yesterday, he went to the cemetery and was afraid that the ringtone will disturb the dead soul. So he turned off the cell phone ring tones. He had forgotten to turn it back on.

The call came from his assistant. "I have parked your car in the company. Did you know that your scene yesterday were photographed by a society gossip reporter? You almost got onto the news. I tried many soft and hard ways, even your dad nearly had to step out before we could settle it. Big brother, next time you want to act cool, please change the field?"

Zheng Xie said: "Yesterday, I had something urgent to attend to."

His assistant said: "I know. He He. They say, only a small knock, you already get so nervous. As long as it is something related to He He, you will get all messed up."

Zheng Xie kept quiet.

The assistant added: "He He left early this morning with her boyfriend. Her boyfriend had something to do at noon. Both of them look fine. He He called you but you did not answer. Guess you had not woken up yet, so told me to pass the message to you. You rarely sleep late, you go and continue your sleep."

Zheng Xie checked the phone records. There were two missed calls from He He. It is very early, he did not hear. And there is a text message from He He informing him that they are leaving.

He switched back the phone ringing tone. He put the phone aside and lay down again.

He was woken up again by the phone. This time it is actually the long lost Yang Wei Qi. She said: "I am back. When do we meet?"

Zheng Xie was momentary stunned. He said: "Tomorrow night."

Yang Wei Qi asked: "What is wrong with your voice? Are you sick?"

Zheng Xie said: "Nothing. Yesterday I was rained one for a while."

Yang Wei Qi cried: "Oh! Have you eaten? Did you go to the hospital?"

Zheng Xie cope with a few words before hanging up the phone.

Not long after, there is knock on the door. He put on his coat and opened the door to see Yang Wei Qi. Before, he had given her the key to this house but she rarely opened the door herself. She usually informed him in advance and then knocked on the door while waiting for him to open the door.

They stood in silence for a moment at the entrance. They had not seen each other for so many days, perhaps a little rusty.

Yang Wei Qi finally smiled: "I have known you for so long but had never seen you sick. I just had to visit to check it out. In case I will never had a chance to see it in the future."

Zheng Xie also smiled and let her into the house.

It seems that Zheng Xie started having fever since last night. Because he rarely fall sick, so he did not pay any attention.

Yang Wei Qi found him some medicine and went into the kitchen to cook him porridge. Her cooking is not good although she tried very hard at it in the kitchen. When she lean back in the kitchen, Zheng Xie was looking at her and thought of the porridge that He He cook yesterday. At that time, he had been looking at her.

After Zheng Xie had finished a bowl of porridge, Yang Wei Qi said: "Before I left, you said that you had something to say to me." She looked at Zheng Xie to continue.

Zheng Xie kept quiet and looked down to eat another bowl of porridge. He had drank less than half of the porridge before he said: "Your trip is so long. Is work not working well for you?"

Yang Wei Qi also look a little tired. "This time I really started to self-deny myself. I am not sure if I am still maintaining justice or siding with the wrong

party.”

Zheng Xie said: “Your patience is definitely not suitable for this line of work. Change your job. Don’t make yourself so tired.”

Yang Wei Qi thought very seriously before opening her mouth: “The last time you advised me to change my job, you had said that you will support me. In fact, you were just kidding right? That is what you are trying to tell me? That you were kidding?”

Zheng Xie looked at her and closed his lips tightly.

Yang Wei Qi smiled shallow: “In fact, I originally did not mean it. So you do not mind.” She looked down and drank the porridge. After two mouthful, she realized that it is horrible. So she pushed the bowl aside and turn to Zheng Xie before saying: “This is difficult to drink. Do not drink it. I will go and cook new one.”

When Yang Wei Qi got up, she heard Zheng Xie saying something. The chair was a little loud and Zheng Xie’s voice are hoarse, so she suspected that she heard wrongly.

Zheng Xie whispered: “When do you have time? My dad wants to meet you.”

||

## Chapter 26.1: Sense and Sensibility

*Oh no..... we seems to be going round in circles now it seems. Zheng Xie is slowly accepting that he will never get to win He He's heart and marry her just like what he intended to do. Has he realized how much he truly loves her or he is still just wanting to take responsible of what happen so many years ago?*

*Now that he decided to let He He go and accept the fate, he has invited Yang Wei Qi home to meet his father.... Poor Yang Wei Qi. This is so not fair to her, right? How far are Zheng Xie and Yang Wei Qi going to go before Zheng Xie turned back to He He?*

### Chapter 26.1: Sense and Sensibility

Family may be the basis for the maintenance of marriage, but never the premise of marriage.

Zheng Xie brought Yang Wei Qi home over the weekend.

He drove the car himself. In the few hours of trip, Zheng Xie rarely speak, just focus on his driving.

In fact, Zheng Xie has always been one of the two. The more he seems to be focusing, the more likely he is mooning. Like when he is usually in a meeting, 2/3 of his concentration is resting while only 1/3 is monitoring the meeting. Once there is something that requires his attention, his mind will instantly return to 2/3.

At the moment, it seems to be the case as well. He seems to be concentrating hard on the road but slowly overtaking or completely out of instinct. 2/3 of his attention has actually been thinking about other things.

He was thinking about the day where he suddenly asked Yang Wei Qi to accompany him home.

Why? Obviously his heart was in a mess. It is not forthcoming as there is no conclusion. In his feverish state, he blurted important words. The moment he said it, he found himself pausing for a while. Then it comes with a resigned feeling as if all the dust settles, the last but one thing.

It is better this way. It is natural that He He and Cen Shi is now together, so he should not harass her life. From afar, he just need to protect her when she needed it and take care of her.

As for Yang Wei Qi, since he had promised her, though it might seems as a joke, but they both know that the words are not just offhandedly said. So in good faith, out of duty, he should just fulfill it.

He has never been accustomed to the situation where he is in the hands of others. Instead of waiting, it is better to select. So that all of them return to their places.

He thought back to the telephone conversation with his father last night where he mentioned to his father that he would be bringing Yang Wei Qi home.

He rarely hear his father sounded so happy, even confirming their arrival time carefully.

Later his father said: "I have an appointment tomorrow night with He He's mother and He He for dinner. And her boyfriend. You tell Xiao Yang to come together as well."

Zheng Xie was silent for a moment and then heard his father saying: "And this little girl hides her boyfriend very tightly. I mentioned three times before they finally agree to let me meet him."

Zheng Xie hesitate and said: "It will be awkward."

His father is in a good mood and in a relaxed tone, he lightly denounced: "Since when you become so sticky? It is only a dinner. He He and her mother you are also familiar. And He He also know Xiao Yang. If you are there, we all would be more comfortable."

Zheng Xie think about the scene that would appear later that night, with a sigh, felt that the car is too quiet. So he reached out to turn on the radio.

Maybe he is going too fast or perhaps the bad weather, all they could hear is some sizzling sound. The radio is not clear.

Yang Wei Qi open his car storage boxes, picked up a cd and played the cd. Eason Chan cool and very warm voice floated out of the radio.

Zheng Xie rarely listen to music in the car. When he is driving, he do not like other things interfering with his concentration.

In the past, He He had said that as he is driving, listening to music can avoid outside distractions. The cds in the car are mostly hers. In fact, later He He admitted that she like the sound of his voice in this car.

Now the song is playing ‘我们都寂寞’, very desolate. This is He He’s favourite song. In the car, she would repeat the song over and over again. Till he get fed up with the song, and often sarcastically make a fuss.

我们都寂寞 (*We are all alone*) is a song by the popular Hong Kong singer name Eason Chan (陳奕迅). You may listen to this song @ [我们都寂寞 \(We are all alone\)](#)

He had never thought about looking at He He carefully when she listen to music and check out her expression. What kind of mood was she in when she listen to this song? Zheng Xie’s heart beat hard a little.

After the song stop, the car was quiet for a few seconds. And then the song ‘兄妹’ started playing. Yang Wei Qi even follow the music and gently hummed. ‘Cannot love a pair of two dear brothers a sisters like this..... you said the relationship is more perfect.....’

兄妹 (*Brother and Sister*) is another song by Eason Chan (陳奕迅). You may listen to this song @ [兄妹 \(Brother and Sister\)](#)

*In the song, part of the lyrics with translation in ():*

不能相爱的一对 (*You can not love a pair*)  
亲爱像两兄妹 (*Dear brothers and sisters, like two*)  
爱让我们虚伪 (*Love makes us hypocritical*)

Without warning, his hand change the song that has been played to the next song.

Yang Wei Qi asked: “Why, do you not like this song?”

“I think the Cantonese version is much better.”

“岁月如歌? Ah, whenever there are two versions of the lyrics at the same time, usually the Cantonese version are better. This is because people in Hong



that you do not like to listen to music in the car.”

Zheng Xie said: “Never mind. You listen.”

But Yang Wei Qi did not switch back on the radio. The car had returned to silence. Not long after, Yang Wei Qi asked: “Is my clothes ok?”

Zheng Xie turned to look at her. “It is fine.”

“But it felt a little tight. Will it not seem dignified enough? I recently gain some weight.”

“No. But if you really feel bad, then after we arrived, I will go with you to buy new clothes.”

“If you think it is okay, then there is no need to change.” Later, she felt that it is very funny and explained: “I am just a little nervous.”

Zheng Xie comforted her: “My father will like you. So you do not worry.”

Yang Wei Qi bowed and twisted her fingers. “I have the feeling just like I am off to meet the examiner.”

In her nervousness, she failed to see Zheng Xie’s preoccupied look.

| |



# Chapter 26.2: Sense and Sensibility

*So finally Zheng Xie bring Yang Wei Qi back to meet his father. This is the first step to formally introducing her to his family, indicating how ‘serious’ he is about wanting to marry her. How was the trip home? Read on and find out!*

*Have a fantastic week ahead!*

## Chapter 26.2: Sense and Sensibility

Zheng Xie usually drive fast. So they arrived home half an hour earlier than expected. Zheng Xie’s father was already waiting for them at home.

They arrived home at noon. After lunch, Zheng Xie’s father and Yang Wei Qi had a chat. Very amiable chat. There were many meaningful discussion and they smiled a lot.

Later Yang Wei Qi said to Zheng Xie: “Uncle Zheng is very different from what I anticipated. When I was participating in a provincial conference many years back where he was a speaker, I had met him one. So I am not so nervous today.....”

Zheng Xie said: “That must have been a very serious meeting back then. Usually he is very warm to people.”

Yang Wei Qi nodded: “Do you think that I am not promising enough?”

Zheng Xie said: “No”. Then he added: “Why would I think so?”

-----

Later, Zheng Xie accompanied his father drinking tea in the study. He had his head half bowed and answered each of his father’s question with only 1 answer.

Zheng Xie’s father in front of him has always show a populist image where there are less praise or criticism. But today, he was very pleasant, and even praised him about his recent great work that had yielded good results.

He thought that his father had no time to be concern about his business. With so many praises, he is feeling very uncomfortable.

Then his father finally talked about Yang Wei Qi. He said: “You have always had your own opinion since you were a child, so I don’t interfere with your things.

Including marriage. When your mother was still alive, we had reached our consensus about this issue. As long as there are not too much of a gap, we respect your own choice.”

Father Zheng stop and Zheng Xie said: “Thank you. Also thanks to mum.”

Father Zheng drank some tea and then said: “Xiao Yang has a decent personality. Her appearance is also good. Her family has some dealings with us in the past, so your choice is not bad.”

Zheng Xie slightly smiled to show his response to his father’s approval.

Father Zheng put down the cup and continued: “I know that you have always been a good child but there are some things that I want to emphasize in this house. You have the freedom of choice when it comes to marriage but there is no freedom of divorce. This is the unwritten regulations in this home. No one can go against it, your aunt is an example. Since this is your choice, then no matter what other issues that you have to deal with, get it sorted out before marriage. Marriage is not the most important thing to a man but if it is a failure, then no matter how successful the man is, it cannot make up for this flaw.”

Zheng Xie looked in his father’s eyes. Father Zheng laughed: “Today is a happy day. It is a little disappointing to have said such things, right?”

Zheng Xie said: “Dad, I know the meaning of marriage and responsibility.”

Father Zheng stood up, put his hand on Zheng Xie’s shoulder and said: “That is good. I believe you.”

—————

In the afternoon, uncle came to the house to discuss things with Father Zheng. He was happy to coincidently met Yang Wei Qi.

Zheng Xie had always had a good relationship with uncle since childhood. Although they rarely meet, he was able to communicate with his uncle more than his father. Their relationship is like a friendship between friends. His house is very near, so uncle walked over. When he left, Zheng Xie accompany him out.

Uncle smiled and said: “Not bad. Good move. Last year when we want you to go for blind date, you still have to argue plausibly. So fast you have decided to

jump into the marriage grave. The girl had so much charm.”

Zheng Xie said: “It is about time I get married. And she is very suitable.”

Uncle said: “What nonsense. If the other party hear this, she will be very sad. Asking you rationally, you never really want something that is beyond your reach?”

Zheng Xie said: “If it is something that is beyond my reach, I will not think about it.”

Uncle sigh: “You are so much alike your dad in personality and not slightest like your mother. Your aunt is the same. Your family’s gene is really alike. Xiao Xie, I remember once when you were much younger. I think you were not even in high school even yet at that time. We were discussing about a novel and you told me a completely different perspective on what love is about to a man. You said that a woman has many different uses to a man. There are some that is there for you to protect, some to be enjoyed, some to work together as well as some are used to kill time. You cannot remember? I was completely taken aback by you then, and nearly wanted to bring you to a psychiatrist. How, do you still have such idea? What is Yang Wei Qi kind of usefulness to you?”

Zheng Xie felt that the topic is making him tired. He casually asked his uncle about himself: “How are things between you and my aunt?”

Sure enough, uncle no longer tease him and said in a lower tone: “Still the same. Let it be. After all, our children are married. What else are there?”

Zheng Xie said: “Uncle. I have a question that may seems rude. Knowing the vast differences between aunt and your personality, hobbies are also different. But you still exhaustedly pursued her and marry her. Why? At that time, did you think of the future?”

“Xiao Xie, you want to ask me, I love your aunt while she don’t love me, why I still married her? I just wanted to marry her at that time. Until now I still do not regret it. As to why, did not think about it. If everything in this world needs to be made clear just like a book, then there is no excitement in life.”

“Both of you have been so frustrated for so many years, your love is actually not dead?”

“I am talking about one family and wife, the strongest human blood connection. There is nothing that can break it off.”

“But most people get married because of love, but not getting married because of family, right?”

Uncle said: “Xiao Xie, you are very strange today. It is because of the phobia of marriage?”

||

## Chapter 26.3: Sense and Sensibility

*Last chapter was a pretty boring chapter (at least to me) although we did managed to get a glimpse into the importance of marriage in Zheng's family. And also a glimpse into Zheng Xie's thought and how he is feeling about the whole marriage thing with Yang Wei Qi. I personally pity Yang Wei Qi as Zheng Xie obviously is marrying her only because she is the 'right' candidate as his wife. Would marriage like that last? I personally don't think so.*

*Enjoy the read today. I hope it will get exciting soon.....*

### Chapter 26.3: Sense and Sensibility

Dinner is not a surprised that night.

It is located in a Villa in the old inner courtyard. Usually guest need to book at least half a month in advance to be able to get a seat.

When his mother was alive, she love this place. So they frequently patronized this place during most holiday since his father cannot leave the area. So their family reunion dinner are mainly here when they are not having it at home. In many times, He He and her mother also joined them.

Since the death of his mother, he had rarely come here.

Both father Zheng and He He's mother as usual are refined, courteous, polite and considerate. The children started eating only when the elderly started moving their chopsticks.

In the presence of the elders and two newcomers, the scene is a little awkward although they tried to look friendly and warm.

Father Zheng said: "The last time Xiao Xie came back with He He, we had dinner together. It seems just like only yesterday. In the blink of an eye, our team has gotten bigger...."

He He's mum said: "The world situation will change so fast. What more it is human.... Xiao Xie, you ate so little today. Are you feeling ill?"

Zheng Xie said: "No, Auntie Lin. Recently, my stomach is not very good...."

Father Zheng said: “He has been like this since young. Picky eaters. Eating is like asking him to take medication. Always thought that his growth would be stumped. Never expected that he would have have grown so tall.” His words were said towards Yang Wei Qi, with a tone filled with a little love as well as a little condemn.

Zheng Xie bowed down and ignored them. Yang Wei Qi smiled.

He He’s mum said: “The most important is the height genetic, followed by exercise and appetite. He He has always had a good appetited, never a picky eater at all. But she is still petite.”

He He heard the mentioned of her name, she looked up. From the start of the dinner to now, she had never stopped eating, with her head bowed.

These kind of topics are usually cold topic with very few respondents. Then, Father Zheng turn to Yang Wei Qi and Chen Shi. Towards Yang Wei Qi, he said: “When you were younger, you had lived in your uncle’s home. I had also carried you back then. Am sure you have no memory of that.” He turn to Cen Shi and said: “From the moment He He was born, I had watched her growing up till now. She is like my own child. She has always been a good child. You cannot bully her.”

Cen Shi gave a fake smile: “Rest be assured, I will not.”

Later as the conversation continue, they found out that Cen Shi and He He were university friends.

Father Zheng said: “So, He He and Cen shi were designated as couple back in the university days. Zheng Xie do you not know about this?”

Zheng Xie vaguely replied.

Cen Shi with a serious tone said: “We had missed a lot of years but fortunately we are able to meet again.”

He He had her head down till it was almost buried into the table. In the meantime, Zheng Xie absently playing with the meatballs in his bowl with the chopsticks till it had turn into minced meat.

He He's mother asked: "Xiao Xie and Xiao Yang, when do you plan to have your wedding?"

Zheng Xie rise his head and was startled. Yang Wei Qi was quiet for a while and then replied: "We are still considering."

Father Zheng said: "Next spring would be good." He turn and look at Cen Shi and He He, "What about you two?"

He He turn to the corner and looked at Cen Shi. Before he open his mouth, she cut in and said: "Of course, after finishing brother and sister-in-law's wedding. We shall then discussed about it."

Father Zheng laughed: "When you were younger, did you not always use the bedsheet and dressed up playing wedding. How come you are no longer anxious now?"

He He silently laughed. He He's mother smiled and came to her rescue. "He He is still childish even till now. Unlike Xiao Yang. Before she is married, she would need to undergo some training first, right, He He?"

He He bowed her head and continued to laugh. The people around her also laughed.

—————

When dinner is over, it is still early. Father Zheng and He He's mother also drove away in her own car.

It is a very good night, with the moon high up in the sky. What is left are the four of them.

Zheng Xie asked Cen Shi: "How are your injuries? Are they better?"

Cen Shi said: "It is much better. Thank you for your concern."

Zheng Xie turn to Yang Wei Qi and asked: "Where would you like to explore?"

Yang Wei Qi answered: "Anywhere is fine." She thought for a while and turned to He He's direction with a smile. "He He, can you give me some opinions?"

He He said: "The northern cities are like, buildings, snacks and roadside stalls. Better to go to the night market. The night market here is very lively and you can

stroll the whole night.”

Yang Wei Qi said: “That sound good. Why don’t we go together?”

He He said with a bright smile: “In the future I can accompany you to shop. But tonight I have other matter with Cen Shi.”

In front of Zheng Xie and Yang Wei Qi’s gaze, she drag Cen Shi’s sleeves all the way to the car.

||



## Chapter 26.4: Sense and Sensibility

*This chapter is so boring and the progress has gotten back to the slow pace that we had in the beginning. I want to find out more about what Zheng Xie do and how he finally got together with He He. Guess these slow progress are needed to keep us wanting more.....*

*This chapter is about He He and Cen Shi after they went their separate ways after the dinner. Cen Shi is aware of He He's feeling for Zheng Xie. He talked about the past with He He and encouraged her to be brave about sharing her feeling. Would that open up He He's heart? I wonder .....*

### Chapter 26.4: Sense and Sensibility

Cen Shi drove the car leisurely. He let a lot of other cars overtake him. He turned to the side and saw the light across He He's face.

Cen Shi said: "Now I finally understand why you would prefer to follow Zheng Xie day in and day out. Staying with your mother is like being interviewed daily."

He He said: "You drive faster. The store is closing soon."

Cen Shi creased his eyebrow. "You still dare to ask me to drive faster.... The last incident did not leave you any psychological shadow?"

He He said: "While having a meal will also potentially choke to death. So many opportunities to create psychological shadow. If you are going to crawl, then I am going to take the taxi."

Cen Shi said: "Only villain and woman are difficult to understand. Xiao He He, you are double-headed snake."

He He turned away and refused to look at him. Cen Shi stepped on the accelerator, the car lunged forward. He He almost hit the glass.

Cen Shi was a little bored while waiting for He He in the car. She rushed into the small boutique ten minutes before their closing time but he is not allowed to follow. Less than three minutes later, she trotted back with two bags in her hand.

Cen Shi is speechless. “Your speed is really amazing.”

When He He ran out of the boutique, she obviously was very happy. She even took the initiative to let Cen Shi see what she bought. Two pairs of same style shoes, a pair that is green and the other pair is beige.

Cen Shi nodded: “Not bad. Ms. Xiao, when you buy things, you are getting more aristocratic demeanor.”

He He pretended not to recognize his sarcasm and carefully explained to him: “A few days ago, I was hesitant as I did not know what color to buy. So while I was trying to think carefully on which to buy, today suddenly I thought, that it might be sold to others. So might as well buy them.”

Cen Shi said with seriousness.... “Of course, of course. To seize the initiative to buy the shoes are not as difficult as choosing husband. Only had to pick a pair that you like and have enough money to buy ten colors. It does not matter if you don’t have enough money, I can lend you.”

He He snorted and put the shoes back into the bags. She wildly thrown into the back seat and ignored him.

Cen Shi intently driving, after a while laughed: “Your two elders, and the Xiao Zheng, must have never seen your unruly look. Just now, you were like a small rabbit. So well behaved. Speaking about it, I am more fortunate than them, right?”

He He became annoyed: “Cen Shi can you just shut up!”

Cen Shi put on an exaggerated frightened look. He He calmed down and became amused. She bit her lips and look out of the window.

After a long time, Cen Shi said: “If you are upset, just release it. If you have something to say, just say it. Keeping in your heart, you are not afraid of getting heart attack?”

He He said: “You are the one that will get heart attack.”

Cen Shi drove round a corner and said: “What is so good about Zheng Xie? He is like a white marble statue, cold with no normal human feelings. Oh sorry, I forgot that he has powerful internal. His inner intelligent are like robots, always

will be the latest and greatest version.” He He turn and stared at him.

Cen Shi ignored her. “Xiao He He, you asked me to act with you. Is it for your mother to see or for Zheng Xie? Or are you doing this for yourself?”

“Cen Shi, if you are already tired, you can leave. Thank you for accompany me.”

Cen Shi said: “Not a bother. I am just amused today. I suddenly found out that I don’t know my exact position in the role. I am trying to do my homework. So that I am not careless and let it slip up.”

“I am sorry.”

Cen Shi became confused and speechless. After a long while, he said: “He He, have you ever really liked me before?”

He He thought for a long time and said: “Yes. A long time ago.”

Cen Shi said: “He He, at that time, you just left so simply. I thought you did not like me but only a wounded pride. If I know that you really like me, I will not.....”

“It is all in the past. Don’t talk about it anymore. It is all in the past.” He He interrupted him and whispered.

“Actually, I want to tell you, if you like a person, you should let him know.” Cen Shi see that He He did not respond, and unthinking say: “I want to buy you ice-cream. Do you want to eat it?”

He He replied: “I do not want.”

Cen Shi said: “I want to eat. Why don’t you treat me?”

—————

On the other side of the city, Yang Wei Qi clutched Zheng Xie’s hand, walking through the night market.

The night market are bustling with food stalls of various aroma mixed together, which generated a strange smell. The merchandise stalls are dazzling and full of wonders.

Yang Wei Qi bought a small bunch of cloth fish. She turned around and said to Zheng Xie: “The bunch of cloth fish in your home, He He made them herself,

right?”

Zheng Xie nodded while reaching out to pull his sleeve.

Yang Wei Qi laughed. “Tonight, you have pulled your sleeve several time. It is interesting that you have this habit.”

Zheng Xie smiled but the smile soon disappeared.

He also did not know when he formed this little habit.

When He He was younger, she always goes out with him while clutching his hand.

When she grew older, and know about the difference between men and women, she refuse to hold his hand.

But in many occasions where it is crowded, he was worried that she would get lost. So often he pulled her schoolbag or tug her crony. She always say that he is leading her like a puppy.

Then she started pulling his sleeve. Especially when she is tired, her whole body weight would weight on him. Often she pulled his sleeve so crumple that it is not a pleasant sight, so he had repeatedly pulled his sleeve to smoothen it.

He remembered that the last time, she pulled his sleeves was in this very same night market.

It was only a few months ago. 恍如隔世

恍如隔世 (*pin ying: huǎng rú gé shì*) is define as – As if a generation had passed / As if being cut off from the outside world for ages

He is then reminded on how He He pulled Cen Shi sleeve earlier. It turned out that it is just her habit, she does the same for everyone.

He should also strive to get rid of this bad habit.

Amidst the crowded people, Yang Wei Qi clutched his hand, afraid of being separated. Both of their palms are sweating and sticky. Zheng Xie went into a moment of trance, he pulled out his hand, and hold her backhand wrist. Her wrists are think, delicate and smooth. There is a sense of familiarity.

## Chapter 26.5: Sense and Sensibility

*In the last chapter, we also got a glimpse of how Zheng Xie realized how some of his habits are related to He He. He also realized the similarity between Yang Wei Qi and He He. And he come to realized that some of He He's habit with him in the past are actually her habit with no special meaning behind it. Or is it so?*

*In this chapter, we will read about interesting conversation between He He and her mother. One could sense the concern from her mother and the suspicion from her mother about how He He felt about Zheng Xie.*

*Enjoy the read!*

### Chapter 26.5: Sense and Sensibility

The next day, He He sat down together with her mother in the living room, basking in the sun as they were drinking tea and chatting.

He He's mother asked: "What is wrong between you and Zheng Xie?"

"There is nothing wrong between us."

"The last time you are back; you were close with him. Last night you refuse to even look at him. Acting like strangers."

"That..... I am too close with brother Zheng Xie, afraid of Ms. Yang misunderstanding ..... no.... afraid that she might mind."

"You and Zheng Xie are very close for over twenty years. Even if she want to mind, it is too late."

He He bowed down and said: "Better to be careful. Avoiding is better."

Then, He He continue reading her novels while her mother continued to read her professional journal.

"That Cen Shi, he is not your marriage interest, right?" Suddenly He He's mother asked.

"That....." He He was stunned momentarily, "We still have a long way to go....."

"For you to be willing to bring your boyfriend back to be introduced to me, it means that you are looking at him as a potential marriage partner, that is why

you are dating him, right?”

He He carefully asked: “Mother, do you not like him?”

“If you like, I would respect your choice. But to my understanding, the person that you would be willing to marry would be a person that you highly respect and even awe. But your attitude towards him, it does not seem like it.”

He He kept quiet for a long time. Then she suddenly asked: “Mother, did you highly respect dad and are in awe before you marry him?”

“You have never asked about your dad.”

“In fact, I have always wanted to ask but did not dare. How did you met father? Once, I saw in a very old city yearbook in the library that has father’s profile. It says above that he has only completed junior high school education. When you married father, you were already a graduate student. At that moment, I had wanted to ask.... Why did you marry father?”

“Education cannot represent the gap between two people. Your father was a good man.”

“I know. I am sorry. I should not have asked you that, mother.”

“It’s okay. For so many years, many of you think that I do not like to reminisce the past, so no one ever dare to ask me. Both your father and I were orphan, so we grew up together. I look small so was often bullied. Your dad always protect me. Then later he told me to marry him, and he will protect me forever. I went off later to study while he stayed back to work. He wrote me a letter to tell me that he met a blind woman. She makes him feel good and he wants to date her. If it is right, then he wanted to marry her. The next day, I went to school and claimed that my brother was sick and took a leave of absence. I came back to warn him, the promise that he made needs to be fulfilled. He either do not get married in this life or if he wants to get married, it is only to marry me.”

“What happen then?”

“He refused, but I insisted. So he waited until I graduated. I finally married him. He honored the first half of his promised but then in the most respectable way, destroyed the latter half of the promise.”

“Why did you marry Father? You did not mentioned about this.”

“He was a good man. The best man I have ever met. I was thinking, if I missed the opportunity to be with this man, I will regret it later as I will never be able to meet anyone like him.”

“Mother, do you love father?”

He He’s mother thought for a long time: “I only quantitatively study. While the ‘love’ is a void that I do not know.”

“Thank you for sharing these with me.” He He said very seriously.

He He’s mother looked at her for a moment: “He He, you have never said so much to me. And also never asked so much question.”

“That is because we rarely have time to sit and chat together. You have always been busy with your work.”

“When you are young, when you want me to do something for you, you refuse to personally tell me but ask Zheng Xie to pass on the message to me.”

He He kept quiet.

“He He. He He” He He’s mother gently calling her name. He He looked up.

“I always have a question that I had wanted to ask but never found the right opportunity to ask you. During the summer of your freshman year, what happen?”

“Ah?”

“That is the summer that Zheng Xie went abroad to study.”

“Nothing..... it has been a long time ago.”

“That year, you also came back together with Zheng Xie. Also suddenly become a stranger, just like how you were last night.”

“Really? I do not remember. Mother, you have a very good memory.” He He laughed twice.

“This time you quietly came back and it is even with a boyfriend. And suddenly things are awkward between you and Zheng Xie. Are these two things related? Or it is just me being suspicious?”

He He looked down and stared at the cover of the book. She did not dare to look at her mother's eyes. She was silence for a while and then whispered: "Mother, I do not want to talk about it. Please do not ask....."

"Okay, I do not ask"

After a moment, He He took the initiative and said: "It has nothing to do with him."

Both the mother and daughter returned to the quiet and understanding moments earlier. It is so quiet that only the movement from the mechanical clock can be heard from the living room.

"He He, is that anything I can do for you?" He He's mother suddenly asked.

"I do not need anything, mother."

"Do you like Zheng Xie, hope that Zheng Xie marry you?"

"I have always regarded him and liked him as a brother. I have never had the thought of marrying him. From young until now, I never had such thoughts."

||



## Chapter 27.1: A quiet life

*In the last chapter, He He's mother questioned He He about what is happening between He He and Zheng Xie. We also had the opportunity to find out the story behind He He's parent's past and marriage. He He denied loving Zheng Xie and ever having thought of marrying him. Does He He really love Zheng Xie? I hope to be able to find out soon.*

*Life is back to normal when Zheng Xie return back to the city where he is residing. And the arrangement for him to marry Yang Wei Qi is slowly in progress. The title for Chapter 27 is, A quiet Life.... Would it really be a quiet life?*

*Chapter 27 is a super long chapter. So this chapter is broken to many chapters that may eventually take us up to over a month to finish. I just hope that it is not draggy.... So bear with me as well as I try to complete this chapter as quick as possible and try to keep up to the daily chapter.*

### Chapter 27.1: A quiet life

Zheng Xie life restored its peace.

He worked harder than ever. He got along well with Yang Wei Qi. He even met her elders and colleagues. And seriously discussed marriage with her.

But his sleep is getting worst. He always have some sporadic childhood dreams. Broken fragments and often woke up with an unsettling feeling.

As if he has returned to the year when he was six. That year he had lots of nightmares. His family took him to the psychiatrist. But he clenched his lips not uttering a single word. The doctor could not help him. Later, his father invited a martial arts instructor to train and get him to practice daily till he is so tired. At night, the moment he touch the pillow, he fell asleep from the tiredness. This help to cure his insomnia.

Zheng Xie left the meeting room to return to the office. He then went into the bathroom where he coughed for a while. Rubbing his nose for a long time, he washed his face. When he came out, his nose and eyes were a little red.

The assistants waiting for him could not help laughing when they saw him:

“I’ve known you for so many years. Seeing you catching a cold is as rare as a solar eclipse.”

Zheng Xie said: “Is there a problem?” He just said one sentence and began to cough. Could not stop even after a long time. Secretary Wei whom were outside heard and hastily brought in water. She looked at the table and saw the medicine on the table. He had not even taken the one mean to be taken in the morning. She did not dare to say anything and retreat from the office.

The assistant said: “This time your flue seems very serious. Others only takes a week or two to recover. As for your case, it has been almost a month and instead of getting better, it seems to get worst. Why don’t you go and see the doctor?”

Zheng Xie said: “It’s nothing. Another few days I should recover. Because I do not get flu often, so it is harder to recover....”

“Your sick look is affecting the morale of others in the company. You have not seen the heartbreaking look of those ladies when they hear you cough.” The assistant think for a long time before getting back to business: “Just now, the plan you mentioned during the meeting..... are you serious?”

“Do I joke on official matter?”

Assistant said: “What you say, I will naturally obey. However, I now secretly sharing with you my opinion. What you are doing recently are drastic, a posterior that are not for everyone to stay. I almost could not tolerate it anymore. You did not see the faces of some of the managers that looks like they wanted to break down and cry earlier.”

Zheng Xie lightly asked: “Are they?”

“Is it not?” The assistant saw Zheng Xie blowing his nose and said with a sigh: “I want you to leave work early to go home and rest. Blowing nose too much will affect your thinking.”

The meeting earlier was a little long. Zheng Xie feel a little uncomfortable and also seems to have a little fever. He nodded and said: “I will go in a while. Any urgent matters you please deal with it.” Later he added, “Our co-operation with Sun Dong on the seaside villa, you go and tell him that we will share a set with him.”

“You are giving it to him in accordance to the current price? You will have a big lost.”

“Hm... This is good.”

Assistant said: “Yes, ah... yes. When you bought the two sets, did you not say that you want to give He He a set as her dowry when she get married?”

“There is no need. She may not come back. Even if she comes back, she may not want to live so near me.”

“How come? Did you and He He had a fight?”

“No. The little girl has grown up.”

The assistant said: “She really want to date Mr. Cen?”

Zheng Xie did not speak.

Assistant said: “That kid is too cheap.”

Zheng Xie said: “You are very free now?”

Zheng Xie processed things on hand, he is ready to go home. After getting up, he felt a little dizzy. So he telephone Xiao Chen to drive him home. Walking past Wei Zhi Xian’s desk, she stood up to send him off.

Zheng Xie put a box on her desk. “This afternoon, send this over to He He.... Tell her that this is an early Christmas or New Year’s gift.”

Wei Zhi Xian nodded and open the box. She was very surprised.

She remembers the abacus shape sapphire pendant. He bought it several years ago. He had always wanted to give this to He He. She wonder why it is still with him. She was impressed because Zheng Xie took a lot of afford to buy the pendant.

Moreover, this kind of things are not safe to be send using express delivery. He went back home last week where He He was. It was not a rushed trip, so he had all the opportunity to personally hand to her.

## Chapter 27.2: A quiet life

*Zheng Xie is ill. It is very rare that he is ill.....*

*In this chapter, we see a side of Zheng Xie that we have never expected (at least not what I would expect of him). We are able to see how much the influence that He He indirect had on him.*

*Enjoy the read!*

### Chapter 27.2: A quiet life

Weekend. Zheng Xie was reading the newspaper while Yang Wei Qi was cooking. She occasionally come over to talk to him.

Zheng Xie have been very quiet and only occasionally cough.

Yang Wei Qi deliver water to him and touched his forehead. "It seems like the fever from the last time when you are sick has not fully recovered. Just a little but seems to have increased a little. This is just not going to do...."

"When I was younger, there was one year where I had caught the flu for a whole winter. Whatever drugs I took did not help. In fact, I rarely caught flu. I have not fallen ill for a long time." He smell the glass of water and then pushed it away while frowning. "I do not want sesame oil and vinegar."

"Drink this to cure your cough. You also refuse to take medicine on time." She coax him like coaxing a child.

Zheng Xie said: "Is the food that you are cooking about to be burned?"

"Ah!" and she hurried into the kitchen. Zheng Xie took the opportunity to drain the cup of water.

After dinner, Zheng Xie had a habit of taking a walk. Yang Wei Qi accompanied him.

It is cold outside. Both of them were not warmly dressed. Zheng Xie put his hand into the pockets. Yang Wei Qi do not have any pockets, so also put her hand into his pocket.

Zheng Xie imperceptibly paused, and then grip her cold fingers into his palm.

Yang Wei Qi asked him: “Your birthday is in a few day time. Have you decided on how you want to celebrate?”

“I do not celebrate birthday.” Zheng Xie turned and saw Yang Wei Qi’s slightly disappointed face, put on a soft tone and said: “My father always stressed that birthday is mother’s bitter day. He opposed extravagant birthday. When my mother was still alive, on the day, my father and I will give her gifts. As for the recent years..... On my birthday, I just have a bowl of pork trotter noodles.”

“Eat pig trotter noddle on birthday? Is there such custom?”

“Is there not? He He always say that on birthday must eat pig trotter noddle, or else.....” Zheng Xie said and then paused for a while.

Yang Wei Qi paused, smiled and then said: “This year, you would not get He He to stewed pork trotter for you. You will not accustomed to it.”

“You come and cook it.” Zheng Xie vaguely said.

Where Zheng Xie live, there is a park located just outside. There is some folk art groups putting up a show currently. Yang Wei Qi proposed that go and check it out.

Zheng Xie does not like such excitement. So when Yang Wei Qi asked if he was thirsty, he volunteered to buy drinks.

After buying the drinks, Zheng Xie passed a little park called ‘Cat Paradise’. At the park, cats’ lovers will gather together. You can also see cat-shaped sculpture and at times, some rare species cat show. Cat-related toys and dolls are available for sale here. Short-term foster care are also available.

He was able to remember so clearly because Xiao He He tries to cure his ailurophobe by dragging him. The result is him not abiding and he walked away halfway. He He was so angry to the extent that she ignored him for several days.

Zheng Xie pacing out was broken when a woman holding a car hurried past him. He could not help but turn back to take a look.

Perhaps it is his illusion. The cat in the arms of the woman seems very familiar.

When Zheng Xie turned back, the cat also turned around to look at Zheng Xie. When the cat saw him, it meowed loudly.

The cat owners immediately turn back and looked at him. A little surprised at first, she then gave him a smile: "Hello, Brother Zheng."

Zheng Xie recognized her. It is the bridesmaid friend of Su Ren Ran and He He.

"Hello, Ms Ding." He politely say hello, and then look at the cat in her arms.

Ding Ding was uncomfortable with the way he was looking. She shyly smiled and said: "This is He He's cat, Xiao Bao. These two months, I have been looking after it. You recognized it, right?"

"It looks like it has change a lot."

"Yes ah, it has grown a little but gain a fair bit of weight."

Zheng Xie gave a small smile, reached out and gently touched Xiao Bao's ear. Before it turned around, he quickly retrack his hands. "You are bringing it over to play?"

"I need to travel for a week. So I am leaving it here in the foster place during the period." Combined with Ding Ding's words, Xiao Bao gave a desolated and pitiful cry.

"Since you are busy, I leave first." Zheng Xie turned around to leave. Just as he turn, he heard her gasp. When he looked back, Xiao Bao had jumped out of her arm and ran ahead while Ding Ding hastily chased it.

Xiao Bao runs around in circle like it was playing hide and seek. Xiao Bao ran nearer to Zheng Xie and suddenly stopped and looked at him with its eyes rolling. Ding Ding breathlessly picked it up, looked at Zheng Xie embarrassedly. "Xiao Bao is very naughty. Yesterday, I brought it over to let it adapt to the environment but today it is probably still do not like it here."

"Can you not send it to other friend's place?"

"Ren Ran are not home during these period of time. Other friends..... I think Xiao Bao will be better and more professionally taken care of here." Ding Ding said seriously while gently touching Xiao Bao's head, with the hope that it will co-operate. But it refused to co-operate, and gave a cry before indenting its head into her arms with a look as if it has been ill-treated. Ding Ding was embarrassed.

“You will only be away for a week on business trip? Then give it to me.” Zheng Xie regretted after finishing the sentence. He just did not know what and how he are able to make such a decision.

Ding Ding hesitated for a whole. Soon, she broke into a delightful look and carefully hand Xiao Bao over to him. “Then, trouble you. I will come and pick him up after I return.”

Zheng Xie took over Xiao Bao in a very calm and steady hand. His face remain unchanged, although his posture of holding the cat seems awkward.

Ding Ding waved him goodbye. As she was leaving, she thought, Zheng Xie is not even afraid of snake, how could he be afraid of cats? She knew then that this is certainly the indirect influence of He He.

Yang Wei Qi saw Zheng Xie coming back holding the cat and laughed. “Did you pick up or buy the cat? You look like you were holding onto a bomb.”

Zheng Xie amnesty stuffed Xiao Bao into Yang We Qi’s arms: “Just helping a friend to look after it for a few days. Its name is Xiao Bao.”

“This cat is really honored. Can actually labored everyone.” Yang Wei Qi laughed and touch Xiao Bao’s head. “Hello. I am Yan Wei Qi.” Xiao Bao’s claw almost caught her hand.

Yang Wei Qi smiled: “It seems that it does not like me.”

“There is no such thing. It is just naughty and recognized people. This is He He’s cat.” Zheng Xie tried to comfort her while admitting the identity of Xiao Bao. Xiao Bao sensuously closed its eyes showing that it does not have any care in the world.

“Its temper is so different from its master.” Yang Wei Qi said with a frustration.

On the way back, Zheng Xie went to buy Xiao Bao some food. He studied every cat food and pet supplies with Yang Wei Qi in the supermarket. They stuffed the shopping basket full. Xiao Bao was staying quietly in the basket. As they were passing the dog toy shelf, it suddenly jumped out of the basket and picked up a large bag of bones.

Zheng Xie put the bag into the basket while Yang Wei Qi laughed.

Xiao Bao is pleased and continued to bounce wanting to bite the package with interest.

Yang Wei Qi cannot helped but laughed. “In the future, when you become a father, your children will be spoilt by you.” She suddenly thought of the meaning behind those words and suddenly started to blush.

Zheng Xie as if is not aware, continued to say: “Maybe. I have not been around children for a while already. I am sure you have seen enough of these.”

“Did you not say that you would be only cat-sitting for a week? You have bought enough for a month.”

||



## Chapter 27.3: A quiet life

*Wow! Unexpectedly in the last chapter, Zheng Xie volunteered to care for Xiao Bao while Ding Ding is away on business trip. How interesting.....*

*This chapter today is about the quietness of Zheng Xie's birthday celebration with Yang Wei Qi at home. Interestingly, we are able to see the softer side of Zheng Xie when he finally warms up to Xia Bao after having to 'babysit' him for a while. Is it because Zheng Xie is finally warming up to Xiao Bao, or is it because Xiao Bao is a part of He He and Zheng Xie is using Xiao Bao as a replacement from the absence of He He from his current life? I shall leave you to make that judgement yourself.....*

### Chapter 27.3: A quiet life

On Zheng Xie's birthday, Yang Wei Qi went over to his house really early.

She rang the doorbell and heard Zheng Xie said: "Come In." After a while, there were no movement, so she rang the bell again. She heard him saying: "You have the keys to come in, right?"

The way she rang the bell frequency is very special, so Zheng Xie know from the doorbell that it is her.

She found her keys and open the door to a very funny scene. The cat, Xiao Bao is biting a slipper and had fled to the corner. Zheng Xie is on one foot confronting it.

Yang Wei Qi laughed: "Xiao Boa is naughtier than the last time I saw it."

Zheng Xie saw her hang carrying something, so he left the cat. He took over the things in her hand and says: "This little guy is a big trouble. The house has been turned upside down this week. I had to pay three times the hourly wages to get it in order."

Xiao Bao in order to prove that Zheng Xie is stating the truth, its voice fell with a small "Meow."

Yang Wei Qi step into the kitchen while saying: "You really want to eat at home?"

“Don’t want to go out. It is cold outside.”

“Have you not taken your medicine? You still have not recovered from your cold?”

“What can I help you with?” Zheng Xie changed the topic.

“No need. I will be more nervous if you are around to help out. You just got and play with your cat, Xiao Bao.”

When Yang Wei Qi stepped out of the kitchen still wearing an apron to announced that dinner is ready, she saw the just now complaining about ‘troublesome guy’ Zheng Xie sitting on the floor while playing with the cat, Xiao Bao with a ball.

He was playing with a bunch of colorful plastic balls rolling across the floor one by one while Xiao Bao pushed it back with his front paws.

Sometimes, Zheng Xie throw it high while Xiao Bao tried to make it stop. But Xiao Bao is trained, did not pounce instead hit the ball and let it elegantly fell to the ground. Then move towards Zheng Xie after he call.

Yang Wei Qi laughed out loud: “It seems that these days, you have got along very well with Xiao Bao.”

“You just said that Xiao Bao is now fat, so I am helping it to lose some weight.”

Zheng Xie threw the few balls that were in his hands towards Xiao Bao. It then saw the balls, and was afraid of being hit. Xiao Bao meow loudly and then hid under the sofa.

Zheng Xie got up from the ground, tidy up his clothes and wash his hands to get ready to eat.

From childhood days, Zheng Xie never had the birthday celebration tradition, even birthday gifts are spared. In addition, he recently caught a cold, so not much of an appetite. So Yang Wei Wi in accordance to his request, cook very simple dinner of stewed pig trotters’ noodles.

Zheng Xie said while eating: “The noodle you cook is not bad.”

“Is it similar with what you have eaten in the past?”

“Ah. Where did you learned this? He He has always said that it is her secret recipe.”

Yang Wei Qi paused for a moment before saying: “He He shared the method to prepare this with me.”

Zheng Xie ‘Oh’ and then kept quiet. He buried his head and concentrated on his bowl. He finished the whole bowl of soup but did not touch the meat.

Yang Wei Qi refilled his bowl. Zheng Xie thanked her, and then suddenly casually asked: “Do you contact her often?”

“I met her the day before yesterday. Also helped her with some stuff.”

Zheng Xie hang his head and asked: “She is back?”

“I went on a business trip over there. And then bump into her.”

“You did not tell me about your business trip.”

“I went in the morning and came back in the afternoon. Later, I forgot to tell you.”

“Okay. I know.” Zheng Xie no longer asked any further question.

Later, Yang Wei Qi explained: “We have recently received a case so I went to the orphanage located over there to look at evidence. And I met He He there. She has been volunteering to teach art class for over a month. Then, we talked for a while.”

“Oh.”

“She looks good and the children particularly like her. She asked me to say hello on her behalf to you.”

Zheng Xie kept quiet and cough for a long time. Yang We Qi had to come and pat his back.

A silent Yang Wei Qi did not know what to say.

His alert cat, Xiao Bao is at the kitchen door pacing and sneaking around.

Zheng Xie will use his fingers to signal Xiao Bao over, then it will blatantly walk out of the kitchen. Then it rolled around under the table a few rounds, studied Yang Wei Qi’s slippers before finally settling down at Zheng Xie’s feet, separated

by a distance of a few centimeters.

Although this week, Zheng Xie had been friendly, but he rarely hug Xiao Bao. Even if he did, he held it stiffly. Xiao Bao the cat is a smart cat. It knows how to judge a person's expression. So even though it loves to be pampered, it dare not go overboard with Zheng Xie. Instead it will try to choose a different way to attract his attention.

Before Zheng Xie had dinner, he had stuffed Xiao Bao's bowl with a lot of delicious food that seems enough for it to eat. But when he saw the fish, it gave a little whine, while staring at the table.

The next moment, Yang Wei Qi was stunned when Zheng Xie stooped his chopstick of fish directly into the cat's mouth and very patiently watched it eating it. Then he finally pulled a piece of tissue and wipe its mouth.

Until Zheng Xie sat up straight, Yang Wei Qi was watching him astonished.

Zheng Xie extended the chopsticks back and embarrassly smiled while saying: "I will go and change another pair of chopsticks." He gently kicked Xiao Bao indicating it to go away but Xiao Bao did not move.

Yang Wei Qi stood up: "I go and get a plate for Xiao Bao. It seems that it like the fish that I cooked. You need to change your chopsticks, right?"

She went to help Zheng Xie change a new pair of chopsticks, and also brought Xiao Bao's plate. When she returned, she saw Xiao Bao hanging on to Zheng Xie's leg of the pants while rolling around. Zheng Xie tossed Xiao Bao while trying to get rid of it, but resulting in Xiao Bao playing happily.

"Both of you seems to get along very well." Yang Wei Qi said with a smile.

"It will go back next week."

"If you like it, why don't you just keep it."

"I don't like cats. I am just kind hearted."

Zheng Xie did not wait for Yang Wei Qi to prepare the fish for Xiao Bao. He just held Xiao Bao by the neck and pulled it from his leg and throw it further away.

Yang Wei Qi uttered a cry, fearing that Xiao Bao will be hurt when it falls. But his strength is just right. Xiao Bao's leg gently touch the ground. Not only it was

not injured, there were no signs of it even being frightened, as if it is already used to this game.

Yang Wei Qi placed the plate containing the fish in front of Xiao Bao. But it ignored her and went under the cupboard refusing to come out. She placed the plate in front of the cupboard.

After the trouble with Xiao Bao the cat, the meal continued in silence. Because Zheng Xie's voice is very hoarse, it was very difficult for him to say every words. So Yang Wei Qi no longer make him talk.

| |

## Chapter 27.4: A quiet life

*Oh no..... Zheng Xie officially proposed to Yang Wei Qi in this chapter... Is there no more hope for him and He He now? How is he going to turn that around after formally proposing to Yang Wei Qi after his? Although I must say that his proposal is indeed very unromantic. Not surprising as he is a boring person after all.*

### Chapter 27.4: A quiet life

After she cleaned up the kitchen, she said: "I should not have listened to you. There is no feeling of celebration with no birthday cake."

"Our family never celebrate any birthday. So many years already, we are used to it."

Yang Wei Qi said: "That can be really bad. Birthday celebration is a luxury to me. After this, I have to take note of this."

"I am not as stern as my dad. Oh yes, I have something for you." Zheng Xie holding a small box, sat next to Yang Wei Qi and handed it to her.

Yang Wei Qi opened it. It is a very eye-catching blue diamond ring. Very simple and classic style with deeply embedded cut where the work was just perfect. The blue diamond occupy most of her knuckles. She was temporarily stunned.

Zheng Xie while putting the ring on her finger, said with a slight smile: "I once tried to imagine how I would arrange to present it to you with a little surprise. Hidding it in the cake, or presenting it in the wine glass but I am worried that it will cut your teeth at the same time. I also tried training Xiao Bao to bring the box over but it is refusing to co-operate. So eventually only could present it in this boring way, after all, I have also been boring."

Yang Wei Qi bowed her head and said: "I have always knew that you are not a romantic person. You do not have to do something that you are reluctant for me."

Zheng Xie said: "Then, you are willing to marry me?"

"Did I ever said that I am not willing?"

“A few days ago, I suddenly realized that we have already set the wedding date but I never seem to have proposed to you. What is this?”

“In fact, don’t you feel it is funny? You have not even proposed officially and I cannot wait to marry you.”

“Nonsense thinking. I just felt that it is unfair to you. Is this okay? If you do not like it, you can change for another one.”

Yang Wei Qi took a closer look at the ring on the finger. “Of course. How would I not like it?” She said. Then she make fun of it by saying: “Today is obviously your birthday. How come I am the one whom is receiving a gift?”

“Really? Who stole my limelight?” Zheng Xie casually asked.

When he saw Yang Wei Qi taking out the pendant from her collar, the smile that he had on the smile gradually faded.

The jeweled abacus beads pendant. Yang Wei Qi had a total of two, Sapphire and Ruby. She often change her pendant but this is among her most frequently wore pendant.

And this time she is wearing it again but it is green. If she had not found any alternatives, then the pendant should have belonged to another person. He had kept it for several years and finally took it out recently to give it to her as Christmas gift.

Zheng Xie’s mind is in a little chaos. He barely hear himself saying: “Congratulations. You finally collected the whole set.”

Yang Wei Qi said: “Coincidentally when I had given up looking for the other buyer, unexpectedly, He He had it. If I had not met her the other day and happen to be wearing the pendant that caught her attention, I may have missed it.”

Zheng Xie reach for a drink.

“I had never thought that, He He would actually be willing to part with it. I want to pay her but she insists that it would be my advance wedding present. She kept her promised the other day. This morning I received this. She should have loved this pendant a lot. I felt very sorry.”

“She is determined to send it to you. So you just accept it. She had never seem

to care about these things.”

“This is not cheap. It must have been a gift from the elders. I want to get her a gift in return. Are you free this weekend to go with me and help me choose?”

“I let my secretary Wei to accompany you. She may be better in recommending the gift.” Zheng Xie sounded hoarser than how he sounded earlier.

Yang Wei Qi went home that evening. She had something on early the following morning, so she went to bed early. In the meantime, Zheng Xie switched on his computer. He browse the internet and play card games while waiting for a message.

He drank a lot of water. Felt that the nose and throat were very uncomfortable. Yang Wei Qi before leaving had reminded him to take the medicine before going to bed. She even prepared honey sesame oil and vinegar for him to drink. It is not effective. Instead, his stomach began to ache.

Everything seems to be wrong that night. The cat, Xiao Bao, Yang Wei Qi and himself.

Yang Wei Qi found Xiao Bao missing from his little corner. They searched every corner of the house and finally found it fast asleep in an empty box among the garbage.

Zheng Xie broke into cold sweat. If no one realized it, tomorrow, when the part-time cleaner did not look carefully when taking out the trash, then it is likely inexplicably disappear.

Yang Wei Qi gave him a strange birthday present. He removed it layer after layer. At last, he found a card with a graffiti painting of a birthday cake. There were greetings written on it, blank in the middle before she sign her name at the bottom.

Yang Wei Qi said: “I thought and thought. You need nothing. And there are nothing that you love. Any gift for you, it will be tacky. So I am sending you one wish. As long as I could do it, I will definitely try to make it come true. Valid for one year.”

Zheng Xie said: “You read “神雕侠侣” and learn from Yang Guo?”



## 神雕侠侣 – *The Return of the Condor Heroes*

“Yes. You are not allowed to laugh. In fact, I have just finished reading the book. I stayed up for three nights and managed to finish reading it last night. So now, I am very sleepy. I wept last night because of Guo Xiang. How embarrassing.”

Zheng Xie turn the card and read it again. At first he thought that Yang Wei Qi was a little childish. But after half an hour, now, he felt that this behavior of Yang Wei Qi is very strange, nothing like her usual style. But rather like she had been possessed to be like He He, reminding him on the childhood pranks she use to play on him.

He He because of his previous discipline method, had silently resented him. She drew in a hard paper card image of wretched hideous cartoon animals, wolf, lion and fox with “big jerk, villain, big moron” etc curse words written on it. And then these cards are secretly stuffed into his study.

Thinking about He He, his stomachache became unbearable. Even his head is beginning to hurt.

## Chapter 27.5: A quiet life

*And so in the last chapter, Zheng Xie officially proposed to Yang Wei Qi. How did all of you felt? I was beyond frustration at that point. Wonder when we will read how Zheng Xie and He He got together... the road seems soooooooo long....*

*Although this chapter today is not getting to the point that we are all anticipating, there are some pretty interesting conversation between Zheng Xie and He He through interestingly QQ applicable. Anyone of you have that account? I used to have it many years ago and QQ actually got me re-connected with my long lost pen-pal from my high school days. The power of the early stage of online communication. Surprisingly, it is still around today.*

*Enjoy the read today! Hopefully tomorrow we will be back with more read. I am actually happy at the progress where I am still able to complete one post per day despite having to return to the working world. Already 6 weeks gone. Another 6 more weeks to completing my contract. Hopefully, I would be able to take another break after this project.*

### Chapter 27.5: A quiet life

He holds the phone and hesitated for a long time. He did not know what to say to her if he dialed the number. Ask her why she gave his gift away? Or thank her for the granting his fiancée's wish? Is it going to sound like he is blaming her? Reasons uses seems to be very strange.

His friend's call rescued him from his predicament. The friend said: "Have you received it? I sent it 30 minutes ago."

Zheng Xie said: "No"

"What is your QQ number? I will send it there. Probably the file is too big."

"I have never use that program. So I do not have QQ number. Well, tomorrow you contact my secretary. She will forward to me. I am going to bed now."

"Cannot. Man from Mars, you need to immediately help me to confirm as I need to finalized it tonight. Tomorrow is too late."

Zheng Xie on his side, in accordance to the guidance of his friend, downloaded

and install the software and quickly registered.

Registration was not successful. The interface displays shows that the system is busy. He suddenly recalled, about two years ago, He He had sent him a number. The reason why he remember is because the six-digit number is exactly his birthday. The password is reversed hence, He He is proud of it.

He thought that the number should have long ago become inactive and void. But when he tried to enter it, he was surprised to find that it is not invalid and the passwords still works.

He immediately phone the friend. The friend said: “You cow! Earlier you said never to have use QQ before. Now you can change the six-digit number that is strong. Really despite you these privileged class people.”

Quickly he resolved his friend’s problem. Zheng Xie did not feel any drowsiness. He began to learn his way around this program that he had never used before.

He change into stealth mode, view the records and friends list. The chat record is blank and there is only one person in the friends list. ‘呵呵地笑’. The avatar is the image of a cat. He recognized the cat. He He created the image a few months ago. The avatar is now gray (meaning that she is offline). He points to open the signature, a bunch of onomatopoeia: Hey ha ha sound strange voice or an affected manner.... Hahaha....

呵呵地笑 (pin ying: He He de xiao)

It seems that she was in a good mood recently. Zheng Xie could not help but turn the corner of his mouth into a small smile.

This number has not been deactivated, the main merit belongs to He He. She had been regularly login to keep it active. Every login, she would leave a message for record, almost once every two months.

In her first message: “I knew that you would have wasted this number. Have mercy on me for grabbing this from the hands of others. To do a week of labor for others, and even had to draw a few dozens of free pictures for others. Next time I will never send you any birthday gift.”

The next few messages are mostly: “X month XX date and Xiao He He is here.” On some days, she would write a few more words when she is in a good mood,

such as 'it is pay day today. I went online and bought the piece of amber bracelet. Life is really good.' And when she is in a bad mood, she would write a bunch of gibberish behind the curse. 'XXX and XXX! 贝戈戈与春虫虫'

贝戈戈与春虫虫！ - *translated in pin ying as bèi gē gē yǔ chūn chóng chóng!*  
(Unfortunately, I could not even make any sense of this)

Zheng Xie is feeling strange as he actually was able to understand immediately that it means 'cheap' and 'stupid'. He He had very strict discipline. That is basically her highest level of curse.

There is something very special, this day last year. He He had sent an email with a large capacity where she stuffed a dozens of PS spoof photos of him from the age of 1 till 29. She left the following message: "I can say that some of the photos here you don't have. I am very good, right?"

Such messages appear in 'my mailbox'. It looks like neuropathy sent it to himself. He found it very interesting the more he look.

Her latest entry was about one and a half month ago, but there were no comment this time.

In addition to that, there are still some of her mailbox with other email sent. Some are funny pictures and text. He seldom do light readings on the internet nor look at these silly things. This time, one by one he read them. By the time he got to the last email, he realized that it is already early morning.

He looked at the friends' column and see the only picture, it is still gray. He prepares to turn off the computer and was surprised to find the bottom right corner of the screen emerged a message box that prompts 'cackled' indicating a message. Zheng Xie move his mouse over to open it. There is only one mail that has a dynamic lighted candle on a birthday cake picture and the words: Happy Birthday!

Zheng Xie looked at it for a while. Turned off the page and turn off the program.

After a few seconds, he login again and point to open the dialogue page and write: "Why are you still up so late?"

One second, two seconds.... After a full ten seconds, finally the other side

responded: "Who are you?"

Zheng Xie do not know how to answer.

Then, after a long time, He He send back a message: "Brother, is that really you?"

Zheng Xie felt that the situation is more awkward that facing each other in negotiations. He type a few words, delete, and then re-enter and then delete.

He is not used to this kind of communication. In his exchange with anyone including those in foreign country, there have always been two ways, telephone or text messages.

He thought for a long time and then finally repeated his first words: "It is late. Do not stay up too late at night."

"How come you are also sleeping so late?" He He added on when he did not answer: "Thank you for sending me the gift. Then..... I have donated to sister-in-law. You would not mind, right?"

Zheng Xie found himself could not say anything. He kept quiet for a while before typing the word: "Do not mind."

Thinking that it is missing something, added: "Thank you."

He He sent an icon over but it only shows an X.

His started at the screen in silence for a while. And then finally say goodbye before turning off the computer. He went to the balcony for a smoke and after that, went to lie down next to Yang Wei Qi.

Yang Wei Qi rolled over drowsily and said: "Is it dawn yet?"

"No, it is only two o'clock. Did I wake you up?"

"You are still having a cold and yet still sleep so late at night?" She leaned against him and sniff his pajamas. "Coughing so badly, still smoke. Are you in a bad mood?"

"Nothing. You go to sleep."

Zheng Xie listen to her breathing that has become mild and gentle. She had fallen back fast asleep. While he is still wide awake.

Usually after midnight, if he is still awake, he will have insomnia. So he always try to avoid staying up late.

Thinking after dawn, there are a lot of things to do, he gently got up and took two sleeping pills. He grudgingly fell asleep as the morning sun are coming up. When he woke up, he did not even know when Yang Wei Qi left.

Finally, you have to live your own life and I do not want to show the sadness in the heart, just like those wanting to escape but not daring to break the silence.

| |

## Chapter 27.6: A quiet life

*Thank you everyone for all the comments and feelings shared on yesterday's post. Instead of individually replying to each and every of your comment, I decided to write about it in today's post before introducing what we are in for today. Firstly, I must say that reading all your comments and feelings actually helped to make my otherwise very tough day at work. Although I was not able to reply all, I had truly enjoyed reading them.*

*From all the comment, I guess everyone is as frustrated as I am about all three of them. And I do like Julie's comment about how YWC was the one whom had always made the effort to call ZX and he just had no 'balls' to tell her at every opportunity that he had about how he truly feels and to call it off before it is too late. I am 100% agreeable on the comment about ZX letting HH and YWC dragging him around by his nose... that was really entertaining as I actually had the image of ZX being pulled around by the nose by the 2 ladies.... (anyone can imagine how that would look like?)*

*The cat, Xiao Bao is truly so cute. How it actually ignored YWQ despite her effort to be friendly with Xiao Bao....*

*Smielia..... agree that ZX is truly a wimp still at this moment. It is just soooooooooo frustrating to read about how weak he is now vs the ZX at the start of this novel.*

*Tueysaloewa, hang on there.... I read somewhere that YWQ would be the one who breaks it off as she realized that ZX does not love her but someone else (oh yes, I am sure she know who it is too). I am as excited as you are anticipating that moment as cruel as it may sound for YWQ. Let's just hope that we don't have to wait too long for that moment.*

*Okay, without realizing, I had wrote the longest introduction I ever had since the start of the translation of this novel. Let's just get on with today's chapter. Translating this chapter indeed broke my heart a little... Zheng Xie and Yang Wei Qi is preparing for their wedding. Sigh.... Why Why Why? Although we are all fully aware of the Happy Ending (HE) to this novel, it is still heartbreaking having*

*to translate / read the part of ZX and YWQ preparing for their wedding. Poor YWQ as she is in for a total heartbreak when she decided to walk away. My heart indeed goes out to her.*

*This may be heartbreaking to most of us readers, I must compliment the author for writing this so well. It was seamless translation for me (this part at least) and the ups and down emotions of us readers. Enjoy the read!*

## **Chapter 27.6: A quiet life**

Zheng Xie and Yang Wei Qi started preparing for their marriage step by step. Wedding customs, taking wedding photos and getting the wedding supplies. Most of these arrangement were prepared by Yan Wei Qi. Zheng Xie gave her full authorization.

On the day that they were taking their wedding photos, it was after a night of heavy snow. The location was in the outskirts of a manor. The sunlight from the clouds revealed and the ray reflected on the shiny silver snow. Indeed very beautiful and unusual.

That day, Yang Wei Qi's main concern is about the long unhealed cold of Zheng Xie. Therefore, after each shot, she immediately attended to him getting him to dress warmly totally ignoring her own set of clothes that are thin and fully exposed to the cold. Zheng Xie has been particularly patience and co-operative with the photographer. The smile is in place to the envy of those younger assistants, saying that since they had joined this line of work, this couple is the most dazzling couple with good temperament that is also courteous. Even the photographer praised them.

Yang Wei Qi occasionally sigh as she turned the wedding album.

Zheng Xie asked: "These are not satisfactory? I felt that they are pretty good." In fact, he only roughly had a few glances.

"No. Each photos are very good. Unable to find fault in any of these photos. Perfect to the max." Looking over the hundreds of photos, almost no waste of the film. Each one can be use. In particular, those few outdoor shots in the snow, very dreamy.

"You women are really strange. If it is not up to expectation, becomes



unhappy. If it is good, then feeling uncomfortable.”

“Yes ah. Maybe I have a little pre-marital fear. Don’t you have any?”

Zheng Xie paused for a moment. “I don’t think so.”

“Haiz. Don’t want to see anymore. Do you want to give me some opinion on the wedding dress?” Yang Wei Qi handed him a pile of wedding gown design.

“Which one do you think is nice?”

Zheng Xie casually looked: “All looks good.”

“Please do not be so casual about it.”

Zheng Xie quickly go through the pile of design and pulled out one. “This one is relatively pleasing to the eye.”

Yang Wei Qi took a look and laughed: “What a coincidence. I love this one. He He said that you certainly would not fancy her design.”

“Who?”

“He He ah. When I last met her, she gave the orphanage children illustrator class, showing them designs of women dresses. Very beautifully panted. I asked her to send me some copies for reference. So she very seriously re-draw me a set.”

Zheng Xie stay quiet for a while and then said: “Did you not wanted to go and get a dress from Paris?”

“Love your motherland, boycott French goods.” Yang Wei Qi said while continued to turn the pile of designs. “I am tired of the foreign designs so I wanted a change of style. You look at my design and tell me if it is good or bad?” She handed one over to him.

“Oh. Not bad.”

Yang Wei Qi laughed. “Against your will.”

“If you don’t want the one from Paris. Then those from Milan should be good as well. I accompany you to go over to get them.”

“How come suddenly so active? You have never shown any interest in the preparations of this marriage.”

“Well, whatever you want.”

When Cen Shi needed to head to Y city for a three days’ work trip, He He took a ride with him to come back to settle a few things.

She plans to go to C City after the Spring Festival. She wanted a change of environment. Either to work there for a while or to continue her studies.

Back at home with mother for a while, unfortunately, the inland climate of A City still not suitable for He He. She had a very difficult few months. Epistaxis, pharyngitis attack, dry skin, dehydration, and even frostbite. Only a few hundreds of kilometers away, even after so many years, she could still not get accustomed to it.

He He is a person that finds it difficult to adapt to any changes. Even a day tour to the neighboring tour, she will not be used to it.

Across the city, several provinces away, C City is the coastal city. She was schooling there before. There are many old classmates still residing there. And after Spring Festival, Cen Shi will conclude his work in the province and will be returning there. And so, He He thinks that she will not be lonely staying over there. He He’s mother also did not stop her decision.

This time, she learned her lesson so gave Zheng Xie a call after arriving, only to be told that he is currently away on a business trip but will be returning soon.

The next day, after having dinner with Cen Shi, she accompany him to the mall to buy some clothes.

“Tomorrow after my brother invited us both for a meal.”

Cen Shi asked: “Can I not go?”

“After Spring Festival, we will be heading to C City. Then you will be free. Now, let’s act to the end.

“Actually, I quite like the feeling of being bound.” Cen Shi have a hippie smile. “Hey, do you not really think that there is opportunity to make the fake become real?”

“Didn’t you have a new girlfriend? Don’t think that I do not know.”

“Look..... that is my ex-girlfriend. Why? Jealous?”

“Pei, unrequited love.”

Cen Shi is very picky. They shopped around for over an hour but was not able to buy anything. Cen Shi try to find a topic of conversation: “He had returned today.”

“I know. He had given me a call. Wanted to make dinner meet up tonight. I said that I have a date with you, so change to tomorrow.”

“You actually choose me over ‘Prince’ Zheng? I really feel much honored, ah.”

“Please do not be so narcissistic. He just came back from his business trip today, so he should be having a good reunion with his fiancée. So I do not want to be a light bulb.”

“What a thoughtful sister. If I were your brother, I would definitely love you to death.”

“Hey, how you know that he came back today?” He He changed the subject.

“It’s complicated. Well, it is a long story. Not worth mentioning.”

||

## Chapter 27.7: A quiet life

*TGIF! Another week has past.... Time really flies. I am so glad that I have been able to keep up to my target of 1 post per day to keep everyone going with the novel. Thank you so much for all the words of encouragement and comments daily sharing your thoughts on the progress of the story. The comments and thoughts sharing after each post actually keeps me going in my translation interest as well as helped me to get past through some of those tough moments at work where I needed a break.*

*So the wedding preparation is in progress (much to my dismay although knowing that it will not happen after all the preparation). When is the turning point? After the end of yesterday post, I felt that we are in for something exciting in today's post..... What is it exactly?*

*Enjoy the read!*

### Chapter 27.7: A quiet life

Cen Shi was quite taken aback today. Although he refuses to accept Zheng Xie but he is actually very timid. He prefers not to have meet him. But he is always destined to meet with Zheng Xie. Just like a few hours ago.

Cen Shi was attending the annual meeting of the World Election Observation in a Grand Hotel. After the meeting, half-eaten the meal, he and another fellow member went up to the top floor viewing area to have a talk about something.

Ordinarily Zheng Xie has always been low-key with unpredictable whereabouts. It is difficult to meet him in person. However, as a result, in such a short time, Cen Shi actually met him. He thinks that he should have bought lottery today.

What makes it worst, it is a female colleague. And it is also the one that He He mentioned, his ex-girlfriend. At the moment when Zheng Xie saw them, they were tugging back and forth. The aggressive woman whispered: "Cen Shi, you give me an explanation. What exactly do you want?"

Cen Shi encountered her recently. And they have gotten involve again. So the woman's feeling bloom again. But Cen Shi's lukewarm attitude causes her

desperation.

The woman said chokingly: "You cannot do this to me."

He cleared his throat, trying to persuade her with a few words. And then they heard someone say very politely: "Excuse me, please let me through." They realized that they were blocking the door.

Cen Shi apologies, drag the woman and step aside. Although there were no indecent scene earlier, it is also not a good sight for the guests. Strange as obviously there were no one else there earlier.

But, just the voice earlier, though it is a bit hoarse, it is familiar.

When he looked up, he turned a little green. The guest whom asked him to step aside, although is pale but still the handsome Zheng Xie! Zheng Xie even say "Thank you" before leaving.

Where life does not meet.....

Somewhat empty-handed, they went downstairs to the newly decorated famous area. Something caught He He's eyes and she pulled Cen Shi's sleeves and said: "Why not I gift you that shirt? I still owe you one from last time."

A week ago, He He spilled a whole cup of coffee on Cen Shi's shirt. Cen Shi clenched his teeth while saying that it was his most expensive shirt.

Cen Shi said: "You are taking a joke too seriously." He glanced at the brand that He He was pointing at and said: "Girl, after all these years, you are really not simple. You know such a popular yet low-key brand? This brand just arrived into the country."

"Quick pick one. Don't be such a nagging person. I feel that I have never got you any gift."

"When I become as important as your brother Zheng Xie, then you buy this brand shirt for me as gift is not too late. We buy another brand."

"Forget it if you don't want. Once past, it is gone."

"You sure turn your face very fast. Haiz, who wants to miss this opportunity, ah. Give you the chance."

The result can really be unexpected. God once again confirmed that Cen Shi's fate in meeting Zheng Xie.

The counter is large. When Cen Shi and He He were going through the colors available for the shirt, on the other end, Yang Wei Qi and Zheng Xie holding two paper bags were passing through.

Yang Wei Qi said: "Today I bought a lot of things. You have nothing to buy?"

"Nothing that caught my attention. There is nothing that I required as well."

She was glad to see the counter. "You see, this brand here is your favourite brand, right? I remember that you have at least two dozen of shirt in your closet that is this brand."

"When I went to school, I bought my first shirt under this brand. Then it had become a habit. Cannot say that I like this brand."

Yang Wei Qi gently squeezed his arms. "You do not have many pleasures in life. Buy a tie, okay?"

"Up to you."

He was dragged by Yang Wei Qi before the tie rack. She asked him which one of the tie are good, he shook his head. She brought him to a section. Zheng Xie either say 'okay' or 'normal' to her selections. The result, Yang Wei Qi took all the ones that he said 'okay' and asked for them to be packed up.

Zheng Xie could not help but laugh. "You are not copying the boring movie. Really troublesome."

Yang Wei Qi laughed. "Isn't it fun? You have also watched the 'boring' film." She pulled his hand when Zheng Xie handed over his credit card. "This one let me get for you."

"Whose money is the same, isn't it? Is it necessary to divide so clearly?"

"Of course not. It is not the same still for now." Yang Wei Qi insisted.

When they went over to the other end of the counter, they saw He He and Cen Shi.

Yang Wei Qi saw the little mood swing changes in Zheng Xie. She looked at He

He again and took her own initiative. “Standing here to talk is not comfortable. Let’s go upstairs for a cup of tea, okay?”

||

## Chapter 27.8: A quiet life

*Its finally the weekend. It has been a long week at work. Looking forward to a peaceful weekend ahead.*

*The chapter yesterday was not as exciting as I had expected it to be. Just another day where both couple met each other when they were out. I wonder what lies ahead for us in today's chapter?*

### Chapter 27.8: A quiet life

Upstairs is an elegant Western-Style cafes. The two men have no common topics so after a few pleasantries, both were silence. Only the two women had common topics. They chat about Jay Chou's concert to discussing about juvenile protection law. And then because both men were quiet not wanting to join the discussion, they gradually stop.

Zheng Xie began to cough. He He asked: "Last month, I heard Uncle Zheng said that you have a cold. You have not recovered since then?"

"Nothing much. Almost recovering." He deliberately want to contain his cough but could not stop from coughing fiercely. Yang Wei Qi who was sitting on his side, gently pat his back. Zheng Xie apologies and got up to leave.

He He had never seen him coughing so badly before. She saw him getting up, immediately got up as well. Then she sat down again because she suddenly remembered that since his fiancée is here, she will naturally take care of him.

Yang Wei Qi considerately said to her: "I go to ask to prepare a drink for his cough. You go and send him a packet of tissues. He forgot to bring with him." He He nodded and hurried out.

She found Zheng Xie in the hallway next to a tall palm tree. And he seems to be waiting for her.

He He step down and walked towards him. "Are you okay? Do you need to see a doctor?"

"After Spring Festival, you will be leaving? With him?"



He He vaguely nodded her head.

Zheng Xie looked up to the chandelier in the corridor then watched the swaying palm tree leaves. Seems like he is considering how to open his mouth. He sighed slightly and chooses the most direct way: “He is not for you.”

“You have always been biased against him. He is a good man.”

“A good man is not necessary a good man. He He, I don’t want to see you getting hurt again.”

“I know what I want.”

He He, can you not be so self-willed?”

He He suddenly wants to cry. She tried so hard to escape but he does not seems to let it go.

“My brother. Why do you always think that I am too stupid? Or I am nothing? I have a judgement but also enough endurance. Without your shelter, I too can live.” She said this with courage but dare not look up.

Zheng Xie’s lip shook but he did not say anything. He took a deep breath: “Your endurance includes, knowing that he is mixing with other women with unclear relationship, you pretend not to know or you just do not care?”

“This is my problem. I will deal with it. That was his ex-girlfriend.” He He emboldened and inadequately say.

“He He, I know more than you about man who hurt another woman. Naturally he may also hurt you. He had hurt you once, may also hurt you a second time. Why women believe that they might be the only one, regardless that the other party is a multi-center?”

He He looked up at him with a shocked look. “My brother, you have hurt a lot of women in the past. I even have witness their many tears. Because you are teaching me to deny a man with a history and my future. Then my brother, is your history clean? Your fiancée had also known about your past?”

Zheng Xie stumped. He did not expect that for the other party, He He actually went against him.

He He continued and said: “If Ms Yang would have heard your remarks just

now, she will be very sad now.”

“He He, I am doing this for your own good. I do not want you to.....” Zheng Xie finds it difficult to say the right words now.

“I know. From young until now, you have done a lot for me. But my brother, I have already grown up. I can take care of myself. And you have now someone more worthy of your care. I am not your blood sister, you do not need to think of me as your responsibility. If it is because of my father..... that more is not necessary. After all, it is part of his job. All these years, you and your family have done enough for me. Have you not thought before that your care is making me uneasy? Become my greatest burden?” He He whispered.

“You feel that my relationship with you as a burden?” Zheng Xie asked with a hoarse voice.

“Yes” He He said and shivered. “We are not people of the same world. Don’t you think so? Because you have been too good to me, I could not go away. However, I really have no way to be in the circle that does not belong to me. I find it very hard and I have very low self-esteem. I felt like I have mistakenly broke into a house when I am lost. In this house, it is comfortable and beautiful but it is not where I belong. Everything is misfits to me.” She paused and then continued: “No matter how much you do not like Cen Shi, but we are people of the same kind. He is able to read my mind. He knows the nature of what I like. And you.... You and Yang Wei Qi are from the same world. You do not need to make any changes and she is already as how you wanted. So, do not care about me anymore. I beg you, okay?”

“He He, I understand what you mean. Are you saying that my presence is your greatest pressure, so you just want to run away? Just like how you tried to run away from Auntie Lin, right? You have insisted on going to C City to study. After graduation, unwilling to work with me after graduation. I think that your man is unconditionally negative. Are these the reason?” Zheng Xie continued to say.

“No.....”

“As for Cen Shi. You may not necessarily like him but because I do not like him, so you want to be with him. Because he is able to help you to stay away from me, right?”

Tears rolled down He He's face. "Up to you what you want to think. I am going to leave soon anyway."

Zheng Xie came back alone.

||

## Chapter 27.9: A quiet life

*Last chapter was pretty interesting with the conversation between Zheng Xie and He He, right? Sorry that it ended with such a cliff-hanging part.*

*Weekend sure flies by. It is already Sunday and tomorrow would be the start of a new week. Here, wishing everyone a Happy Sunday and have a fantastic week ahead! Enjoy the read for today.*

### Chapter 27.9: A quiet life

Yang Wei Qi said: "Hey, you did not see He He?"

"She went downstairs to see the Barbie doll."

"I go and find her. I also want to look at those dolls." She left the two men after finished talking.

Zheng Xie quietly drink the tea that has become cold.

After a while, Cen Shi said: "It is getting late. We wait for them in the parking lot." He looked for a waiter and asked for the bill.

Zheng Xie was looking down at his phone when Cen Shi asked for the bill. He did not see when Zheng Xie put down the phone. As he reached for the bill, Zheng Xie looked up and hold his wrist. "Let me take this bill."

On the surface, Zheng Xie seems to only grab his hand lightly but in fact, Zheng Xie buckle the finger on the back of his hand. It seems like he is using all the strength because Cen Shi felt like his bones is about to be broken. Even the blood flow felt like it had been blocked on his aorta.

The waiter waited quietly for the result of their dispute completely unaware that from the innocent appearance, the poor innocent hand is facing the risk of a fracture.

Cen Shi gave a hollow laugh or two and then effortlessly loosen the bill. Zheng Xie at the same time, let go of his band while saying softly: "Thank you." Cen Shi said: "I should be the one that say 'Thank you'. Thank you for letting go of my hand and for buying me tea."

After the waiter left, Zheng Xie said coldly: “You should know why. Treat her better. If you dare to make her sad one more time, believe it or not, even if you are in c City, I will make it hard for you too.”

“Of course I believe. But Mr Zheng, the treat you are extending this time is very mediocre. It is too detrimental to your style. If the words get out, people will laugh. Many years ago, the way you threaten me is way more elegant than how it is now.”

Zheng Xie put his phone into his pocket, got up and left.

Cen Shi smiled behind him and said: “Do you know that, Mr Zheng Xie, since ancient time, people who threaten their son-in-law, later will be sad when they discover that their daughter is no longer theirs. It is a reality.”

Zheng Xie did not even turn to look back. Cen Shi laughed and laughed. Depression swept away.

Cen Shi got into the driver seat to drive the car, He He lying in the car motionless.

Cen Shi pushed her: “Hey, don’t fall asleep. Fasten the seat belt.”

He He looked up and took a few deep breaths. Her chest felt the tightness. She opened the window to the maximum. The north wind whistling outside the window with some snow drifting into the car. Several sheets of paper in the car were blown away.

Cen Shi snapped her head back from the window. Just now, a car rushed by very closely to their car and was very close to He He’s head. He started cold sweat. “What is wrong with you? Do not play such childish games....”

He He paled and spoke feebly. “This is all your fault. Even if you were provoked by your ex-girlfriend, why did you let him see you and her? How come you specifically like to haunt your ex-girlfriend?”

“Anger. This is the standard of your anger. What is going on?”

He He did not reply. She thought: “You are ordered to dump me? Did not let you bring me to C City?”

He He said with her red eyes: “Blaming you for being so stupid, resulting me in

saying a bunch of wrong words.”

“Did you in order to speak in my defenses, had offended Prince Zheng? Well, that’s not the beauty of my death?”

He He started to cry. “I did not intend to say those words. He must think me as an ungrateful person. He now must have hated me.”

“This young Miss Xiao, don’t get too excited. Wait till tomorrow and then apologized to him. Prince Zheng is an adult, after loving you for more than 20 years, he will not ignore you.” He saw the tears rolling non-stop down He He’s cheek with no sign of stopping. He took a deep sigh and pass her a packet of tissues. “Hei, do not take for granted on what I am saying. Is it because he is getting married that you are using me now?”

He He wipe her tears aside and said: “Fxxk you!”

Cen Shi sigh and pulled the car over at the side of the road. He took a piece of tissue and wipe her tears. “If you like him, then go and tell him now. The lady is now only a fiancée and not Mrs. Zheng yet. You are not too late yet.”

He He grabbed his hand and with her fingernails pinched down mercilessly. Cen Shi exclaimed: “Ah! My hand is going to break.”

He He listened to his genuine cry of pain and immediately let go. Cen Shi turned on the light, under the light, he saw the bruising on his left hand. The purple finger marks!

He He is surprised and gave a cry. “How did you get this?”

“Prince Zheng caused this. I had heard people mentioning about this stunt, but I do not believe until today when I personally experienced it.”

He He felt embarrassed and weakly said: “Let me drive. Wait.... There is a pharmacy over there. Let me go and buy you a bottle of medicine.”

As she put the medicine on Cen Shi, she heard him muttered: “Ms Xiao, do you think, if I were to sue Prince Zheng for personal injury, how much would the compensation be based on his worth and reputation?”

He He’s hand stop and she solemnly said: “Prince Cen, I beg you. Tonight, can we not mentioned his name? As for your question earlier, I really never have

thought about it. Never had. Would you believe me?"

Cen Shi put on the laughing expression. "I believe." He sighed and repeated, "I really believe that."

||

## Chapter 27.10: A quiet life

*A happy Monday! Have a fantastic week ahead everyone. Where have time flown by?*

*In the last chapter, Zheng Xie had 'accidentally' hurt Cen Shi. Is it accidental or he is doing it deliberately because he was upset with He He?*

*Some interesting conversation between He He and Cen Shi. He He is still denying how she feels about Zheng Xie..... Sigh! I wonder when we will get to read about He He admitting to how she truly feels?*

*Enjoy the read today! Hope that everyone will have a fantastic start of the week!*

### Chapter 27.10: A quiet life

In the other car, Zheng Xie whom as always drives his car very fast. But he is not steady tonight. He illegally overtakes a car, he flashed and almost hit into the other car.

Yang Wei Qi noticed his poor state, touched his forehead and then held his hand: "Fortunately no fever. But how come your hand is shaking? Are you feeling uncomfortable? Do you want to go to the hospital?"

"Tomorrow. It is late tonight. I am feeling a little tired. I want to sleep earlier." Zheng Xie slowed down the car.

"That is right. You just got back today. I should not have dragged you out shopping."

"It is okay."

"Tomorrow afternoon....."

"I have cancelled the dinner."

"Why?"

"Nothing. We have seen each other today."

Yang Wei Qi hesitate and then asked: "Did you had a dis-agreement with He



He?”

Zheng Xie is silent.

“You have not seen her for a long time. Why when you meet her, you make it uncomfortable for each other. When I went downstairs to look for her, she was weeping.”

“Let’s not mentioned about her. Let’s change the subject.”

“Then, do you think, if I were to ask her to be my maid of honor, would she be willing?”

Zheng Xie looked straight ahead and said: “Then, change another subject.”

Yang Wei Qi gently sighed: “Sometimes, I really sympathize with you. Even when you are angry, people are so depressed. You must have so little pleasures in life.”

They remain silent all the way.

When Yang Wei Qi got home, she finally broke the silence. She said: “Just take it as me at wrong earlier. You don’t pull a long face and smile please.”

Zheng Xie smiled a little: “I am just in a bad mood. You don’t mind me.”

“You will actually admit to being in a bad mood? I thought you have always been in control of your emotions and mood.”

They sat quietly in the car for a while. Yang Wei Qi said: “Recently, I feel like I am in a trance. I keep thinking about the moment when we first met. Do you still remember it?”

“The parking lot?” Zheng Xie thought for a moment before answering.

“And then there is the blind date. Just like the beginning to a novel. But novel are usually tortuous. Whereas we were so smooth sailing, incredibly smooth, almost like a dream-like.”

“You have been working too much overtime recently and did not get enough rest. So you are over thinking everything.”

“Maybe.”

The next day, yang Wei Qi met up with a magazine columnist. She has been

providing them with female rights legal advisory services. And their personal friendship is also good.”

“Such a great weekend, not accompanying your fiancé, but instead come and work overtime with me. You are such a workaholic!”

“I would be travelling for a week. So I did not want to you to miss your column.”

When she heard the destination of her trip, she gasped: “That place is bad for you. The weather is bad, people are downright fast. You are getting married soon, a trip over there, even enduring for weeks, you would not be able to restore your skin. Your boss is not taking good care of you?”

“I requested. The place is close to nature, less urban atmosphere. With that, you can think more clearly.”

“I heard that woman are most likely to get marriage phobia. Guess you are no exception.”

Yang Wei Qi bent down to pick up a dropped napkin from the ground. The necklace inside her collar slip out, exposing the chain where her ring were hanging.

“Wow! What a beautiful diamond. He must be very fond of you.”

“Why you do not say that he loves me a lot? Or that he is very rich?” Yang Wei Qi said softly.

“Slip of the tongue. Slip of the tongue.” The other party shrugged.

Yang Wei Qi gently sighed: “Last time you said that man has red and white rose complex. Actually I was just thinking, if it not that some men are like little prince. When there is already a rose in his mind, then other roses, no matter what color or species, all other ten thousand roses are just another rose.”

“For someone who is getting married. Do not overthink everything. You are a person in legal profession, you should pay more attention to the evidence. Diamond is the deposit while marriage certificate is property rights. Something that you already have in hand, why care about what others do?”

“I am probably a little burnout recently.”

“Okay. Before you had said, there are three type of quality that you admired the most in a man. Courage, responsibility and family. Zheng Xie are exactly all these. In fact, there are no many women who are lucky enough to encounter their favorite type.”

“Yes ah. How come I am so lucky?”

“My good friend said, when it comes to man, not to be too serious. As long as it is the matter of principle, closing an eye would be better.” The editor said: “Let’s get back down to business talk. A person like me does not have such luck like you.”

||

## Chapter 27.11: A quiet life

*As I have mentioned at the start of Chapter 27, this is an extremely long chapter. With today's chapter, we are only half-way through the chapter. I hope towards the end of Chapter 27 is the turning point between He He, Zheng Xie, Yang Wei Qi and Cen Shi. When I decided to start a translation project, I had in fact searched for a short novel not realizing that this novel although is only 35 chapters + 4 epilogue, in fact is truly a long novel. Luckily the story is interesting enough to get me going and is determine to complete the novel.*

*Today's part is finally a little more exciting than the last few chapters. Though not too exciting, it does gives us a clearer insight on how Yang Wei Qi is realizing something leading to her going away for a while. Although it initially was because of work, she had decided to stay away for a while as well.... What exactly is in her mind now? Will we find out in this chapter yet? Read on.....*

### Chapter 27.11: A quiet life

Zheng Xie life continues boringly. In the eyes of others, it is regular and almost mechanical like. During the day, he had several meetings and negotiations to sign contracts. Because his efficiency is too high, often he have nothing left to do. So he did nothing. While his subordinates will shudder with fear. He had recovered from his cold though his cough is still lingering around, not healing. So he is idler as he do not attend more dinner events.

Yang Wei Qi business trip is into a very remote place. It has been almost a week but there is no sign of her returning. He has wanted to look for her but also used to not having her around. As long he is used to anything, then it is okay.

After the outburst with He He the other day, they had made no contact at all.

Perhaps their relationship is not strained. He He just said something that she never had said. At that moment, both of them were agitated so those words were overboard. He later thought about it and realized that she were reasonable as well.

For He He, all these years he had indeed been too self-righteous. And he had over protected her, as a result may potential caused greater harm to her. More

than he may have realized. After so many years, he may have been ignorant.

He is not sad as he has a strong heart. What really affected him was when he heard those words, his presence is a burden to her. He felt the vacant in his heart, as if a chunk of it had been scooped out.

Actually, that place has already grown a single tumor. Although he had been blinded but it had been slowly growing. Become hidden but now been cut off by the knife. It is good as it brought some relief.

That night he went to a party. He has always been invited to these parties but he had always turned them down. It has become the norm so when he promised to attend, his friends were surprised.

The party is nothing more than playing cards and get-together. In the poker room, the TV on the wall were one with no sound. Only the images flashing.

Zheng Xie sits just facing the TV. While he was playing with the cards, he was also looking at the screen. One of them who only won two games, said in anger: "This is not fair. Just turn off the TV"

They gaze at the TV, although it is on silent, there are subtitled at the bottom. Zheng Xie while playing the cards were also focused on the emotional talk shows. Children, family and even parents. When an elegant woman was wiping away her tears, she was complaining about the years where her feelings were trampled by her boyfriend.

Someone next to Zheng Xie touched his forehead: "This is terrible. This man's brain has been burned. He is now even watching this type of show."

Zheng Xie nimbly dodged his hand. The others said: "This is marriage phobia before marriage."

Because Zheng Xie had not gathered with them for a long time, they combine the dinner as his first bachelorette party. Invited a large group to come and eat. They also hired a female singer as well as someone to do magic to add to the fun.

Zheng Xie was drinking some wine. Because he had quiet drinking not long ago as well as he has not fully recovered from his recent illness, he drank modestly.

There were some less familiar faces in the gallery. Some friends of friends.

People whom he may have cross path with before but never interacted. When the group of people were all tipsy or lying down, with the exception of Zheng Xie, he only saw an unfamiliar young man whom were still sober.

Just before dinner, they were introduced. Mu Ge, a friend of a friend. He is also Yang Wei Qi's boss. When the friend introduce him to Zheng Xie, he said: "This is the employer of your family."

At this point, he raise the glass and move towards the moment: "Mr Zheng, I wish you and Wei Qi a good marriage." Faint tone but not enthusiasm.

Zheng Xie did not decline but drank the cup of wine.

That night, Zheng Xie called Yang Wei Qi. He felt that everything is not right and then realized that it is because she had not call him for several nights.

"Is work not well with you? How come you have gone for so long?"

"It is okay. The environment here is really good. So I take it as taking a short vacation."

"It is the back country and also winter. How can there be any fun?"

"Snowy mountains. Ice Lake. It is beautiful here. Everyone is busy preparing for the New Year. I learn to make bread from the aunty of the Art School and learn ice-fishing from the children."

"Sound like you are doing well. I thought you would had suffered."

"Fortunately. It is just not very convenient. Do you miss me?"

"When are you coming back?"

"In few more days." Yang Wei Qi was silent on the phone for a while before saying: "Zheng Xie, do you love me?"

"What happen to you?"

"Nothing. I am just bored. Do you love me?"

"I really like you." A few seconds later, Zheng Xie answer from the other end of the phone.

Just two days later, Zheng Xie met Yang Wei Qi's boss again.

It is normal for them to cross path again. They have the same circle of friends. Perhaps they had even cross path in the past but just never had the interaction. Once they met, they discover that both of them often cross path, just like how it was the same between Zheng Xie and Yang Wei Qi.

Zheng Xie as pulled to join his friends that day. His buddies said: “Ah Xie, after you are married, it would be harder to get you to come and meet us for a get-together.”

Zheng Xie’s buddies recently had asked Mu Ge to help them with some difficult cases. So often invited him out.

That day, Mu Ge was a little high. Out of the group of people, only Zheng Xie was convenience in sending him home.

Mu Ge in his drunkenness, was totally different from his calm self the other time. He asked: “Wei Qi has not come back yet?”

“You are her boss. How you do not know about your subordinated whereabouts?”

“I have only the whereabouts of her when it is work related. During her vacation time, it is beyond my control.”

Zheng Xie was silence.

||

## Chapter 27.12: A quiet life

*And so, Yang Wei Qi had gone to the countryside for work and then after completing the work there, she had extended her vacation there without Zheng Xie's knowledge. Even their last telephone conversation, when she suddenly asked Zheng Xie if he loves her, he only vaguely replied that he really likes her. Is Yang Wei Qi having a second thought about their marriage? Will we be able to find out today?*

### Chapter 27.12: A quiet life

Mu Ge now understands. "Oh, you do not know that her work has completed three days ago. She is now on vacation."

"Lawyer Mu, in your line, do you have a lot to say?"

"Not necessarily. Wei Qi is one of those whom rarely talk. It seems lesser these days as well. Do you know why?"

"If one is required to talk a lot for work, then during personally time, in order not to think too much, would rarely talk because of tiredness."

Mu Ge laughed twice. "They say you are a person who never reveal any emotions. It seems that the rumors are not true."

"Legend says that you like to interfere. This is no lie."

To avoid the city traffic, Zheng Xie took the smaller road. Less traffic and pedestrians.

He gradually accelerate the speed. As it was stable, beginning one would not be aware. Until Lawyer Mu looked out of the window and saw the roadside reflector lamp and street scene is blur, then glancing over at the speedometer, cold sweat quickly breaks out over his body. "Mr Zheng, speeding is not only illegal but also contrary to civic and moral."

Zheng Xie push the pedal even harder, the speed is almost 200km per hour. He even maintained the speed for Mu Ge to calmly bend over to pick up the lighter from the car carpet. His unhurried voice said: "I want to go home early."



“I believe that you want to shorten the time spend with me. In fact, I do not mind that you drop me off now.”

Zheng Xie dismissively asked: “Are you sure?” The car window shows the middle section of the highway before a village with closed shops. He accelerated more.

So Mu Ge dare not to say another word, so as not to interfere with his concentration while drive. He was praying hard in his heart to remain calm. Luckily at the moment, because of the dizziness from being drunk, otherwise it cannot be guarantee that he would not shout out like when one is taking the roller coaster ride. He regretted in provoking the legendary emotionless face person.

Only in about half of the normal time, Zheng Xie arrived in Mu Ge’s home. Mu Ge hold on to a tree and retched a few times. But nothing was coming out. He wave his hands towards Zheng Xie: “Thank you. But the whole way here, I also cannot remember the scenery. There are many speed camera in the city, be careful that you were photographed. Bye. I shall not send you.”

Finally, Zheng Xie had to help him upstairs, open the door for him. And then putting him to bed in the bedroom. He also helped him to pour a cup of water.

Mu Ge, lying on the bed while clutching his head said: “Man, I really dislike you. But yet, there are people who just love you to dead.”

“You are drunk!”

“But when it comes to drawbacks, you don’t seem to have any. So even when I do not like you, I felt very sorry.”

“Do not feel sorry, because I do not like you.”

“But now I find that I kind of like you.”

“I am sorry but I am not interested in men.”

“It seems that you do not have much interest in women.”

“You are drunk.”

Mu Ge clutching his head and said: “I could not understand why a person like you whom are born with silver spoon in the mouth, nothing that you don’t have.

So you have don't care attitude, never seem to cherish.....”

Zheng Xie coolly said: “Please believe me. I am also very worried because of this.” He walked towards the bedroom door. “Lawyer Mu, next time if you are in a bad mood, please do not drink so much wine. You will get drunk easily. Also, if you are drunk, please say as little as you could.”

“Zheng Xie, let me ask you one last question. Have you ever had something that you want but cannot get?”

Zheng Xie's answer is the loud slamming of the door.

Weekend is here! Zheng Xie drove to the small village where Yang Wei Qi is at. Hundreds of miles away. Usually it takes only two hours to get there but because of the heavy snow in so sections, it took him slightly longer to get there.

He found Yang Wei Qi in one of the farmer's home learning knitting from the mistress of the home. This village is famous for their knitting.

Yang Wei Qi looked a little surprised to see him. There is a little joy on her face but there are also some expression that is not clear.

Zheng Xie said: “I come to take you home”

“I am planning to go home tomorrow. You don't need to come here.”

“The road is not far. I should have come earlier.”

Zheng Xie intended to spend the night there. But Yang Wei Qi took into account that Zheng Xie would not be accustomed to living in such a place. So she packed up her stuff and left with him in the afternoon to return to the Y City.

They were driving, one after another through the country roads. On the highway, when the sun was going down and the city's landmarks is finally in sight, Zheng Xie received a call from Yang Wei Qi. “A friend own a great hotel. Follow me. I will buy your dinner tonight.” She overtook in front of Zheng Xie's car.

The hotel is located by the seaside suburb with a row of beautiful cottage. This is followed by shelter belts with pine needles covering the ground. The car park is located next to a small patch of pine forest.

This place has recently been included in the urban planning map. The story has

a very authentic fishing feeling. The decoration is simple with wood tables and chairs, tablecloths and coarse cotton curtains. The honest and straightforward boss personally served them while saying: “These are truly wild and fresh.”

Yang Wei Qi took the bowl of food. “You eat more. You seems to be thinner from the time I left.”

“You recently seems to be doing a lot of self-cultivation. You seems to like to return to the nature.”

“Nature is good. Once can see more clearly the heart. See, how good it is to be here, having dinner while listening to the sea. You can also watch the sunset.”

As she spoke, the huge red ball is slowly sinking into the sea. The sky is rendered as a colored silk.

“Zheng Xie, do you like the sun?”

“Not too bad.”

“But the look on your face were very ecstatic when you were watching the sun set earlier.”

“I was just thinking of something from the past. Nothing. Let’s just eat.”

It is clearly very dark now. When the boss came to send the next dish, found them sitting in the dark room with no lights. She smiled and said: “This couple want to have a candlelight dinner?”

“Forgot to switch it on. Could you please help to switch it on? Thank you.” Yang Wei Qi said.

The boss turned on the light while still talking: “Oh! It is good to be young. So dark can still eat” as she was walking out.

Yang Wei Qi asked: “How come you do not ask me, why never come back after finishing things over there?”

“If you want to share, you will do it naturally.”

“I thought you would quarrel with me because of this.”

“Do you like to quarrel? Is it not noisy enough in the court?”

“I have a little regret as I have never had any argument with you.”

“But I do not like to argue.” Zheng Xie say while bowing his head to drink the soup.

Yang Wei Qi smiled: “Zheng Xie, do you love me?” She seems to have forgotten that a few days ago, she had asked this question over the phone.

“You are worthy to be love.”

“Then, do you love me?”

Zheng Xie looked straight into her eyes and said nothing.

“Have you loved or ever loved anyone?” She stared at him.

Zheng Xie downcast his eyes, fiddled with vegetables with the chopsticks and said: “Does all women like to ask these silly questions?”

“Are these questions silly?”

Zheng Xie remain silence.

||

## Chapter 27.13: A quiet life

*How time flies..... It is already Thursday and we are now on the 2nd last week of June. Half a year has flown by.... It has been 3.5 months since I started translating this beautiful C-Novel and sharing it with everyone here. Thank you everyone for the wonderful journey.*

*Sorry for the cliffhanging ending in yesterday's chapter. The chapter today is indeed a very much clearer to how Yang Wei Qi is feeling and her thoughts. Is this where she is going to let go Zheng Xie? Let's find out together.....*

### Chapter 27.13: A quiet life

Yang Wei Qi said: "These day, when I am avoiding you, I have been thinking about some things. I thought most not about my past, the present and the future but about my mother. My current mother. I told you before right? My mother died early so my current mother took me home. To the outsider, she said that I am her birth daughter. And I am treated like her own daughter. In addition to those whom are very familiar with the situation, no one knows about my birth secrets. Everyone only know me as Ms Yang, the 2nd daughter of the Yang family. No one take me as a concubine's daughter identity. At least not in my presence. Even in treatment, it has never happen."

"When I know of my birth secret, I doubted her and thought what exactly she wants. By taking me back home, did she wanted to torture me in revenge? I carefully avoided her for many years, even deliberately stayed away from home."

"Until a few years ago, when she was seriously ill, I accompany her. We finally open up and talk. I did not think that she would actually think that Mr Yang and my birth mother are sinners but that she is hindrance to their happiness. She took me home and was kind to me to fulfill Mr Yang's wishes and also for her own peace of mind."

"Zheng Xie, do you believe that such silly woman existed in the world? In fiction, such a person is called 'Our Lady'. She said that although she is not Mr Yang's love but at least she got the respect from Mr Yang."

"I did not think that Mr Yang respected her all these years. The women by Mr

Yang's side never decrease. She only had status and reputation but nothing else."

Zheng Xie remain silent.

"I always felt that she was stupid. If it is me, I would rather stick to my principles and do not do it. Until recently, I was finally able to realize and understand her feelings"

Zheng Xie whispered: "We talk when we get back."

"Why are you so honest? I keep telling myself. As long as you say you love me, even if it is not genuine from your heart, I could still lie to myself and believe that it is true. I will then happily marry you. Why you even refuse to say such a small lie?"

"I truly like you. And I am not like your father."

"You like me only because I am fit to be your wife. If there is another person like me, meeting your conditions, you will also like her and consider marrying her."

Zheng Xie took the bill. "Is it interesting to make such a comparison?"

"Zheng Xie, why did you come today?" Yang Wei Qi sigh. "You are now really hurting me the most. If you just want marriage, then don't treat me so well. We take what we need. But you hurt me by making me love you but refusing to love me. What you want me to do?"

"We talk about this another day. You are tired. Go back and rest early today."

"We need to finish this discussion today. I am afraid I do not have the courage another day. These days, I have been thinking over and over again. Until this morning, I told myself that marriage is a lifetime thing. Love is just a stepping stone in a marriage. Without it, 'getting' is the most practical thing. You are not Mr Yang, so I do not need to make any compromises like my mother. We will get along very well, courteous and perhaps will never quarrel, becoming another model couple. What is wrong with this? This is happiness."

"But then why you want to be there? You appeared, standing under the sun, all what I had constructed mentally collapsed. Zheng Xie, because I love you, so I

wanted more, not just your marriage commitment. I want your heart. And because of this, I rather lose you but not wanting to be your obstacle. So in your life, you will miss me. And I will miss you. I rather make you feel like you indebted to me, and will forever remember me.”

She stopped and seems to make the next big decision. She finally said solemnly: “Let’s break up.”

Zheng Xie was silent for a long time. “When I had the motive to marry you, it was genuine from my heart. It was never a joke. You are right, you are my ideal wife just like how you said.....”

“I know. You have told me before. So that is why my heart was moved. But now, a lot of things have changed, right? You can’t even deceive me, how are you able to deceive yourself? Blame me for being greedy. If it is not because I wanted more, I could pretend to know nothing. If I would have turned around and left when I first discovered it, I would not have fallen so deep. Although it is already a little late now, but luckily it is still not too late.”

“Last night, I was reading a novel. The male lead selected the female lead that love each other and the female lead forget all about it. This outcome should have been good but I was sad the whole night. In my view, the best outcome of the story should not have been as such.”

“Zheng Xie, I appreciate that you kept your commitment to me and treat me well. Because of this, I choose to not fulfill them. As for the other things, you go and resolve it yourself.” She took the necklace from the neck, and ripped it off gently. She took off the diamond ring and gently put it in front of Zheng Xie. “Facing you, I really want more in the relationship but unfortunately you cannot give them to me.”

Zheng Xie is speechless and looked at her quietly.

Yang Wei Qi said in a relaxed tone: “Finally being able to say these words, feel good. I finally feel free.”

“Take back the ring. As for the other gifts that I have given to you, I do not have a habit of taking them back.”

“Okay. I am leaving it as a souvenir. Thank you. I wish you good luck.

Goodbye.” Yang Wei Qi carefully picked the ring up and pocket it.

She stood up, leaned over to Zheng Xie and touched his temples. She smiled at him and then walked away.

She insisted to keep the smile all the way to the parking lot. She got into the car and finally crumbled to her tears.

She sat in silence as the tears falls. Then there was a knock on her window glass. She looked up outside. Although it was vague but it was clearly Zheng Xie.

She rubbed her eyes and then rolled down the window.

Zheng Xie said: “Do not drive yourself. I send you back.”

“Zheng Xie, before I change my mind, please quickly go.”

| |



## Chapter 27.14: A quiet life

*Indeed a long chapter right? Been translating this chapter for exactly two weeks and we are actually no where near the end of the chapter. This chapter is actually a total of 80 pages long. One of the longest chapter I have ever read. With today's chapter, we have completed 2/3 of the entire chapter 27.*

*The part where we were anticipating finally happened. In the chapter yesterday, Yang Wei Qi finally open her mouth and let Zheng Xie go. They broke up! And Zheng Xie quietly accepted it as he knows that he liked her but not loved her. So what's next? Would Zheng Xie be running to He He now? Or would he wait for her quietly?*

### Chapter 27.14: A quiet life

New Year's Eve finally arrived. Rumbling sound of firecrackers outside of the window.

Every New Year Eve, there are only He He and her mother. Unlike other families, where house were crowded with people buzzing around. Because both He He's parents are orphans so there were no other relatives.

Mother's colleagues often invite both mother and daughter to celebrate Chinese New Year together, especially when Zheng Xie's mother were still alive. They were invited every year. But He He and mother are very insistent in this point, so as far as New Year Eve is concerned, it is usually a deserted and quiet night for them. So there were not much significance.

After dinner, both sat on each side of the sofa. He He's mother had a book in her hand while He He is holding onto a laptop. Both occasionally chat a few words and then occasionally looked up to watch the New Year party.

He He's mother asked: "How come this year you did not buy firecrackers and fireworks?"

"Economic crisis. National call to save. Mother, you see that house, they had been putting on the fireworks for half an hour. I can watch them for free. Do not need to pollute the atmosphere." He He said while pointing to the window.

He He is very timid. She never dare to set off firecrackers and fireworks. But she likes to see other people to set off fireworks so could not resist buying them. Before, each New Year, she always wait for Zheng Xie to visit their home during the New Year to help her set those fireworks. Years after years.

He He decided to leave on the seventh day to go to C City. Things were all packed. She contracted a very easy job bank. So on one side she can re-adapt to the environment while preparing the exam for university.

He He's mother said: "Although you have always not been on my side, but there has been no lack of care before by Auntie Qian. And there were also Xiao Xie. Now you have another person, I find it hard not to worry."

"I am very familiar with the other side. And beside there are many former classmates there."

"You have always not like to study, why you want to go back to school?"

"I am much older now. So I changed my mind."

In additional to the New Year's Eve firecrackers, there were SMS noise as well. The phone have been buzzing non-stop. He He open her phone and compile a good greetings SMS. She open her contact and slowly send the greetings out. She paused when she reach Zheng Xie's name.

After that night, she had made no contact with Zheng Xie. She had sent a text message to apologies but there were no responds from him. So she did not dare to call him.

She always felt very remorseful. No matter how much she is trying to evade him that night, she should not have said such words. For her own sake, even after so many years, it is hard to treat a person whom have taken such good care of her to be so heartless. She felt frustrated, angry and desperate. Not to mentioned that Zheng Xie is a proud and sensitive person.

If fact, it is really not words from her heart. But in that situation, she is afraid that Zheng Xie would expose her lies and for the fear of any other changes. So without thinking properly, those words had actually came out of her mouth just like a tiny magic beans, once given a little water, uncontrolled soaring. She knew that her outburst were bad but unfortunately it cannot be undone.

She wants to go to Zheng Xie and explained herself that it is not her intention. But then after all, those words were spoken by herself. So she seems to have no explanation.

When Zheng Xie did not return her message, she did want to summon her courage to call him. But somewhere in her heart cold hearted say, it is better to have him willing to think of it as how it was spoken. Instead of letting him felt indebted to her, why not let him stay despair over her words. So at least she would not have to live in fear that because of her mental disorder, she becomes an obstacle to his marriage with Yang Wei Qi.

Every time she meet with Yang Wei Qi, she felt guilty. When she accidentally learned that Yang Wei Qi were collecting the pendant and only had two, she gave her the one that she had just obtained from Zheng Xie. When Yang Wei Qi shown interested in her drawings, she stayed up all night to help her draw.

However, it is clearly that the accident back then was unintentional. Although Zheng Xie is not playboy but he is also not an innocent boy.

“Why do I feel guilty toward her for something that I did not do?” She depressedly think while biting her fingers.

At midnight, He He lie the bed, listening to the endless sound of firecrackers outside the window, not feeling sleepy at all. The SMS notification continued until half past midnight before it stop. To sleep without harassment, she switched off her phone before heading to bed.

After a while, she got up and switched on her phone. She wanted to dial Zheng Xie’s number but never had the courage to press the button. She then compose a simple message, only 3 words: “Happy New Year” and dispatch the message. And then she immediately press to cancel.

He He over and over again toss and turn while lying on the bed. The noise outside is muddling her mind even more.

Finally she got out of bed barefoot, turn on the computer to the mailbox account that Zheng Xie only login once. She wrote and then changed over and over again. After a long time, she finally send over a picture, drawn with her mouse, a painting of two humble kittens. The one on the above she wrote ‘Happy New Year’ and the other one, she wrote, ‘I am sorry. I am wrong.’

Although Zheng Xie may only see the message many months later. Perhaps he will never even read but deleted it. But since she had sent it out and written what is on her mind, she felt a little relieved.

||

## Chapter 27.15: A quiet life

*As much as we are relived that Yang Wei Qi broke off the engagement with Zheng Xie, I actually felt bad for her. She is such a lovely lady. She truly understands and she choose the gentle way of walking away although it breaks her heart. I hope that we will get to see some part of her becoming happier later in this novel.*

*So He He tried to make mends with Zheng Xie but failed. She left him a message online in his rarely used mail account. Would he read the message anytime soon? When will He He find out about Yang Wei Qi and Zheng Xie's break up?*

### Chapter 27.15: A quiet life

The year started in the afternoon. He He went to visit Uncle Zheng in the afternoon. Because she knows that he is only home probably in the afternoon. She had in advance contacted Uncle Zheng's secretary to inquire about his whereabouts so arrive on the exact time.

According to her experience, Zheng Xie would not like the atmosphere at home because there are a lot of people coming and going. Therefore, before everyone starts coming, he would usually took her out, strolling in the street, watching movies or even going to the playground. This year, it is presumed that he will bring Yang Wei Qi strolling in the streets.

She really did not see Zheng Xie. She felt relieved and tried to conceal the feeling of lost.

He He had found Uncle Zheng looking a little abnormal. Probably he is tired after dealing with official matters. Although he was looking very tired, he was very happy to see her. Just like Zheng Xie, no matter how many years she had been working, she remain a child in their mind. He gave her a red envelope and she must take it, not allowed to even object to it.

When it is time to say goodbye, he personally send her to the door and gently patted her on the head and said: "He He, you are just like my own daughter." He had never said such words. He He is surprised and feeling inexplicable. She found

those words that Uncle Zheng was a little ambiguous. “I told Aunty Qian before that you were a very good girl.”

He insisted that the driver send her home.

The driver usually has a lot to say whenever she sits in his car. On the way home today, he is unusually quiet. Even He He felt a little out of place. She asked: “Uncle Wang, do you have something in mind?”

Uncle Wang sighed: “He He, among all the people, Xiao Xie would most probably would listen to you. You go and give him a call. Tell him to call his father and apologize now. Do not be so stubborn. His father, is going to fall sick as a result from his anger.”

“What happen between them?”

“Ah!” Uncle Wang took another big sigh. “This child, from young has always given people peace of mind. He is the pride of his father. Who would know that he would cause such a big ruckus in such a important matters.”

He He’s heart start to beat faster.... “Where is Brother Zheng Xie now?”

“He did not come back. After the trouble with his father, he did not even come back for Chinese New Year.”

“What has happen?”

“Old Comrade Zheng did not say but only angrily scolding. I vaguely heard. It seems that the marriage agreement has been broken off. He He, you really don’t even know.”

He He felt her heart slowly sinking, as if the pressure weight is on her shoulders. She could not speak.

This is her greatest fear.

Maybe Uncle Wang has got it wrong. It could be something else that Zheng Xie and Uncle Zheng had a falling out with. She tried to calm herself.

But her self-deception did not last long. When she got home, her mother told her. “I heard today from Old Sun said that Zheng Xie marriage had been cancelled. Do you know about it yet?”

“I..... how would I know? Maybe it is misinformation. They are not the kind of thoughtless people and take marriage has a joke.”

“Maybe.” He He’s mother said. But He He felt that her mother look a little different from normal. Her eyes seems like she is burning.

And for the first time, He He discovered her existence is very meaningful.

She has always thought that she is just a small shadow behind Zheng Xie. And when she fled Zheng Xie, she becomes a dandelion.

But after the first day, one after another seems to come and find her. Even when she went to the orphanage to accompany those lonely and abandoned children, they found her there too.

Those who came to see her are Zheng Xie’s aunty, cousins, Uncle Zheng’s secretary and even an old uncle of Zheng Xie whom she could not even remember.

They don’t care about the long distance of travelling and visited her while sending her gift. They showed concern for her and asked if she needed help. But the ultimate goal is basically the same, to inquire about the truth behind Zheng Xie’s marriage. They hope that she could persuade Zheng Xie for a change of heart and more hopefully that she could persuaded Zheng Xie to reconcile his father.

In short, she heard a lot about this ‘broken’ marriage plans. She heard about Uncle Zheng’s physical condition after he got so angry. From the moment Zheng Xie was born, he was an excellent child but now finally had such a stain emotion. She was terribly upset after hearing these words.

“But what does that got to do with me! I did not do anything!” When there were no one around, she said loudly against the wall. But her heart felt heavy and uneasy.

If one is able to go back into the past by two or three weeks, maybe she can bite the bullet and manage to try to complete the task delivered. But now she is powerless. It is hard to say if Zheng Xie would even be willing to hear her voice. Moreover, based on her understanding of Zheng Xie, when he does not want to hear anyone’s advice, with his powerful mental shielding ability, even if the

person is around his side 24 hours, Zheng Xie is able to completely make as if the person is transparent. No matter what the person say, he can completely inaudible.

He He felt that Zheng Xie now is treating her like she is a transparent person.

Her bumbling much deliberation, she finally sneak into the account where she left Zheng Xie the New Year Eve's message. It is confirmed that he really never open and read the message.

||



## Chapter 27.16: A quiet life

*So He He finally found out about Zheng Xie and Yang Wei Qi's broken engagement and cancelled wedding. And everyone (most probably without knowing the truth behind everything) are encouraging and seeking He He's help in advising Zheng Xie while trying to mend the relationship between Zheng Xie and Uncle Zheng (his father).*

*Did He He managed to find Zheng Xie? Is he going to treat her like a transparent person just like how she think he would be doing? I hope that the read today would be interested. I personally am finding this chapter a little too long winded... although the talented author may had want this long chapter for a little of excitement for the readers..... What do you think?*

### Chapter 27.16: A quiet life

And in the email, He He had said that, Yang Wei Qi is a good woman, asking him to be sure to cherish her. She also mentioned that Uncle Zheng recently is in poor health and misses him. She felt that she was incredibly hypocritically as she was writing the email but she still send it over.

Because he will not read, so she sent to this mailbox. One, it would not make him more tired... and secondly she is doing what the others had tasked her to do. In short, she had tried very hard to convince him.

A few minutes later, her phone message sounded. She gripped herself to read the message. It was a message from Yang Wei Qi. She explained that a few days ago, she was abroad so she only see the New Year Greeting message only today as she was not using the number. And she is now sending a thank you message.

He He read the message over and over again wanting to find if there are any hidden meaning but found nothing.

So another day has gone by. The day where He He would be leaving is only three days away.

She has always been afraid of changes in environment. Even when she was a student in school that have to change classrooms, these events would upset her

terribly. So the last few days of waiting would always upset her.

Coupled with the current situation with Zheng Xie, has caused her to be often in a flustered set of mind. She often got up in the middle of the night with very disturbing dreams, could not eat well, hardly slept and the paranoid feeling of something major would be happening had resulted her in looking very haggard.

The day when Cen Shi was coming over, he had called her in advance to go and pick him up from the airport. He did not managed to finish the handover, so before the holiday season is over, he had gone back. He He generally understood that he came back only to play along with her. To say that she has no gratitude is false. He He sometimes said to herself, if Cen Shi really like her, then she might want to give him another chance.

But as each time she thinks about it, her chest felt like there were a huge stone on it. Once she gave up the idea, her breathing becomes smooth again.

When Cen Si saw her, he said: "Only have not seen you for a few days, how come you have become so haggard? Did you missed me?"

He He said while wearing her 'panda' eyes: "This is called the holiday syndrome, okay?"

Cen Shi had no luggage and say that he was so hungry, so both of them decided to explore the airport for a restaurant. Cen Shi was looking so tired, so He He volunteered to get him food.

What she did not expected was to actually meet acquaintances. As she and Cen Shi was leaving the place, someone hurried by her side. He stopped and quickly turned around: "He He?"

He He looked up in surprised. It is actually the long lost with no contact Shi Lin.

Just like a few months ago, Shi Lin still have the gentle look. He returned this week and had been travelling to several places. He had to leave immediately and was preparing to catch a plane.

Shi Lin was a little regretful. "I came yesterday from Y City. Because my time is very tight when I was there, I was sorry for not being able to see you. How nice if I would have known that you are here...."

He He told him that she had lived here for several months and she would be leaving in two days's time to C City.

"Is that your boyfriend?"

"Ah.... Yes.... A friend." She has been friendly and polite to this big brother and did not had the courage to admit and yet worried about exposing the lies.

Shi Lin looked towards Cen Shi and raised his hands in greetings. "I have to go. He He, you have not seen Zheng Xie recently?"

"He.... He should be okay." He He said but her thought went over to him who is looking haggard due to the recent broken engagement.

Shi Lin gave a little sigh. "Where got? I saw him a few days ago, lying in the hospital, vomiting blood due to the drug reactions. He must have been miserable this New Year."

He say He He suddenly paled and knew that she did not know the truth. He hurriedly comfort her and said: "He just had a surgery. You don't even know this? This guy..... Must have really kept it from everyone. I was visiting someone when I accidently step into the wrong room which was his room to find out about this."

He He's mind went blank. She did not know how she bid Shi Lin farewell. When she came back to her senses, she was already sitting in Cen Shi's car. He had asked her to drive his car to the airport earlier.

The road is very busy. It feels like the roadside shop door is an unknown black hole, while the traffic coming and going with the flow looking like meteors, dangerous and unpredictable.

She seems to hear Cen Shi asking her: "He He, where do you want to go?"

She mechanically repeated: "Where do I want to go? De...."

"To send you home or you want to go somewhere else?" Cen Shi turned around to look at her. "Hey, what is wrong this time?" He pulled a stack of tissues and handed it to her.

He He took the tissues and remained stunned, not knowing what to do. The tears starts falling drop by drop onto the tissues and instantly disappeared,

leaving only a trace of wetness. She is shocked to realize that she has been crying. She wipe her face and saw her hand are full of tears.

“Just now, who is that? What did he tell you?”

| |

## Chapter 27.17: A quiet life

*As He He was getting ready to leave and start a new life in C City, she met Shi Lin accidentally in the airport when she went to pick Cen Shi up. The part where she was having the thought of giving Cen Shi a chance to get back together in real instead of faking their relationship, I actually went.... No..... please don't down this route. This twist of turn would make the whole story sounded like a typical 'korean drama' storyline.... Luckily.....*

*Through the meeting with Shi Lin, He He discovered a shocking news about Zheng Xie.... The news shocked her into tears again. What happen next? Would she tell Cen Shi the truth about what is making her cry? Will He He rushed to Zheng Xie's side?*

### Chapter 27.17: A quiet life

He He's mood is like the water that suddenly found a gap, so like a flood, it suddenly collapse. She burst into tears, crying hard. Cen Shi was overwhelmed and pulled up into the curb. He handed out the tissues to her, feeling useless while patting her back. He He continued to cry, her whole body shaking and crowding into a ball like a small child.

"What happen to Zheng Xie?" Cen shi instinctively guessed that He He's crying has something to do with the hateful guy.

It took him some time to piece together the reasons why she is crying so sadly. In just a moment time, with the flashback of the recent events, just like a line of strung dolphin scattering, it feels like piecing them together.

The normally healthy Zheng Xie recently persistently came down with fever. He looked very tired and haggard.

A person whom see commitment and promises as a heavy responsibility, somehow ended up with a 'broken engagement and marriage.'

One who always follows the rule for Spring Festival, this year actually never go home.

Vomiting blood and drug reaction.

And these were said with the twinkling eyes of Shi Lin.

When these events were repeated in her mind, she seems to see two huge Chinese Characters, like the dark clouds of the same pressure: 绝症! (Means terminally ill!)

Because he did not want to hurt Yang Wei Qi, so he chooses to break up. Because he does not want his father and family to worry, he would rather be misunderstood, and not tell the truth.

When He He think about him suffering those grievances alone, was more grief.

Cen Shi do not know what to say, nothing can be convincing..... “He is still young. And he does not have any bad habits, so his physical fitness would be good as well. Do not need to worry so much.”

He helplessly watched the ball of paper soaked with tears. “Do you want to go back and see him? I have something to deal with here today. Tomorrow I will go back and visit him with you, okay?”

He He shake her head and sobbed: “I will go back alone. I will go today.” Even if she cannot do anything, at least she could accompany him.

“Today the weather is not very good. It may snow in the evening.”

He He look into her wallet and look for her identity card. “I will go today. Please send me back to the airport.”

An hour later, He He is on the train bound for the Y City.

They went to the airport. The news is true. In Y City there is a blizzard so cannot guarantee whether there will be flight as usual.

Then they called the railway station and bus station. Now it is still the peak of Spring Festival, therefore tickets are hard to find. Because it is snowing in Y City, the highway is closed. And long-distance car trips had been reduced as well.

Cen Shi took He He’s idea and went looking for a private car to send her. But failed. Finally, they managed to persuade a passenger in a crowded waiting room to sell them the train ticket triple of the original fare price.

He He had calm down by then. Cen Shi listened to her calling her mother with a straight face while giving a very smooth lie. But her body was trembling slightly.

When the train slowly start, he saw He He sitting against the window took out the tissue and began rubbing her eyes.

Because of the bad weather, the train was delayed nearly an hour. It finally arrived at the station at 7 pm. Sure enough, when He He got off the train, the snow were falling heavily. Nearly could not see the road. The falling snow into the face is painful.

He He found a taxi and gave the hospital address. As a result, what would be a twenty minutes ride took a full forty minutes.

Zheng Xie was staying in the intensive care unit. She went through a lot of twists and turned before finding out that Zheng Xie had been discharged.

“Didn’t he just did surgery? How come he can so quickly be discharged?” He He asked in surprised.

“The patient insisted. So we had no way to force him to stay.” The doctor said.

He even refused to stay in the hospital. Is it not serious or he gave up treatment? He He had her hearts and butterflies in her stomach.

She thanked the doctor and went to find a taxi before heading to Zheng Xie’s home.

The snow were thick on the ground. The cars on the road are slowly creeping forward. He He have been dialing Zheng Xie phone while she was sitting in the car. Over and over again. It always show that it failed to connect. Her soul slides away. Even her intended destination no longer hold any expectations.

Zheng Xie was not at home. From downstairs, the house is pitch dark. She pressed the doorbell asking someone to help her open the door. Then she saw the door of Zheng Xie’s home is stuffed with newspapers. The guard on duty reported that he helped to collect the newspaper daily and stuffed it into the newspaper box. And mentioned that Zheng Xie had not come back to live for a long time.

## Chapter 27.18: A quiet life

*And so He He did rushed back to see Zheng Xie but he has somehow disappear. She could not find him anywhere.... Did he really went home to the apartment unit opposite He He's place? Is he missing He He as well? I hope we are able to find out today in this chapter.....*

*The good news is that we are at the final quarter of the super long Chapter 27.*

### Chapter 27.18: A quiet life

The snow is still heavily blowing, biting the cold ground. In the city, He He drove to the airport to pick up Cen Shi. She did not even take any scarf. In a hurry, she was sweating so did not feel cold. But now, she is feeling the chill and the fine sweat on her body had turned into ice, cementing close to her body.

She could not think of where Zheng Xie would be. If he was determined to not let people know he was ill, he did have a lot of places to escape. But she only knows Zheng Xie's two residence. And the unit opposite her, Zheng Xie rarely go and stay there before, therefore this time, she did not dare to expect him to be there.

But He He have nowhere to go to look for him. And because he concealed his illness from his family, she could not even call his friends to ask. She knows that there is no hope to hold but still want to hope that her thought is right. But it was hard to wait for the taxi.

Although she knew that he could not be here, and when she knocked for over five minutes with no response, she began to cry again.

On this floor, there are only two units. One side is her home and the other side is Zheng Xie's house. She had these two units to come and go. But now, she did not even carry the key. In the huge city, she is alone. Her one and only relative has disappeared. She could not return home. The whole world seems to have abandoned her.

He He knocked on Zheng Xie's door: "Brother, you open the door. You open



the door! I am He He.” She weep while lying on the door until alerted the neighbors downstairs.

The neighbor downstairs is an old couple. They looked at her for a long time before finally recognizing her.

“He He ah.... You come back. Did not bring the key? Faster come into the house. The hallways is cold.”

Xiao He He went into the elderly couple home. After washing her face and drink a few mouthful of water, she found herself about to be frozen.

The old lady said: “The lady guess is right. She said that if you come back these few days, let us contact her.”

He He previously frozen brain is not flexible. While she was thinking about the meaning of the sentence, the old man had already call the number written on the shining piece of paper: “Miss Wei ah, I am sorry to bother you so late. But He He has just come back. Oh, ask her to pick up the phone....”

He He rushed past, and rudely grabbed the phone: “Secretary Wei, right? Yes, its me. Zheng..... where is my brother?”

“You already know about it? It is late today. You have a good rest. Tomorrow I take you to see him.”

“I am in the neighborhood. I do not have the keys. Where is he? I want to see him now.”

An hour later, Wei Zhi Xian drove over to pick her up. She could not help but showed a surprised look to see her: “How did you end up like this?”

He He had been in tears and the cold wind had frozen her mouth and face with shallow scars. Extremely embarrassing.

The old married couple added on the side: “This is much better now. The look earlier was much more pathetic.”

Wei Zhi Xian brought over Zheng Xie’s driver. “On this type of road, if I were to drive myself, I would only arrive at dawn.”

He He asked: “Why would you rather let the elderly be messenger and not calling me to inform me directly?”

“You also know how stubborn Director Zheng is. When he said to keep it quiet and not let anyone know, who would dare to even leak a single word to anyone. I guess that you would come back to tidy up so left a message through the elderly couple. You can also save a trip back to see him. Really did not think that you would come back. I am really lucky to hit it.”

“When I could not find him, I did not dare to call anyone else.”

“People do not know about it. His phone have been switched off. When someone asked me, I only say that he has gone abroad on holiday.”

When they reached the destination, it was almost midnight. In the midst of the snow and darkness, He He could not recognize the place.

This is the old house that Zheng Xie’s mother when she was still alive used to stay. It is an independent cottage with a small courtyard. Ancient and simple styled. He He also had spent several years here. Later when Zheng Xie’s mother passed away, and both gone back to school, they had never gone back to the house to stay. Later there were urban renewal, so the area were developed and became unrecognizable. He He always thought there the house had been removed but did not expect that the original has been retained so well.

It is so late but the villa’s light were lighted.

Wei Zhi Xian introduced He He: “This is Auntie Wang. After the death of Auntie Qian, she has been taking care of the house. In the evening there is a nurse to take care of Director Zheng. During the day, Dr. Li and Nurse Liu would come over.”

Auntie Wang said: “I know Miss He He. I have seen her when she was a little baby girl.” He He later realized that this Auntie Wang is the sister of the former old nurse at home. She was once Zheng Xie’s nanny.

Wei Zhi Xian asked: “How is Mr Zheng tonight?”

| |

## Chapter 27.19: A quiet life

*And so He He did find Zheng Xie with the help of his reliable secretary, Wei Zhi Xian. She did understand both of them so well. Blessed her for doing what she did, right?*

*So what happen next? How ill was Zheng Xie? Is this where both of them reconcile and share their heart? Is this where they finally come together? I hope so.... I am praying hard!*

### Chapter 27.19: A quiet life

“He left a little pain. Still had some reaction to the drugs. Dr. Li came once tonight. The medicine for today have been applied.”

He He said: “Let me go and see him.”

“He just fell asleep.”

“Please let me go and see him. I just want to take a look.” He He begged.

He He followed behind Wei Zhi Xian and Auntie Wang and walked slowly into Zheng Xie’s bedroom. The air is filled with the smell of disinfectant.

Zheng Xie usually do not like the smell. Regardless it is disinfectant, gasoline or perfume, he has allergies to all these smell. So he particularly hated hospital, hate shopping and do not like woman with heavy makeup.

The corner of the room, there is a dim night light. The bedside lamp is adjusted to the minimum brightness and carefully angled for the lights to be away from the eyes of Zheng Xie.

At the point of the shimmering light, He He saw Zheng Xie’s half face. His shallow complexion and pale lip. The indoor heating is enough, so his quilt only cover up to his armpit. The collar of the pajamas is half unbuttoned, his protruding collarbone vaguely visible. From the last time they met, he seem to have lost a lot of weight. His hands overlap on the chest, on the back of the fair complexion, there are clear traces of pinholes and bruising.

Wei Zhi Xian gently touched her arms, indicating that they should leave.

He He nodded. Zheng Xie is someone who does not like people to physically get too close to him. And now there are so many people in his room. If he knew that when he is sleeping, there are so many people peeping at him, he certainly would not be happy.

Before He He walked away, she went back to his bedside and put his hand that is sticking out gently under the quilt. His hands are cold.

As she is turning around to leave, she heard a little sound from behind. Auntie Wang had rapidly ran back to the bedside: "It is all right. It is all right. Take it easy. It is only Miss He He coming to see you." Auntie Wang gentle called: "Miss He He, can you come over, please?"

He He nervously step by step walked over. Auntie Wang turned on the light, she is exposed to the light.

Zheng Xie was awake. His eyes were a bit empty. He slowly turned to her.

She bent her body low and gently called: "Brother, brother."

Zheng Xie looked in her face for a second or two, just like looking at her. But at the same time, seem like nothing to see. Then he closed his eyes.

He He turned to leave when suddenly Zheng Xie coughed. The nurse immediately step forward to help with a tissue. He He glanced back and clearly saw the blood on the tissues. She was shocked.

She fought back tears and rushed on impulse back to his side.

Later that night, He He returned to the room where she used to stay. Her room did not look like it had changed much. Even the curtains and bed sheets remain the same style. She also vaguely remembered that those were the style before.

She had an unstable sleep that night. She dreamed of being exposed under the hot desert sun and is extremely thirsty. And then she dream that she fell into an icy hole in the frozen river and is very cold.

She wake up groggily feeling thirsty. She opened her eyes and looked at the familiar ceiling. She heard a strange man said: "She woke up. She woke up. You are really brother and sister. Even when sick both fall sick together. You can be assured now. So go back to your room and rest."

He He turned towards the direction of the sound and saw a guy in a white coat talking. She followed his vision to see, one meter from the foot of her bed, Zheng Xie was sitting on the chair. He was wearing a very thick cotton pajamas and wearing a mask.

She sat up suddenly and shouted: "Brother!" then dizziness hit and blackouts. The doctor pressed her back onto the bed: "Lie down. Do not simply move." He turned and said to someone: "Come and give this girl something to eat." Someone uttered in return.

He He struggled up wanting to see Zheng Xie but he got up and left. His back was a little bent, unlike the usual him who stands up so straight. He was going very slowly.

He He called: "Brother". Sure enough, he was still angry with her. He is not willing to even look at her.

The doctor said: "Do not mind him. That child did not eat for a few days. Every day he was put on drip. It is bad enough and he is very moody about it."

The doctor looked not more than thirty and has a baby face. He actually called Zheng Xie, 'child.'

The doctor introduced himself: "I am from xx Hospital. Your brother's doctor. I was also his primary school classmate. These two days, I was also your doctor. This year I am 32 years old. Healthy, in a good shape. I don't have much hobbies and I am still single."

"I am going to see him." He He ignored his sense of humor.

"These two days you stay away from him. Your cold is very contagious. If you infected him, it may cause trouble."

He He originally was sleeping. She slept for a full twenty hours. Initially everyone thought that she was tired. Then when they pushed her, found her unconscious. Touched her forehead and found it boiling hot. Probably because she was cold and tired, sad and nervous, adding all these several elements, her cold was menacing.

Fortunately, the house does not have any shortage of doctors. Zheng Xie was reluctant to go to hospital so the doctor made two trips daily to check on him.

On the way, he also checked on He He, soon nursing her back to health.

When He He is allowed to be close with Zheng Xie, she waited for him at his bedside every day.

||

## Chapter 27.20: A quiet life

*And so He He also fell sick and Zheng Xie had shown a little concern for her. Although when she finally woke up, he turned around and go. Why is he so cold towards He He now? Is he just trying to avoid her now? Is he trying to run away from his feelings this time round? I certainly hope not as I really don't think I could continue if it is the case..... Let's hope that there is a twist in today's chapter.....*

### Chapter 27.20: A quiet life

In those days, Zheng Xie has always not been in a clear mind. He woke up and then went back to sleep. He slept and then woke up. He open his eyes and looked at her but then closed the eyes again without speaking. His hands because of the drip daily, are full of pinholes that are clear and striking. He always wakes up and cough blood into the tissues.

He He watching him, her heart seems to be fried and her breath turns into pain. She dare not cry in front of him and forced herself a laugh.

When she called home, she was trying to compile a reason when her mother suddenly asked: "Is Zheng Xie sick?"

He He is amazed at her mother's sharpness. She hesitated to lie and just mentioned that it is just a small illness and it is not very serious. Since Zheng Xie had means to hide it from his family, she naturally is obliged to cooperate.

He He's mother said: "You stay there to look after him."

He He unthinking felt that there is no reason not to think about it.

On the surface, Zheng Xie recovered quickly. After a few days, he can begin to eat something. Sometimes he sit up, get out of bed to take a small walk. But most of the time he lay down on his bed, with his eyes closed or even when the eyes are open, looking up at the ceiling, as if 仿佛老僧入定

仿佛老僧入定 (*pin ying: lǎo sēng rù dìng*) – very clam without any worldly passions

"Why did you want to tell me that you are sick?" The first day when Zheng Xie

condition starts to improved, He He asked him.

Zheng Xie was leaning against the bed and his mouth slip into a line. He was looking at her like she was a stranger.

“I do not really want to say those words. You do not stay angry at me.” The rims of He He’s eyes are red.

Zheng Xie did not say anything. He wrote in a book with a pen: “When are you leaving?”

This is his way of communication with people presently. His word are crooked and weak.

“I am not leaving. I want to stay with you.”

“No need.” Zheng Xie finish writing those words, the throw the book aside. He lie down and pull up his quilt. He turned and closed his eyes to sleep.

The next day, Cen Shi called He He to express his concern. He He hide in a corner and spoke to him. When she turned around, she saw Zheng Xie is awake and is looking at her. When she turned to look at him, he closed his eyes.

“Cen Shi is not my boyfriend. You do not like him. How could I insist on following him? He was just acting with me for everyone to see. You do not get angry.” He He humbly said.

Zheng Xie opened his eyes. His sharp eyes looked all over her face. His eyesight makes He He’s heart winced.

Zheng Xie’s expression indicated the look that she is a “Liar”. Zheng Xie dislike the most people who lie. Because of that, he had once ignored her for several days. At that time, he also took a long look at her making her feel ashamed.

He He timidly sobbed: “I just want you to feel at ease and get married.”

Zheng Xie without any expression, closed his eyes as if he is asleep. He He pulled his quilt and rambling repeating herself. She did not want to absolve herself, she can only hope that he would not be too angry.

“You had said that you would not ignore me. No matter what you would forgive me. You had said it before. Now, why do you ignore me?” She lay down on his quit and cried while whimpering.



Someone patted her head. He He looked up through her tears. Zheng Xie had stuffed his book in her eyes. There is two words that say: “肃静”

肃静 (*pin ying: sù jìng*) – in this context, it means **hush**. As per the dictionary definition, 肃静 means silence or hush up.

When his spirit is better, Zheng Xie started working from home. He also does not need anyone to accompany him in the evening. Wei Zhi Xian will visit twice a day bringing him the documents that he need to sign. Sometimes he also leaned on the bed with a laptop or reading materials on the internet.

Dr Li still visit twice a day. He often left nagging: “Awkward man. There is no spirit of cooperation.”

He He sending him out asked, is Zheng Xie able to recover. Dr Li said: “Recovery? I see him as dying.”

He He because of this sentence, stood in the cold wind staring into space for a few minutes until Aunty Wang found her standing there without a coat. She pulled her back into the house. When she got back into the house, she started sneezing. The worried Aunty Wang immediately got her ginger drink and served her cold medicine. Her dutiful nursing symptoms started when she forbade He He from entering Zheng Xie’s room.

He He felt very sad in her heart. In her mind, she thinks that Zheng Xie must be sadder. He had to bear so much pressure so she tries her best to understand and tolerate Zheng Xie treating her as transparent.

Zheng Xie had his one hand in needle while the other hand on the keyboard. He He holding a novel dragged her chair to sit by the heater and started feeling drowsy.

Suddenly she heard the sound of water. Zheng Xie actually got out of bed to pour himself a cup of water. She hastily dropped the book and ran to help him. Zheng Xie dodged and spilled all the water onto his pajama bottom. She blushed and went to get him a new pair of pajamas. She stood there not sure if she should help him or not help him. Zheng Xie pointed to the door, and wave his hand. He is casting her out just like flies.

Later, she gain the experience and when Zheng Xie tried to get out of bed, she

immediately stood up. She cross the one foot of distance and asked: “What do you need for me to do?”

Zheng Xie this time did not even bothered to pick up the pen, he bend over and easily open the page and wrote: “Toilet”. He He was embarrassed for half a day.

| |

## Chapter 27.21: A quiet life

*So He He decided to stay behind to stay next to Zheng Xie. In the meantime, he continued to be cold with her although he is allowing her to stay by his side. Last chapter ended with a little funny moments between them when He He tried to help him.*

*We have finally arrived at the 2nd last part of the super long chapter 27. Cant believe that it took over 3 weeks to complete the chapter. The title of this chapter is A Quiet Life but to me as a translator, I don't see it as A Quiet Life. I see it as it is filled with lots of ups and downs for both of them. This is also the long awaited chapter where the poor gentle Yang Wei Qi gently break off with Zheng Xie. Now it is the agony of waiting to see how He He and Zheng Xie get together. I have a feeling that Zheng Xie will send He He away for a while before bringing her back next to his life. What do you all think?*

### Chapter 27.21: A quiet life

Taoyuan is surprisingly a quiet city. The past week, apart from the doctors, nurses and part timers, there are no one else who actually visits. Under this situation, his confidential work is also completed.

So when there are guests whom arrives, He He was very surprised.

That day Zheng Xie color looks good. She continued to be treated as transparent, so she felt very bored. And when the part-timer is going out to buy food, she volunteered to go together.

Arriving home, she saw unfamiliar vehicles park in front of the house. When she enter the house, Aunty Wang pointed upstairs and said: "Little Master Xie have guests. Secretary Wei brought them." She looked very happy. "He is willing to meet people. It shows that he is feeling much better."

"Who?" He He had intuition that she know the guest.

"Miss Yang."

"Which Yang...." He He said the words in half when Zheng Xie's door suddenly open.

“That the Little Master Xie before..... Huh?” Aunt Wang found He He gone.

Zheng Xie was dressed in his pajamas plus a thick coat. He personally sent Yang Wei Qi to the door.

Yang Wei Qi said: “Go back. Be careful. It’s cold.”

“It’s okay. Long time I did not breathe the open air.” Zheng Xie’s voice was low and rough, quite unlike him.

“Recuperate well. Although it is only a minor operation, it is debilitating. Take care of yourself.”

“You take care too.”

When He He guessed it was Yang Wei Qi, she immediately escaped. But she chose the wrong direction to escape. She ran into the yard. And they also went into the yard. She dodged behind a low shrub, just enough to hide her.

She just did not want to face Yang Wei Qi, to avoid any embarrassment. “Well, why should I feel so guilty?” She pitifully thought again. And then she heard Zheng Xie could finally speak but in front of her all day, refuse to say a word, she suddenly became angry.

Zheng Xie turned to go back into the house. He looked towards the direction of the bushes. He He shrank and shrank. She is angry about what she overheard. She crouched there motionless, hoping that Zheng Xie will continue to ignore her and hurry into the house.

But Zheng Xie seems to deliberately embarrass her. He stared into the yard enjoying the cherry blossom for a few minutes. He He crouching, felt her legs are numb. He suddenly said something softly: “Are you not afraid of snakes?” His voice is hissing, sound very strange.

He He reflex with “ah!” and bounced behind, taking the bait. Winter season, where are there snakes?

Zheng Xie immediately after saying it, just as she jumped up, had turned around and left.

He He tried to catch up angrily but Zheng Xie’s legs, although he had not eaten for many days, she did not manage to catch up. As she was crossing the living

room, Aunt Wang stopped her: “Miss He He, where did you go? Hey, how come there are so many leaves stuck in your hair? Do not move. Do not move. I help you to remove them.”

He He asked: “What..... How serious is brother’s sickness?”

Aunt Wang replied in surprised: “Ah. You did not know. Because Young Master Xie recently had fever, so did a tonsillectomy urgently, probably afraid to implicate other problems. So before the end of the Spring Festival, he had gone for the surgery. But Dr Li say it is not serious.”

“Then how he could cough up blood? A few days ago, he had been unconscious.”

“The doctor said that Little Master Xie physical is a little special. He had severe drug reactions in comparison to others. And the wound would slowly healed. Hemoptysis is also because of this.”

He He finally settle down her feelings. She felt ridiculous. Except for the indecent doctor, no one really has exaggerate Zheng Xie’s condition. Why did she single-mindedly assume that Zheng Xie as seriously ill?

She ran upstairs and banged on the door. There were no respond. She continued to knock and found Zheng Xie’s door not locked so she open it and walked in.

“You obviously can speak. Why act dumb?”

Zheng Xie glanced at her.

“This is not a particularly serious disease, why do you want to keep it from the family? ..... I think you purposely did it!”

Zheng Xie looked at her in surprised. He indifferently said: “You did not ask me/. How would I know what you are thinking. No wonder you are willing to come back. Originally thought I was going to die, so ready to come back to see me for the one last time.”

“I.....” He He was stumped.

“So now you can safely go.”

“I said I am not going to C City anymore.”

“Because you sympathize with me for being abandoned by my fiancée and father at the same time, so you want to stay with me?”

“No.....” Because of this sentence that Zheng Xie rarely say to her, her response were unskilled, so she was stumped.

Zheng Xie turned into the toilet and lock the door with a click.

He He finally remembered the words in respond. She went in front of the door and shouted: “I just said something wrong... you are upset until now.... Cheapskate!”

There is no sound. She shouted to the door: “Your marriage got cancelled. Why are you angry at me? If you missed her, why don’t you go and recover the relationship with her?” Still puzzled, she kick the door hard.

One kick is not fun. She was preparing to kick the second time when the door suddenly opened. Her kick nearly kicked Zheng Xie. He cleverly dodged.

The quick movement caused He He to nearly trip. She uttered a cry, and her whole body sprang forward. She closed her eyes and accepting herself to fall flat. But her collar were pulled. That kind of force pulled her collar and dragged her to the bedroom door.

Zheng Xie said: “You go back to your room. I want to be alone.”

| |

## Chapter 27.22: A quiet life

*Finally, the final part of Chapter 27. We have indeed used up a total of 22 days to complete this chapter. It is original text were 80 pages long.*

*Last chapter was a little interesting but we still have not come to the part where both of them reconcile. Will we ever get there, I wonder..... I certainly hope the chapter today contain an event that we have all been anticipating.... Pray pray pray..... Have a great weekend everyone!*

### Chapter 27.22: A quiet life

Angered with fire in her, He He turned around in her room.

Her mood is very complex. One, the matter with Zheng Xie is no matter of lucky or happy. On the other hand, Zheng Xie obviously did not had any serious problem, however she had taken the concern attitude and thus now angry. And lastly, because of the stained relationship with Zheng Xie, she is feeling depressed.

She sat cross-legged on the bed, her hand finally finishing the final touch on the two cloth cat. The two cats, is the result of her nights of insomnia. In order to pass the time, she took up her sewing needles. Because the material is missing, she went through her cupboard and found some worn clothes from her younger days.

These two cloth cat, one is tall while the other one is short. Both the eyes and mouth were embroidered with black line. The taller cat has a cold look while the short one look aggrieved.

He He holding the two cat, and upon her throat tells their own stories.

Tall Cat: "I hate you. Stay away from me."

Short Cat: "Lie. Don't tell me that all these years when you treat me well are all fake?"

Tall Cat: "In the past, you really know how to fake yourself. I was deceived."

Short Cat: "I did not. I did not!"

He He muttered to herself: “Am I good for nothing?”

Her two cats changed hand and she continued.

Short Cat: “Can we not take it as nothing had happened?”

Tall Cat: “Nothing had happen. Do I know you?”

Short Cat: “oooo ooooo oooo”

Tall Cat: “We stop here!”

“I am bored.” She throw the short cat onto the ground. “Stupid!” He He pat the tall cat head and said softly: “Although it is my fault but you cannot keep it in your heart ya.”

The cat with two slits fake eyes, sipping with a crack looking at her scornfully. With the deep down anger in her heart, He He inserted the needles into the cat and random scratch the cat. “Look at what I do to you, cheapskate, villain....”

She finished the crazy ranting and then felt that her intelligence is back. Deeply bored, she throw the tall cat onto the floor. She covered herself with blanket and went to sleep.

These past several days, she had been nervous all day long, sad and had insomnia. So once she lay down, she went into a deep sleep. She did not even get up for dinner. She slept until the next morning when Auntie Wang woke her up for breakfast.

Zheng Xie whom rarely appeared on the table were sitting there. He ate very little, drinking a very thin porridge.

Auntie Wang was coaxing him like a child: “The doctor say you can eat light things. You eat so little, poor nutrition ah....”

Zheng Xie shook his head. Slightly wrinkled his brow, hands pressing his chest.

Auntie Wang immediately tensed: “How? The wound is uncomfortable? Do you want me to call the doctor?”

“Nothing, just a little chest pain. And feeling a little nausea. Probably in the afternoon, my lying position is not very good.”

He He suddenly choked. She put the tissue over her mouth. Zheng Xie lifted



his eyes and looked at her. He He coughed and muzzled got up and said: "Rice has gone into my nose.... I go to the bathroom." Having said that, she slipped upstairs.

Aunty Wang shouted back: "There is a bathroom on the first floor as well."

He He searched around when she returned to the room. She finally found the two abused cloth cat from yesterday under the cupboard and under the bed. On the tall cat, on the chest, she also stuck a long needle.

"It is really not so spiritual." He He carefully pulled out the needle. The needle hole in the cloth cat belly evenly healed. Then she respectfully put it on the table. Her hands clasped together, she recites: "Sin. Sin. I am really sorry. I did not mean it."

She softly went downstairs. Zheng Xie had finished the meal but not left the table. He sat reading the newspaper. He He sat down. He looked up, and looked at her with a strange look. He He felt the cold wind on her back. But fortunately, he immediately had his head buried in the newspaper. As Zheng Xie was turning the newspaper, he said quietly: "There is a grain of rice at the side of your mouth."

Aunty Wang laughed. He He flushed with embarrassment. He He after wiping the rice away, she bite on the spoon while bitterly glaring at him. Zheng Xie with peripheral vision, sweep at her again with his eyes before continuing to read his newspaper.

Aunty Wang did not sense the awkwardness around the table. She said: "Today the weather is good, sunny and warm. I want to go home to see my old sister. You being He He out together for a walk. You have been sitting at home for a long time."

Zheng Xie said: "I want to go back to the company for a while. When do you want to go, I get the driver to send you."

Aunty Wang said: "No, no. The bus is very convenient. There is no snow on the road. In two hours, I can get home. Miss He He, you have to look after your brother, making sure that he eat something. Do not let him starve. He does listen to you more..."

He He nodded with a guilty conscience.

When Zheng Xie went back to the company, He He also took the opportunity to return home. Wei Zhi Xian had long ago passed the spare key to her. She took her car out for spin and called Su Ren Ran and Ding Ding out for a get-together.

Ding Ding also brought her cat, Xiao Bao. She said: "One moment want to accompany your mother. And then want to go back to study. Now you don't want to go. Have you learned to be like those artist, retreat for a comeback speculation?"

Su Ren Ran said: "Speaking of Star posture. That Brother Ah Xie, he was rumored to be getting married. It was already something that stunned everyone. And now I heard that the marriage had been called off. But no amount of digging there were no insider news. Even both parties have disappeared. A good mystery."

He He asked with a guilty conscience: "Was the news such a sensation?"

"Flash marriage and close flash point prime time drama, of course would be more suspense than those dramas. Not to mentioned that both parties are usually very low key. They are very orthodox in things they do. The relationship between two families are a big great deal. Who would expect that it would developed into such a way. Hei, He He, based on what you say, there are some truth behind these? I once though it was a wrongly informed, non-existent news. After all, it is very strange that such thing would happen to Brother Zheng Xie."

"I am not commenting anything." He He excused herself.

Ding Ding devastated gossiped: "My brother know both of them. He said, unless there is a third party that suddenly appeared, it is not possible based on both of their personalities."

"That is certainly an issue with Brother Zheng Xie. I heard that Yang Wei Qi never seems to have a boyfriend since she returned."

"He He, through insider point, does your brother have an intimate love? Or he cannot forget his first girlfriend?"

"I don't know anything. Treat me as transparent."

“The person that is closest with Brother Zheng Xie should be He He.” Su Ren Ran said.

“Pu!” He He chocked.

||

## Chapter 28.1: I want to marry you tomorrow

*A happy Sunday everyone! Today we will start with a new chapter..... With Chapter 28, we have only 3 more chapters to complete the main novel (including Chapter 28). So we should be up to read more about He He and Zheng Xie now... (I hope).*

*Enjoy the read today!*

### Chapter 28.1: I want to marry you tomorrow

But I would at this time... fear.... – Tomorrow I want to marry you!

Aunty Wang called and said that her sister wanted her to stay the night. So she reminded He He over and over again, to take good care of Zheng Xie.

He He thought, when he see me now, he would be angry and uncomfortable.

In the evening, Zheng Xie also called back mentioning that he would not be coming home for dinner that night.

With the part-timer gone for the day, there is only He He and the cat, Xiao Bao in the house. It was getting dark. Within the empty room, He He was a little scared. On hearing the sound of the car, she ran out to see. The result is always unnecessary run, repeatedly. She then simply sat on the stairs, one hand holding the cat Xiao Bao and the book on her other hand. This is the road that Zheng Xie will take when he come home.

When Zheng Xie came home, he saw He He holding on Xiao Bao sitting on the stair head against the railing, both fast asleep. They did not even heard the sound of his keys unlocking the door.

It is not even nine o'clock, she is already so sound asleep.

Zheng Xie walked past her on the stairs and gently cover her body with a coat. He He mumbled. Zheng Xie stayed still thinking that she had woke up. As a result, after a long while, there is still no sound.

He embarked on the last stage, then turn back and using his feet to gently kicked her. But it did not awaken her.

Zheng Xie touched her forehead with his hand and felt that it was hot. Under his surprised heart, he touched his own forehead and found the temperature is even hotter. It turns out that his hand is too cold.

But his cold hand touches He He and successfully woke her up. She looked at him with her half opened eyes remaining confused for a long time. "It is so late. How come you come back so late? You have not fully recovered."

Zheng Xie said: "Go back into the house to sleep" and continued upstairs. He He shakes her head slowly and barely stayed awake. She immediately hold the cat and catch up with Zheng Xie. Before he intend to close the door, she put her feet in: "I have something to tell you."

Zheng Xie is afraid of crushing her foot and had to stop closing door movement. He drop his hand and turned around to leave.

"You broke up with Yang Wei Qi has something to do with me, right?" She broke into his room holding Xiao Bao.

"Do not let the cat into my room."

"Is it because of me?"

Zheng Xie looked at her with a complicated look and remain silent.

"If she had misunderstood than I can explain to her."

"If she did not misunderstand, what do you want to do then?" Zheng Xie asked coldly.

"....."

The sleeping Xiao Bao suddenly woke up and recognized Zheng Xie. It happily jumped from He He's arm and rushed towards him. Zheng Xie jumped into the locker room and close the door, leaving He He and the cat outside together.

He He and Xiao Bao was stunned and stood for a moment. He He suddenly reacted to the sentence that he just said. She went over to thump on the door. She opened the locker room door and shouted: "Than why did you not come to me after breaking up with her?"

Zheng Xie was changing inside. He was bare chested and had just put on the pants. Although these days he had not seem much of the sunlight while lying in

bed and eating less, he looked pale and thin. But his skeletal muscle symmetry and bodybuilding physique is still looking good. When wearing the clothes, he looked very thin. But when he is naked, it is still robust more than expected. He He using her fine art powers of observations in the shortest possible time checked Zheng Xie out from head to his feet. This figure is really very good ah. Rarely see him with so much exposed flesh.

“What are you standing there for? Get out!”

“Ah. I am sorry.”

After a few minutes, Zheng Xie came out wearing pajamas. He said with a frustrated tone: “Xiao He He, what do you really want to do?”

“You really had the thought of marrying me?”

“You get out.”

“You said before that you want to be responsible for me.”

“Did you not said before that you don’t need it?”

“I have changed my mind.”

“He He, are you taking that we are playing house here? Why you never asked if I have changed my mind?”

“.....”

“I want to take bath. You stop playing around. Get out.”

He He gripped onto his pajamas sleeve. “You really never mean it. You just want to compensate for what happen. So I gave you the blessing so that you do not have the burden. I gave you the peace of mind to get married. Did I do wrong?”

“You want to leave on your own or you want me to throw you out?”

“You are already getting ready to get married. You obviously was really going to marry her. Why you messed up the marriage?”

Zheng Xie pulled back his clothes, and was too lazy to care about her. He turned around to go.

The house is not very big. So everywhere he went, He He followed him. He He

later cried: “You either go get married or after when you get the freedom, come to see me. Now you say you broke up because of me but ignored me. What do you want to do? What do you want me to do? You hated me for saying those words. You hated me for interfering with your affairs so deliberately let me feel guilty. So don’t you think that we are even yet?”

| |

## Chapter 28.2: I want to marry you tomorrow

*From yesterday's chapter, it had indeed been reversed. Zheng Xie is the one whom is avoiding He He and is in denial. While He He is questioning him to the extend that he refuses to answer her. Why? Isn't He He the one that he wanted to marry? Isn't she the one that he truly loves? Or he still have not realized it?*

*The title of this chapter is, I want to marry you tomorrow.... So I am so curious to find out who said that. He He or Zheng Xie? I hope that we are able to find out today....*

### Chapter 28.2: I want to marry you tomorrow

"Why are you doing this to me?"

"Do you like me? The kind of like as a man towards a woman." He He went in front of him and looked at him in the eyes.

Zheng Xie turned. She held onto his arms and pulled him back. "Do you really like me?"

"He He" Zheng Xie rubbed his temples, feeling a little tired. He He was also quiet.

"Before, you mentioned wanting to continue study. Why not I send you abroad to study?"

"Do you really want me to go?" He He's eyes turned watery.

"It is best that you stay away for a period of time. You can experience a lot of new things abroad."

"Why you want to struggle? If you do not like to see me, then I get out of here. It is not that I don't have a place to go. Tonight I will take Xiao Bao home."

He He turned and walked away angrily. Zheng Xie caught her arm. "It is good that you go back. It is too late tonight. You leave tomorrow."

He He angrily throw off his hand and quickly ran out. She did not hesitate this time and mercilessly bang the door. She did not care if Zheng Xie would really get angry because she is about to explode.



But He He had different ideas. She cannot immediately take Xiao Bao back to her small home. She returned to her room to see and found nothing that she can bring apart from Xiao Bao. She writhed in the house for a while, and make a lot of noise. She could not even find a bigger bags. She finally took her coat, the car keys, picked up Xiao Bao and left to return to her own home.

As He He was walking down the stairs, she found that Zheng Xie was sitting in the living room waiting for her. His face was tired but he said in a gentle tone: "Xiao He He, stop being so childish. I let you return home because I have my reason...."

He He hugging Xiao Bao in her arms and looked at him. She lips were sip into a line, a stubborn look.

But Zheng Xie refused to explain further. He did not even look at her. He only turn his gaze to the curious looking Xiao Bao in her arms.

After a while, she said: "Have you eaten your dinner? I am still hungry. Go and cook noodles for me."

As she was putting the kettle on the stove, with an upset face, she thought: "How did it turns out like this again?" She is really a natural slave.

The noodles were tumbling in the water. He He's mood is in a mess. She recall the pieces of each happenings over the past several months. The secret that she had been hiding for over seven years, because of her slip of tongue, had caused the mess. She continue to use a new lie to cover the old lie until everything becomes uncontrollable. She felt guilty towards many people, Yang Wei Qi, Cen Shi, Mother and Uncle Zheng.

Of course, she is the most sorry toward Zheng Xie. She had broken his life plans. He could have step by step, got married and have children. Because of her oversight, she had destroyed everything. Not only that, she had destroyed her own good child impression in his mind. Although he had been very strict with her, but at least in the past, in his eyes, she is an obedient child. Now, in his eyes, she is clearly an ungrateful, willful and a liar. And he hates liar the most.

But everything she did is out of her kindness. She felt wronged and angry.

He He looked out and saw that Zheng Xie is no longer in the living room. She

filled the bowl with the noodles. Thinking that he now completely have no voice and should avoid hot stuff, she went to look for a larger bowl to be filled with cold water to cool down the noodles quickly. As she was absently doing the task, she inattentively touched the big pot and it fell to the ground with a loud noise. That hot pot was filled with hot water that spilled on her hands. She screamed.

The sound of her screaming succeeded Zheng Xie to hurriedly rush down. He hastily appeared in the kitchen doorway wearing only a bathrobe. His hair is all wet. He had actually gone to take a bath.

He looked around and found nothing. With an expressionless look, he turned away. He makes it look as if she is intentional.

He He whom had just calm down a little, because of his attitude, had her emotions rise up again.

“I am not angry. Not angry.” As she is obsessed with herself, while holding on to another bowl of noodles, probably because her hands was shaking, a few drops of hot soup drop on her hands. She called out loudly and then spilled some soup.

This time, Zheng Xie whom had not gone far, did not bother turning his head.

He He did not know where her impulse and courage came from. With her eyes closed, she drop the whole hot bowl of noodles onto the ground, on her feet. With the bowl that feel onto the ground, nothing actually happened.

The burning sensation instantly hit but she does not cry out loud in pain. Zheng Xie unaware of what was happening, continued to go upstairs.

Did not succeed in getting his attention, He He became shameful and filled with anger. She burst into tears like a child.

## Chapter 28.3: I want to marry you tomorrow

*Arrrggg.... this is so frustrating.... we are going round in circles.... again! Why is Zheng Xie being so hard on He He now? To the extend when she accidentally hurt herself with the hot noddles, he is ignoring her.... Sigh! I just want the part where they got together. Is that ever going to happen?*

*Today's chapter is all about how He He tried to get his attention and forcing him to admit his feelings but instead, Zheng Xie continue to ignore her..... a little funny read for those who could imagine the scene as it enfolds but to some of you out there, it would also be frustrating. To me, it is both.... sigh!*

### Chapter 28.3: I want to marry you tomorrow

The more she cried the sadder she becomes. To the extend where she almost forgot about the pain. She did not even realized when Zheng Xie came back. She only know that he suddenly picked her up, in three steps rushed to the bathroom. He did not even had time to take off her socks before he put her foot into the hand basin while running the cold water at its maximum. He silently let the cold water runs.

The scene is also unsightly. The wash basin is tilled with pile of noodles. When Zheng Xie helped her to remove her socks, her feet were already swollen and red like trotters.

If the parties are not her own, the scene would have caused He HE to snicker. But this time, she is weeping. It was because in the beginning she was wronged. And later it was because of the pain. The burning burns in the first place, under the running cold water feels like it had been poked by needle.

Later, Zheng Xie carried her up the stairs. He search the medicine chest while calling the doctor to ask. He kept a straight face, very cold. Looking at his face, He He was too scared to cry but could only secretly wipe her tears with butterflies in her stomach feeling self-defeating.

Zheng Xie's sleeve is all wet. He He carefully swallow a mouthful of saliva.

“That, don’t you want to go and change your clothes first?” Although he seems to be looking better, but in the end of the day, he was just beginning to recover, therefore his resistance is not as well as before. He He is afraid of him catching cold again.

Zheng Xie turned away. A few seconds later, he came back and threw a large towel and ‘wrap her up.’ He wrap He He with two towels while plugging her wet trouser legs. He tap her injury foot with medicine while his sleeves and shirt is still wet.

Zheng Xie make no small effort, and He He was screaming in pain while begging for mercy: “You tap mildly. Oh! Pain!”

“Now you know pain? Next time, to safe your own feet, remember to cool down the noodles first....” Zheng Xie said in a cold tone.

“How did you know I did.....” He He saw Zheng Xie’s cold eyes and closed her mouth after her guilt conscience.

Seeing that Zheng Xie is standing up to go, He He pulled his shirt. Zheng Xie sigh slightly: “He He, what do you want?”

He He just pulled his shirts, lowered her heart and kept quiet.

Zheng Xie slowly pulled away each one of her fingers and quickly pulled the almost undone bathrobe.

“What do you want? At that time, I don’t want our relationship to change. I pretended to have a relationship with Cen Shi in order to protect your relationship with Yang Wei Qi. I just do not want you to worry about it. Was I wrong?”

“Xiao He He, you sneak it in. Self-righteous, self-assertion, liar and mess things up. You think you still have a point?” Zheng Xie clearly state everything.

“Things are obviously messed up by you. Even if I am wrong, how can you just ignored me?” He He began to cry again.

Zheng Xie took the gauze and scissors and placed them back into the medicine chest. He walked a few steps around the house and then turned back. “I can’t believe that I lost in the hands of you this girl!” His face is volatile while grinding

his teeth. Before He He have any opportunity to refute, he held her up with the towel and walked into her room. When they were about a meter away, he threw her onto the bed.

He He in a panic mode, shouted: “Aiya!” and only to find that he is still very skillful. He did not even touch her feet. When she got up awkwardly, Zheng Xie had left.

She bitterly grind her teeth for a long time. Zheng Xie came back with a bowl of noodles. He placed it onto her bedside table. From the cabinet, he found her a thick pajamas before throwing it at her. “Change into this. Don’t catch a cold.” He found her cell phone and pass it to her. “Don’t lock the door. At night, if you have pain or fever, call me.”

The blushing He He said: “Even if I am dying, I will not call you.”

Zheng Xie said with a cold face: “What a pity, this injury will not kill anyone.”

He He became angry. She grabbed the cloth cat from the table and throw towards his back. The cat is small and light. Even if it hit him, would not hurt him. But Zheng Xie seems to have back eyes. On the side of the body, he stretched out his hand and caught the cat. He glanced at it and squeezed it while heading out of her room. It looks like he was not intending to return it.

He He held on the other cloth cat tightly in her hand. She wanted to throw it at him as well. But she heard the sound of the closing door later. She was left to beat on the pillow instead to vent her anger.

After hammering the pillow for a long time, her hands is aching and the burning pain from her injured foot became really exhausting. He He holding the pillow rolled in bed about dispersion of attention and almost rolled down the bed. She covered her face with tears while beginning to regret for being too impulsive today. It is counterproductive and in the end, gained nothing in the anti-corrosion. She tried to think of related words but thinking about the erupted Zheng Xie whom thinks that she is cunning and mischievous. Now he is even more not willing to meet her.

In fact, He He had discovered, since Zheng Xie found out about her smoking and drinking while she pretended like nothing had happened by not sharing the secret with him, he had looked at her differently.

She read it as he is very disappointed in her.

|

## Chapter 28.4: I want to marry you tomorrow

*Anyone enjoyed the read yesterday? It was both funny and yet frustrating, right? He He is now forcing Zheng Xie to reveal his true feelings but yet, he remains to be so cold to her. Although he did attended to her 'burned' legs.... I now wonder what entails us in the chapter today.... Enjoy the read, everyone!*

### Chapter 28.4: I want to marry you tomorrow

With her mind in a mess, her irregular heartbeats plus the pain in her foot, He He could not sleep. She sat up and took a deep breath. She turned on the TV and after changing channels for a while, finally found a show that is able to hold her attention.

As a result, it is a horror, suspense and gore thriller. One suspense after another, becomes a chain. She could not keep her curiosity, despite bursting into cold sweat, she bite the corner of the pillow while half blocking her face. Finally the show ended and she lay down in relief. But as she closed her eyes, the darkness brought numerous horror illusions with gushing blows. Beside her ears, she hear voices. There seems to be siren singing. Even the alarm clock ticking on her bedside seems in sprawling, feeling the room with terrible and scary frequency.

Trembling, He He switched on the desk lamp. In the shine, there were obviously nothing. She wrapped up the clock with cloths and jumping on one leg, tucked the alarm clock to the farthest corner of her bedroom.

The rom has a side vanity mirror. She turned around and saw a flash of a figure. Her knees weaken, till she almost sat on the floor. Then she realized that it was her own image.

She patted her chest and went back into bed. She switched off the lights but still faintly could hear the ticking sound. The image from the movie pop into her mind and she started the feeling of fear in her heart again. Suddenly, she thought about the battery that could be taken out, so she jump out of bed to get the clock again.

The room is small. But tossing back and forth twice, she was sweating. She

sighed and reflecting on her boring and impulsive actions tonight. Totally embarrassing herself.

He He hopped on her foot to the side of the house. She put her ear to the wall, trying to listen to the movement next door. Zheng Xie's bedroom is located on the other side of the wall. He has always been strict with his schedule. At this hour, he certainly would be asleep. He He was hopping to be able to hear the sound of his breathing. That way, she would not be so neurotic.

But the room is soundproofed very well. In addition to her own heart, she could hear nothing.

He He sat on the floor with her ear to the wall. This was more reassuring to her. She stumbled and almost fell asleep. In such an abnormal chaos, she thought of dragging her quilt over and slept in such position.

Just then she heard a very light breathing. Not from the other side of the wall but from her side on the room. There is someone in her room.

He He was surprised and almost screamed. She had only switched on the bedside lamp, so the room is still half in darkness. Those shadowy objects were not clear. Her mobile phone is on the bedside table. Only the light green light were flashing, rendering a tense atmosphere.

If she knew that today would be her last day, she would not have quarreled with Zheng Xie. He He dreamt and with her heart pounding and almost no voice. Her legs were very weak, she does not even have strength to stand up as the soft breathing became increasingly clear.

"I must get out" The thought flashed through her mind. She sat on the floor next to the wall and slowly moved towards the door, not caring about the pain in her foot.

Fortunately, the house is not large. She is now only a few feet away from the door. She successfully reached the door. She took a hard twist and pulled vigorously. But she does not know what she knocked over and there was a loud crashed sound. This is followed by a soft thing that jump onto her feet. Both He He and Xiao Bao the cat screamed. After screaming, she found the origin of the soft breathing is actually the sleeping Xiao Bao that was hiding in the corner. She did not know when it entered the room. While attending to her foot, she did not



bothered about it.

With her alert lifted, she shut up. And after that her heartbeat became stronger. The injured foot is aching badly. She took hold of the doorknob while trying to get up from the ground when the overhead light suddenly lighted up. Standing at the door with a tension changed to rapidly tired look was Zheng Xie with his messy hair. "Xiao He He, what trouble are you causing this time?"

Not knowing where her energy came from, He He jumped up from the ground and suddenly jumped into Zheng Xie's arm, hanging around his neck. If not for the far of his wrath, she had intended to even wrap her feet around his body. "I am afraid." She said with a trembling voice and repeated: "I am afraid!"

Poor Zheng Xie using every way to get rid of this piece of 'plaster' but failed. In the end he had to get her into his room while listening to her talking about the experience of watching the horror movie at night and hence causing such paranoid embarrassments.

Zheng Xie looked at the time. It is way past midnight. He is usually a light sleeper. After waking up, it is not easy for him to fall asleep again. He He had caused trouble the whole night, one after another. His mood is very poor. He throw He He on the chaise in his bedroom. He went to her room and brought over the quilts and pillow. He checked on her foot injury and then lay back down on his own bed. On the chaise, while He He was unable to sleep but she is feeling a little more secured.

He He feeling indefensible and curled up. She is afraid that Zheng Xie will be angry and asked her to return to her bedroom. Although there is nothing, but she was really scared.

She felt extremely safe with someone beside her. Feeling contented, she cannot remember the scary movie that she had just watched. Between her half asleep minds, she heard Zheng Xie tossing and turning and felt really sorry.

She held her breath and count his breath until Zheng Xie breathing slowed down until it maintained the same frequency before she resume her normal breathing.

## Chapter 28.5: I want to marry you tomorrow

*We have finally reach the last post for chapter 28. Another 2 chapters to go before we finish the main part of the novel. I am very happy that I had managed to keep to the schedule of posting 1 chapter a day. Hope that everyone is enjoying the read although there were some long winded and frustrating parts.*

*Yesterday's chapter is an ordinary chapter isn't it? And it is nowhere indicating ZX and HH moving closer to each other..... sigh! Let's check out what's ahead for today..... An interesting chapter today as it covers a little part of what we are all anticipating.... but it was left hanging again!*

### Chapter 28.5: I want to marry you tomorrow

The old recliner although is very wide, but it is inconvenient for her feet. It is uncomfortably to lie on it. Any gentle movement will issue a squeak sound. So she dare not move, and her body becomes stiff. Soon, she felt like her waist is broken. For a long time, she could not feel any sleepiness. Soon, she saw a little light coming through the gap of the curtain. She found Zheng Xie deep in sleep, half of his bed empty.

He He wrapped herself with the quilt and roll into a cylinder. She move to the bed and fell slowly onto the half empty side of Zheng Xie's bed.

She is very quiet and careful hence did not even touch Zheng Xie. But he seems to be alert as he sat up and at the same time, the reading lights lighted up.

"Xiao He He, what do you want to?" Zheng Xie asked with a thick nasal voice.

"Sleepwalking. I was sleepwalking." She did not expect him to sleep so lightly and with great embarrassment, lying flat on the bed, with half closed eyes. Subsequently she issued light breathing while pretending to sleep. But she flet tha Zheng Xie had been leaning against the bed, no longer lie down with the light still on.

"He He." Zheng Xie sounds exceptionally husky above her. She did not dare to open her eyes and lay down motionless. After a long while, Zheng Xie said: "I know that you are not asleep. Think about my proposal, to go abroad to study

for 1 or 2 years. When you come back, we will get married.”

Xiao He He opened her eyes and looked at the direction of Zheng Xie. But although he had the desk light switched on, but he was hidden in the back light. She could see the outline but could not see his expression but only see that he was looking at her.

The light just happen to shine on He He’s face. And he was glancing at her. He He guess that her own facial expression must be very dull.

She shifted her position, trying to get out of the light range but without any success. Zheng Xie discover her motives, and slightly adjusted the lighting direction. After the lights were shifted, the environment become less intense. He He asked: “Two hours ago, you were ignoring me. Now you actually said you want to marry me. Are you fully awake?”

“I don’t want to get you into the middle of the mess and incriminate you wrongly while letting Auntie Lin loses any face. So I needed a little time to resolve the situation while also need time for everyone to forget about what happen. He He, I thought you can understand.”

“How come you don’t ask if I am willing to marry you?” He He gain her courage and asked. She felt that lying there with Zheng Xie is uncomfortable so she squirm to sit up while still being wrapped around with the quilt. Later, she found that sitting side by side with him is more ambiguous, so she lay back down into the cocoon-like laying.

In her toss and turn period, Zheng Xie kept quiet. Until she lay down again, he said: “You had taken the initiative to climb into my bed, so I thought you would not object.”

“When I was younger, I often sleep in your bed.” He He then refute. She found these words with different implication, so her face started to heat up.

As a child, she did often sleep in his bed. She often ran out from her room at midnight and squeeze into his bed. Once he locked the door. At the entrance, He He silently cried outside of his door. Don’t know how he heard, he finally opened the door to let her enter.

He He has a bad sleeping habit. She often sleep in a rough way, with her feet

pressing onto Zheng Xie's stomach, her head arch under his armpit. So he would often took the advantage of her sleeping, and using the quilt, wrapper her tightly into an infant state. This caused her not being able to move. Later, it became her habit, sleep with the quilt wrapped around her body into a tubular shape, just like a big fruit pancake.

But this was a long time ago now. Probably from the time he started high school, He He is not allowed to sleep in his bed. If He He have to rely on him and still wants to sleep in his bed, he would lie on the couch. After a period of time, He He no longer rely on him.

Zheng Xie took the opportunity of discussing with He He the issues on hand at night when her brain is still in a chaos. He ignored her and continued: "Since you do not have a boyfriend and I no longer have a fiancée, then of course we should get married. If it is not because of what you did.... Maybe now we would have already got married." Zheng Xie calmly explained, as the saying goes: "The sun rises in the east and rotate to the west. This is the revolution of the Earth."

Xiao He He got up again and got rid of the quilt. She sat down with Zheng Xie, feeling that her position is relatively stronger now. "Brother, you like to keep your promises. You should be more carefully before you speak."

"Do you think that I am saying it casually?"

"If it is not because you found out about the incident, you would never had the thought of marrying me. You do not need to be held for a lifetime. I had said so many times, I do not need any compensation. In fact, all these years, if it is not because of Shi Lin and Cen Shi appearing, I really had forgotten about the incident. How come you do not believe that I am telling the truth?"

"He He, all these days where we were apart, I did not had a comfortable life. You also did not had a comfortable life. I think that is enough to prove that we should be together."

"That is because you were harboring the guilt towards me. And I was afraid of affecting your normal life. If not, I accidentally spilled the beans, you would not know anything. Everything would have still been the same."

"Didn't you asked me, why did we break up? Wei Qi asked me if I love her. Looking into her eyes, I could not say the words that she wishes. Also, when you

were with Cen Shi, I see it as an eyesore. If you are also entangled into the problem....”

“Ah, you do not necessarily love her, because you really do not love anyone. That include yourself. But you cannot deny that you like her a lot. But you were too honest of a man, refuse to lie. She certainly did not leave you because you did not say those words. But she left because she loves you more than you loves her. So she decided to walk away. As for Cen Shi..... because you do not like him, so you see him as unsightly. In the cases of those that you do not hate, such as Brother Shi Lin, and those that you had recommended to me in the past, if I chooses to be with them, you would be happy.”

Zheng Xie said: “He He, can you dwell on this point. We are talking about the future.”

“But you cannot deny that if that incident did not happen, or you do not know, then you would not make this decision?”

The outcome of this quarrel is Zheng Xie re-wrapped He He from head to toe and then throw her in the middle of the bed. And he slept on the chaise.

He He tired and sleepy and finally fell asleep. When she opened her eyes, the sky started to light up. She dreamt that she was in the cable car up the mountain. Staggered and long after, woke up. She found herself still crouched in the cocoon-shaped roll but was lying on her own bed. Probably when she was dreaming, it was Zheng Xie throwing her back into her room.

Early in the morning, Auntie Wang came back from the country. She saw the sunken eyes of Zheng Xie and was surprised and distressed. She persuaded him to go back to work a few days later. Later, she saw He He’s trotter foot and almost collapsed: “I only left for one night only!”

## Chapter 29.1: Climbing up Half A Moon

*It is already Friday! And we have completed week 1 of July. It has been over 4 months since I started translation of this novel.*

*After the little excitement that ends chapter 28, today's chapter is a little boring. Guess, life is back to the normal days for these two super slow to admit their feelings couple. So, do try to enjoy the read today....*

### Chapter 29.1: Climbing up Half A Moon

At breakfast, Xiao He He mentioned about what they spoke about earlier last night. Some of the topics that were discussed were when he will return home to live. Zheng Xie turn and told her to shut up.

Probably because he did not sleep well last night, Zheng Xie did not go to work. He stayed the whole morning in his bedroom, did not appear at all. Maybe he was catching up on his sleep.

Xiao He He with her swollen feet, did not go anywhere. She half-laying on the bed, wrapped in her quilt with her laptop stalls on her legs. She was drawing while had the chat window open, and latching every five minutes to a cavity.

The original plan was for her to resign and go to work in C City. But these days, she also occasionally picked up some sporadic small jobs from someone else. Paintings, designing some covers and some animation just to earn some pocket money. So even without touching her savings or mother's money, she still had some money to use.

It is considered that she had some skills and will not starved to death. It can be considered that in her twenty years, she had been adaptable in this areas, with no cent of ambition.

Zheng Xie's mother was expecting her to become a famous painter. Her mother encouraged her to continue to do art research studies. But she decided to become a small non-descript painter, every day in accordance to her customer requirement, depicting products. She actually felt very satisfied.

"I am just a wasted piece of wood. So everyone is disappointed." He He

thought discourage.

She used to be active in the chat group. There is a group of male friends who are discussing about the different ways to propose. This group of people are all from the designers' background. There are many creative discussions. So many starts to talk about their memorable courtship to proposing.

He He is usually transparent in this group when they are in the moments of such scene. Today, she suddenly ask: "When you are being proposed, how to know if the person truly love you?"

"Ha ha ha.... Good sister, you are born in the 80s and not the 90s..."

"You have heard that marriage is a man's most sincerity that is given to a woman."

"Love is to do it.... To do it!"

"Attention... watch the impact. In this group, there are some 'children' as well."

"Someone proposed to the little sister? Body through the money?"

"If you love him, then accept him. If you don't then kick him away."

Xiao He He: "....."

He He is feeling a little bored, so closed the chat window. After finishing up the drawings, she started to explore movies to watch online. Keywords: childhood, soon fell in love, sexual love. There were many movies to choose from but not a single nice one. None could hold her attention / interest for more than five minutes.

She began to reflect on the incident from last night and felt that she had gone overboard. No matter what it is, Zheng Xie was proposing to her. Although the scene is not very romantic and even felt like he is assigning a task. But yesterday, Zheng Xie was trying hard to explain how he felt about her. Although the way is awkward, for Zheng Xie, it had been a very difficult task. As for her, even if she is in doubts or feeling anxiety, she should not have fought against it. When Mr Collin ask Elizabeth to marry him, she even thank him. Not to mention that in her face was Zheng Xie.

The more He He thought about it, the more she felt regretful and felt that she must go and apologies to Zheng Xie. She had said a few harsh words in the past and had caused the relationship with Zheng Xie to turn sour. Her obstinacy adding to her desperate effort had brought them back together and she obviously had messed it up again. At least she need to let Zheng Xie understand that she is not rejecting him because she does not like him but more for him to understand that he really do not need to bear any responsibility for her.

She planned several things in her mind, thinking of the best and most reasonable way to apologies without angering Zheng Xie again. But she could not compose a suitable statement. At this point, Aunty Wang called her for lunch.

Over lunch, she continued to think of a plan, so was eating slowly. Zheng Xie ate very little so had finished his meal. But he did not go away, instead looking down at the newspaper.

This is always his rules. If there are no emergency, when others have not finished eating, one is not allowed to leave the table. This is a basic courtesy. He has always taken these as importance both to words and action.

He He quickly finished eating and put a plan in her mind. She checked for the last time and saw that Aunty Wang had left into the yard. So she was ready to open her mouth.

“That one....”

Then, Zheng Xie cell phone rang a few times. He took it out and glanced at it. He He also looked up. He He is surprised to see him laughing. He began to compile messages. His message content should be very short because he only took four to five seconds to complete.

He He paused the words that she want to say.

After a while, the SMS ringtone buzz sounded. Zheng Xie looked at the phone and dial back.

He almost did not speak but said a few monosyllabic words: “Oh..... ah..... Good.”

His last words: “I know. I will see you this afternoon.”



At the other end of the phone is clearly a woman. And she sounded spoiled.

He glanced at the peering Xiao He He: "What did you wanted to say?"

"Nothing." He He is no longer in the mood to apologize.

So Zheng Xie continued reading his newspaper until He He completed eating. After she finished, he put down the newspaper and went upstairs together with He He.

The sole of the feet had a little burned too. So He He was still in pain. She grabbed the stairs railing and like a rabbit jump from one step to another. She look pitiful. But Zheng Xie did not offer any help.

After lunch, Zheng Xie went out and only returning in the evening.

||

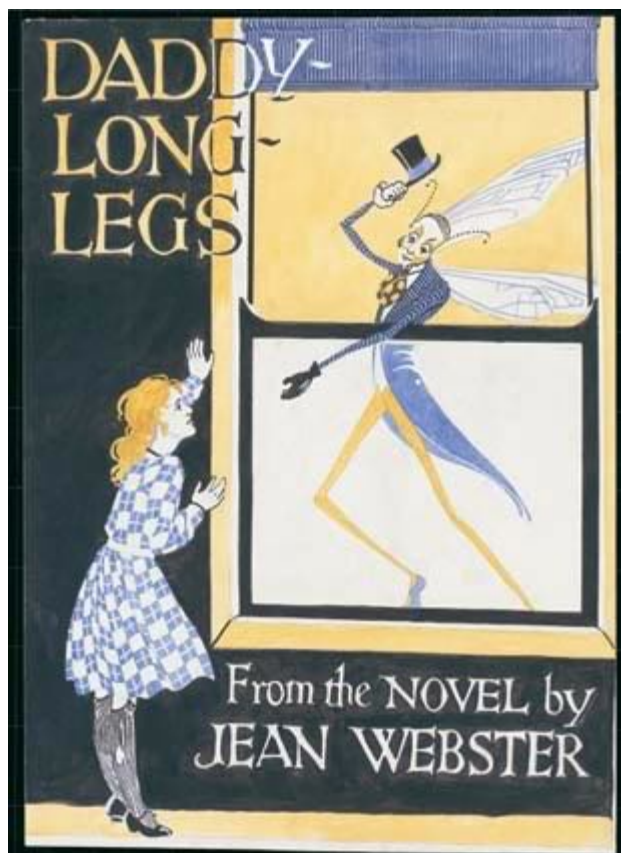
## Chapter 29.2: Climbing up Half A Moon

*It is finally clear that He He is aware of how she felt about Zheng Xie. But she refused his proposal because she thinks that he is marrying her for what happen 7 years ago. To be responsible. Is it really it? Why Zheng Xie is refusing to tell He He that he actually loves her. Does he really loves her or he is just too boring and contented with his life to the extend, he is not able to love anyone? I am also beginning to wonder.....*

### Chapter 29.2: Climbing up Half A Moon

When he came back, He He was watching the sunset while sitting on the windowsill. The red and gold big ball is a nebulous shadows and a beautiful sight.

The car stop against the sunset at the door. When Zheng Xie alight from the car, his lanky body forms a planting elegant silhouette with his feed extending longer than a shadow. His reflections are reflected on the wall, making He He thought of a famous fairy tale characters, Daddy Long Legs.



She rubbed the sun dazzled eyes only to see clearly again. She was surprised to see another delicate and soft shadow grabbing Zheng Xie by the neck and kissing his cheek. Then she got back into the car and the car pulled away. It turned out

that the car is not Zheng Xie's car. He actually is willing to take someone else's car.

Zheng Xie looked up to her direction. Although he was against the light, but she knew that his eyes would be able to see her both unsightly and rude look. She immediately jumped down from the window still. But she forgot about her injured foot, hence landed a little hard on the injured feet. And even twisted it a little causing her to scream in pain with tears almost falling down her face.

Later, on the pretext of being in pain, she refused to head down for dinner. She hide in the room and only ate a little.

She refuse to acknowledge that she is throwing a tantrum from being jealous. After all, she was not sitting on the window still to wait for Zheng Xie's return.

But this man, last night proposing to her but today look like nothing happen. The body had just recovered and on the second time heading out, immediately attracted new 'flower'. Even standing on the exact position of the objective, she also had sufficient reason to despise him.

Zheng Xie step into He He's room. She was sitting on the bed holding her laptop watching movie. As he was approaching, she immediately closed the screen, with an alert look on her face.

Zheng Xie asked: "Feet still aching? I get the doctor to come over, okay?"

"My whole body hurts." He He pouted.

"If your body is in pain, then lay down. Don't play with the computer." Zheng Xie took the laptop away from her. He He pouted her lips.

Zheng Xie dragged a chair to her bedside and sat down. He had changed into a house coat. He He did not know if it is psychological, she always felt that his body has a faintly discernible smell. He He never use any perfume.

"Do you have something to say to me?" Zheng Xie asked.

"I do not want to talk about it." Instead of saying 'no', it is better to just tell the truth.

"Is it about what we discussed last night?" Zheng Xie casually asked.

"Why do you want to marry me? What do you like about me? You could not

even say any reason, don't you think that this decision is reckless? At least you were clear on why you want to marry Yang Wei Qi, right? In addition to what I said the reason to be, do you have other reason why you want to marry me?"

Zheng Xie began to rub his temple. This has become his latest habit.

"He He, I hope that in the future life, everyday there is you. Is this reason enough?" He said this with a very patience expression.

"You look so strange." He He calmly said. "You have not answered my question from last night. If that incident did not happen, or if you did not know....."

Zheng Xie took several deep breath. "He He, I think when one is doing anything, the end result is the most important aspect. But the process to achieve the results are necessary. There is no need to assume 'if' all the time."

"But I think the 'process' is the most important. The result is nothing more than just a few words. Shi Tai said, the process is ugly. Everything would be in vain."

"How is the process ugly? Who is Shi Tai?" Zheng Xie frowned slightly.

While Zheng Xie is looking confused, He He threw herself into his arms and hug his waist.

Zheng Xie was sitting on the chair. He was fluttered and in reflex stood up to catch her. Then pushed her back onto the bed. "What do you want to do?"

"You see, you obviously instinctively resist my affection. And yet tried to convince me that you love me so you want to marry me. Are you able to convince yourself?"

Zheng Xie almost molars: "Xiao He He, you are absolutely ridiculous."

"I am always unreasonable!" He He cover herself from head to toe with the quilt.

Under the quilt He He's heartbeat is very fast and her body temperature is rising. Haiz. Another impulsive action. How come recently she is always so impulsive. Zheng Xie had taught her before that when one is impulsive, to talk less as to avoid making mistakes. She often forgot about this.

Blame it on Zheng Xie's body perfume that stimulate her nerves. She is a little

allergic to perfume.

Hearing the sound of Zheng Xie leaving the room, He He got out from under the quilt. She sat for a while before resuming the movie that she was watching before being interrupted by Zheng Xie.

This movie is categorized as porn but it is very boring. Fortunately, with the seductive male and female, the picture is still very beautiful. He He was yawning as she watched.

This is a love story that resulted from sex. Both the man and woman were just friends. Because they accidentally slept together, they fell in love with each other's bodies and got together later.

"That would have been interested in each other's body. Are you interested in me? Haiz." He He recalling last night's conversation with Zheng Xie. And then he curled up for a few hours on the couch. As well as pushing her vigorously earlier. She chew on the cloth cat's ears while grinding her teeth for a long time.

The pair of cloth cat is only left this one. The other one had been taken away and was never returned by Zheng Xie.

Every time she mentioned about Zheng Xie wanting to give her compensation, she is outright. He is an honest man. He He bite on the cloth cat. After a while, she remembered that the cat was made from old clothes and stuff with old cotton. She quickly jumped out of bed to gargle.

| |

## Chapter 29.3: Climbing up Half A Moon

*After yesterday's chapter, we seems to be going back into circles again, isn't it? We have completed 1/4 of Chapter 29 and still both of them does not seem to be getting anywhere near together. But we are so close to the ending, so really don't want to give up now, right? I do understand the frustration that some of you are going through out there.... I guarantee a funny and sweet ending, so hang on there ok... we are getting there....*

*And interesting chapter today where He He is making her move now towards Zheng Xie. Read on and enjoy!*

### Chapter 29.3: Climbing up Half A Moon

Sometime later, He He hobbled down the stairs and found Aunt Wang in the kitchen.

"He He, your feet is not convenient. Call me if you need anything." Aunt Wang said.

"I twisted the ankle and is looking for a bottle of wine to eliminate the swelling."

"Medical alcohol right?"

"Well..... the online said that wine is better." He He said within blinking an eye.

Then she decline the help from Aunt Wang's help. She took the small bottle of liquor that Aunt Wang found and limped upstairs.

Her feet was really twisted earlier in the evening and is now getting worst. But.... He He studies the wine for a while. She poured the wine on the joints but accidentally pour onto the burned part and scalded her. The pain brought tears into her eyes straight away. She took a few mouthfuls of wine. The hot feeling helped to eliminate a lot of pain.

Time is getting late. He He turned off the lights and sat in the dark for a while. Using the mobile phone, she gave Zheng Xie a call.

Zheng Xie slept really early. His voice were soft and fuzzy: "What do you

want?”

“Can I go to your room? I am afraid. Yesterday, the horror film....”

“Go to find Auntie Wang.”

“She snores in her sleep.”

“Then keep the lights on.”

“But....”

“Tomorrow you throw your tantrum. I am sleepy now.”

“I am sorry about tonight. I apologies for last night.”

“Oh, it is okay.”

“Can I go to your room now?”

Zheng Xie hung up.

He He grinded her teeth and sat in the dark for a while. She drank the remaining wine and even had a few chewing gum. Then she took a few deep breath the yoga way, trying to enter into the legendary meditation state but failed.

In the dead of the night, with Xiao Bao the cat and Auntie Wang fast asleep, the lights in the house were all out. Xiao He He, wearing a thick pajamas sneak out of her bedroom. One leg out, she held a very bright flashlight in her hand. There are not many people in the house. The part-timer is only around during the day. Only Auntie Wang lives downstairs. Old people goes to bed early. At time like this, she would already be deep in her sleep.

The night horror sequelae has not completely eliminated. But comparing with her plans, He He at times like this is a little nervous and excited. Also in high alcohol situation, she gradually started to think about horror scenes.

The electrical control panel is located at the back corner of the stairs. The heating main valve of the second floor is located in another corner. She touched the wall to jump over to the second floor and switched off each room lighting electrical and heating valves.

Auntie Wang please do not get up at night. She would be shocked. He He

prayed at the side while patting on her chest to try to calm herself down. “I am not doing anything bad. I am just saving someone’s soul.” She whispered some self-comforting words to herself.

Feeling a little too nervous, He He had a little sense of vertigo. She evenly touched her way upstairs. On the empty step, she fell to the ground. Fortunately there were soft carpet and her clothes are thick enough, so it did not make any sound.

After getting to her own door, she picked up the quilt that had been rolled into a ball from the door. Holding the quilt while having to hop around is very inconvenient. Luckily Zheng Xie’s room is only a few steps away. And he did not lock the door.

He He crept gently after opening the door and head in sideways. She heard a cold voice calling out from the bed: “Xiao He He, get out.”

“Blackout. I am afraid....” He He quickly moved towards the direction of his voice. His room is too dark as there were very little light. She hit the bed legs and cried lightly. She half fell onto the bed and hit onto Zheng Xie’s body. Zheng Xie bounced and sit up while his hand reached out to switch on the light.

‘Popping’ sound but there were no light. He He said: “Do not ask me to go out. I am afraid. I sit here all night, okay?”

Zheng Xie no longer speak and tugged on the quilt. He moved to the other side of the bed.

That is a consent from him. Without any guilt, He He climbed into his bed. She once again roll herself and lay down obediently at his side. Then she discover that she forgot to bring a pillow to lie down. She propped her quilt to stack some makeshift pillow. Which she was doing it, Zheng Xie moved his half of his pillow to her side. He paused and with a lesser confidence said: “Did you drink tonight?”

“My feet hurt. I had a little wine to reduce the pain.”

“Isn’t there medication for pain?”

“Those kind of medication will hurt the stomach.”



“Trouble.” Zheng Xie murmured. He lay down on his side. Estimated that he was too tired sleeping on the chaise last night, so he did not go over to the chaise tonight. But from Zheng Xie’s thin breathing, he is a distance away from her.

He He lie down for a moment and remain quiet. Her hands and feet were exposed. The heating valves that she had turned off downstairs is slowly playing its role. The room temperature began to drop.

She took a deep breath and her freezing cold hands and feet were headed into Zheng Xie’s quilt. She is proud of her cleverness. The lack of alcohol level in the wine will not cause her to be drunk but can help to thicken her skin.

Before she had the opportunity to do her magic, Zheng Xie had turned over his quilt and pressured it under his body, so she had no place to start.

He He threw herself on him. “I am cold.” Then she screamed. “My feet hurt. My feet hurt!” Because Zheng Xie was rejecting her and turned, her feet heavily hit the bed.

Zheng Xie sat up and cover her mouth quickly with one hand to stop her from screaming. His other hand slowly grope her feet from the toes up to the newly injured ankle. Her feet were swollen and cold. Zheng Xie massage her for a moment. Then he put her feet into the quilt and then wrapped her up solidly with the quilt. He then moved to the side of the bed. He lay down again with his back towards her.

He He writhing in the cocoon like quilt. It was a full minute before she could release herself. She quickly got into Zheng Xie’s quilt while putting her cold hands and feet onto him while whining: “I am really cold.”

Zheng Xie lay motionless. Don’t know if he is really asleep or faking to be asleep.

## Chapter 29.4: Climbing up Half A Moon

*It was indeed a funny chapter yesterday with He He putting on a thick skin and now throwing herself at Zheng Xie. While he tried his best to ignore her.... Would today's chapter be another funny and entertaining chapter?*

### Chapter 29.4: Climbing up Half A Moon

Xiao He He is like a koalas clinging on to Zheng Xie. The north wind blowing in from the window is really cold not that the heater is not working. Although Zheng Xie's body is not hot, snuggling up, it is much warmer.

But she was nervous. The whole room seems to be filled with the sound of her heartbeat. She silently chant the Buddha script in her heart. She then slide her hand into the hem of his pajamas, clinging onto his waist. Zheng Xie not only look good, he feels good as well. Very comfortable and warm.

"Xiao He He, you are not drunk right?" Zheng Xie's cold voice floated out within the darkness. He grabbed her hand to prevent her from any indecent assault.

"Don't you feel a little excited?"

"What do you want to do?" Zheng Xie asked in a low voice.

"My friends said today that it is very difficult for a man to refuse the advancement from the women he loves. So I want to experiment."

The force that Zheng Xie applied to her hand became loose. He He took the opportunity to break free and to hold him from his back. She kept her cold hands on his chest. This time, Zheng Xie did not struggle.

He He continued to touch, although there were not much response. But he did not resist either. He He's courage increased.

Zheng Xie's body is a little tense. He He coax him like she is coaxing a child to relax but was not successful. She was a little frustrated and continued to work hard. This time, she was satisfied with the result that she achieved. "Hey, you also have a little feeling."

“It is enough. He He go to bed.” Zheng Xie said in a little hoarse voice. But his command backfired. In the darkness of the night, the more daring and thick skin Xiao He He flip on top of Zheng Xie, putting pressure on him.

Zheng Xie grunt, not expecting her action. Because she was too clumsy and rude when she moved, she accidentally hit his most vulnerable place. He instinctively reached out to block her from falling on him. But because the room is too dark and in his sleepiness, he touched a mass of softness. At the same time, He He whom was in pain cried: “Oh!” He quickly let go and Xiao He He fell on him. She took the opportunity to wrap herself around him while he tried to get rid of her. As a result, he touches the part that he is not supposed to touch while listening to her crying out “My feet..... My Feet.....” He blocked her mouth again and as a result, undefended, once again she took the favorable terrain and sat on top of him.

“Don’t you want me?” He He propped herself on her chin and asked him, while her hot air blew on his neck.

“Then, you agree to marry me?” Zheng Xie asked in a full businessman like.

“If you are not even interested in touching me, then why would you even want to marry me?”

“Let’s discuss this after your feet had recovered.”

“Why not now? You obviously have reaction.” He He lightly touched him with her legs and started working on his pajamas. “Shhh..... we have a quick one. Let’s not wake Auntie Wang up.”

“Crazy. Xiao He He.... You.....” Zheng Xie’s words were blocked by He He who bend down to block his mouth. After a few seconds, she raised her head. “You push me again today. If you push me again today, I will never marry you.”

Zheng Xie lay motionless and not utter a single word. He only took a few deep breath.

She sat up and continued to unbutton his pajamas. She is very clumsy. As a result, she only managed to complete unbuttoning the pajamas after a long time. Then she touches Zheng Xie’s chest. His chest is smooth and strong, feels like a good velvet touch. He is shivering slightly. Probably angered from her

action.

He He have the feeling of walking on a tightrope. She is back into the same dilemma of advancing or retreating. Anyway, since it has come to this point, just move forward. With her trembling hand, she touches Zheng Xie's pajamas pants. He reverse and pressured her body.

"Xiao He He, are you serious?"

"Of course. Do I look like I am kidding?"

"Good." Obviously in the darkness, she took so much effort to unbutton his pajamas. But he took less than five seconds, just like peeling away the shell of the lychee, he managed to strip her from her pajamas. From her nervousness earlier, she had sweat a little. Her naked skin that is suddenly exposed to the cold air, He He could not resist a sneeze.

Really destroying the mood. He He is upset. This is not good enough for a mood. In the movie, the buttons were always undone one by one. And then the clothes are slowly slipping away in the hazy ambiguous light. Not like now. Before she could react, all her clothes had disappeared. In the darkness of the night, she is only surrounded by the sound of breathing. Could not see anything.

After hearing her sneeze, Zheng Xie stretched out and pull the quilt over He He.

After he wrapped her up, his action became slower. He seems to be talking to himself in a slow voice and as if he were also trying to persuade himself and He He. "No. Not today."

"Are you talking about that? I have it in the pocket of my pajamas." He He said in a small mosquito like voice.

Zheng Xie indeed found the box of necessities from inside her pocket.

"You really come prepared." Zheng Xie said but not able to sense his mood.

"Yesterday, they were giving this out on the road. So I readily took...." Halfway through, He He felt that there were no need to explain. In fact, the packet from her pocket today was indeed her inspiration and courage.

Zheng Xie grunt. He He heard him putting on his clothes and the sound of the

bed creaking. He seems to be getting out of the bed. The footsteps are slow and soft. She turned to look. Zheng Zie seems to be heading towards the direction of the door.

He He is embarrassed and shy. She sat up. Tonight the curtains are tight enough, so there were no lights totally in the house. But when the door was open, she grabbed a pillow and threw it at the door. “Bad guy. Truly bad guy!” He actually played with her. She was very angry.

| |

## Chapter 29.5: Climbing up Half A Moon

*It was indeed an exciting chapter yesterday that ended with in anti-climax right? What happen next? Did Zheng Xie really left the room?*

*Today's chapter is quite entertaining although it was hard for me to translate them as there were many areas where wording them in English was so hard. So forgive me if there were parts where it sounded a little strange. My advise is just to use your imagination.... He He He.....*

### Chapter 29.5: Climbing up Half A Moon

Zheng Xie shut the door and said in a low voice to her: "I went to turn on the power and heater that you switched off. I don't want to go blind and I don't want to catch a cold."

He He gave a toot and went under the quilt. Her reputation is now totally gone. Really shameful. She put the quilt tightly over her head, until Zheng Xie returned. With his old hands, he drag her from under the quilt. She held tightly with both hands to cover her head not wanting to let go.

When we are together.... At your disposal, wasting time is a happy time.....

After a long time, the house had returned to the nice and warm temperatures. At the foot of the bed, the lamp light is dim and soft.

He He wearing only Zheng Xie's pajamas, with her two bare legs, hop on one foot to the other end of the room to pour herself a glass of water. She took big gulp to drink the water.

After that, she also poured a glass of water for Zheng Xie. She hobbled back to the bedside. By then, half of the water have spilled.

"Drink water" He He pat Zheng Xie and said. Zheng Xie lying in the bed with his eyes closed, pinched lips, looking forbear.

"I don't want to drink." At the third time He He woke him, finally said.

He He obediently sat beside him and pulled the quilt to cover her legs.

She felt very guilty.

Zheng Xie certainly was not satisfied. Earlier, she was not quiet. Once moment laughing that it is too itchy while the other minute was kicking and gripping screaming pain. The always calm Zheng Xie was sweating like mad. Later, when Zheng Xie was attention was devoted, the strange vaguely familiar intrusion, the pain was unbearable. In the awkward position, she started to cry in pain.

Zheng Xie had quickly retreat and pulled her into his arms to sooth her.

When He He finally recovered, the first thing she said: “Okay, we are now even. You had semi-forced me once and I have half-forced you once. That incident and this incident, we treat it had never happen. Now you can put down your burden.”

The once paled Zheng Xie became a little livid. Then he lay down pretending to sleep. Of course he is not asleep because his long eyelashes had a slight flickers and his breathing had not been restored to a stable state.

He He is feeling ashamed. It was her who clearly suggested it earlier and she was strong headed about it. But she neither had the professional qualities nor the lack of cooperation. Zheng Xie who seems to had restrain and remain tolerant, that was just a disaster to him. What He He does not know is in additional to the fact that he is uncomfortable, will it cause him a greater impact?

She curved her legs and sat there for a while. She did not see any movement from Zheng Xie. She reach into the quilt and just like how she use to appease Xiao Bao the cat, felt his back. She asked: “Are you okay?”

There was still no movement from Zheng Xie. He He was embarrassed. Not knowing what to do, she kneel on his side and using her fingers, gently ruffle his hair neatly. And using her foot, she rub his back.

Zheng Xie suddenly turned over, and grab her foot gently. He opened his eyes. His eyes were dark and bright. Suddenly he looked up. He He jumped with fright.

He He, I asked you to give me some time. Before this I also tried to keep a distance from you. Do you feel wronged? My engagement was broken off and then suddenly with you. Maybe it is okay for someone else as this is nothing special. But because of our background and environments, for my family and the Yang family, this is a scandal. It would cause my father to lose face. And it will

harm the relationship with the Yang family. Not to mention that Auntie Lin would be embarrassed. She is a good woman so I don't want her to be in any embarrassing situation. I had taken all these into account before." Zheng Xie quietly explained.

"I understand. I know that you wanted me to leave in order to distance them from me. So I am willing to listen to your arrangement. But my English is very poor so I don't want to go that far. I want to go to the southern city."

"That is good."

"Also, you don't promise anything early and force me to agree. One or two years is long enough. A lot of things will happen. Think about it, a year ago, what were we doing? At that time, you were pushing me to get closer to the doctor that you had introduced to me. And the girlfriend then had now become a small artist. Have you ever thought about the situation that you are in now?"

"So, about the future, let's talk about it when I come back. You don't give yourself such a heavy burden."

"Ah, you are right. A lot of things may happen within the year or two. So, although initially I think we can wait a year or two, so that these incidents are forgotten. But now, I suddenly found myself cannot wait for the couple of years. I am afraid that it becomes a 'dream' only and complicate the matter further. So I am going to apologies to my father and then asked him to go to Auntie Lin to seek your hand in marriage. We get married. I would rather bear the charges, but I don't want to take the risks. Not forgetting that the accusations will always be on my back."

He He turned pale. "You cannot do that. What would Uncle Zheng think? My mother would be very disappointed with me. Uncle Zheng may lock you up and never let you see me."

"No, that will not happen. He likes you. At most he would beat me up. I am not afraid."

"If he knows the culprit behind all these happening is me, he will not like me like how he used to. Uncle Zheng has been in poor health condition recently. You don't go and annoy him further."

"I am telling you that these are not your fault. You don't blame yourself. I will



go and explain it to Aunty Lin.”

“No. You cannot raise these with them.” He He is almost in tears. “If you go ahead and tell them, I will run away to a place that you cannot find me.”

“You do not need to do anything. Leave it all to me. From now on, you are not allowed to do anything on your own. If there are anything, you have to discuss with me.”

“But you must promise me first that you will not go and talk to Uncle Zheng and my mum.” Whether or not he is willing, He He hooked their little fingers together for a pinky swear shake a few times. It is considered that he had promised.

||

## Chapter 29.6: Climbing up Half A Moon

*Both Zheng Xie and He He finally had the discussion that they were suppose to. So I guess it is considered that they are officially together now? But does that mean that they have to be separated for a while just as Zheng Xie wishes for He He to do?*

### Chapter 29.6: Climbing up Half A Moon

In the morning, there were a knock on the door to wake He He up by Auntie Wang for breakfast.

She is those kind of people who would wake up for a full five minutes but still not gain full consciousness. But this morning, she woke up in a cold sweat. She turned and look to her left and right only to see that she had gotten up in her own bed. She then touched her body and found that she is now wearing her own pajamas. Her heart is back into her stomach.

In the revolutionary era, Zheng Xie would be most suitable as an underground workers.

Zheng Xie is sitting at the table reading his newspaper. Hearing her movement, he looked up to see her hopping on one foot down the stairs into the dining area. His expression look like he thinks that she is looking very interesting. Once she sat down, he turned back to his newspaper. He He was suspicious if yesterday night was just a dream.

It seems that she had in the past dreamt of something that seems too real. After waking up from the sleep, she wondered if it was really a dream.

She stared at Zheng Xie to check out if there are any difference in his look. Zheng Xie sense her prying eyes, looked up at her. He He grap on her collar afraid that she might have accidentally exposed herself. In fact, this morning, she had carefully checked and found no evidence nor traces on her body. Really confusing as they were really intense last night.

Zheng Xie burst out laughing. He leaned forward to remove a hair from her body.

This action is very unusual. Although he had often done that in the past, but this time, He He almost jumped up from her seat. Fortunately, Zheng Xie held onto her shoulder, preventing her from any further action. Luckily these actions were not seen by Aunty Wang. However, Xiao Bao who do not understand human words, jumped on the bandwagon. When Zheng Xie was heading out for work, Xiao Bao followed him till he got into the car.

The next few days, their life gradually returned to normal. Zheng Xie went to work and occasionally in the evening had some entertainment. But he never drinks. He He still painting and sewing. At times, she went online. She also bought a bunch of books to get ready. As previously planned, she would also like to prepare for the examination. But since Zheng Xie using his connections is able to get her to start attending classes later, she is happily lazing around. After all, she has no interest and don't know what degree she would like to pursue yet.

They reached consensus on most matter. For example, He He heading back to study, is it ready to study or to play, it does not matter. This issues, Zheng Xie considered it as his victory. As for when to get married, when to let the parents know, He He had resolutely refused to give in. Zheng Xie repeatedly tried to convince her with no success, and as deeply troubled by it. This tentatively is considered He He won.

In the middle of the night, He He regularly 'sleepwalked' into Zheng Xie's bedroom.

It was like in the past when Zheng Xie was preparing to leave for university. He He followed him everywhere. That year, He He followed Zheng Xie when he goes to the club to play, climb the mountain, out into the sea and every little functions that he attended.

Now it seems that they had returned back to those days, that is how her mood feels like.

Although Zheng Xie seldom welcome her, but he does not know how to refuse her attack. Every two times, at least once was successfully. That gives her a sense of achievement.

But in this matter, He He has very low-esteem. Because she and Zheng Xie had lack of understanding, although Zheng Xie's technique is quiet good, but every

time there seems like a comedy and disaster movie. Someone who is in alternative art like He He whom is still fun, to Zheng Xie is very restraint and oppressed. She suspected that there are a few times, Zheng Xie is frigid. So he never took the initiative to touch her while He He has deep understanding and sympathize with him.

So the two of them sneaked around hiding it for nearly two weeks. Auntie Wang seems to not see any changes in them, smiling daily.

Or Zheng Xie and He He had acted like normal too well. Outside of the bedroom, they pose as people of high morals. In the house, they are usually quiet. And the room soundproof is really good.

Only Xiao Bao the cat look abnormal. It often rub against He He. And then it goes to Zheng Xie's side to sniff him. And then return to He He and sniff. Not sure if it could smell the adultery smell. He He is skeptical and wonder if there is a dog soul hiding in Xiao Bao.

Over the weekend it was a rare sunny day. Because He He was feeling stuffy at home, Zheng Xie took her out for a breather. Since there were many acquaintances in the city that they did not want to accidentally meet, so they took a drive to the other city. In the past, Zheng Xie and He He often travel together. But because there were never any taboo thought as the mind was calm and poised, there were no guilty feelings.

The neighboring city is warmer. Some of the fashionable women had started to wear Spring clothing. He He was wearing a thick coat and felt out of place. So the first thing they did was to head to the mall to buy clothes.

Zheng Xie was holding her hand just like an adult holding a child's hand. He selected pieces and pieces of clothes for her. It was eccentric, very different from how it was previously.

"Aren't we only here for one night? Why do we need to buy so many clothes?"

"You can wear them after the change of season." Zheng Xie took a fruit designed hat and place on her head. Then he change to another one. "Do you like them? How about buying both?"

He He once again proved another conjecture. Zheng Xie is the one that really

like Barbie. Just because his gender is the hindrance, so had to pass it to her.

Her looks is far from Barbie dolls standard. Yang Wei Qi is more like Barbie, both in dressing and mannerism. So, she does not want to get married is right, so he cannot choose the wrong person. She cannot bear the thought of being abandon.

In actual fact, He He does not have much interest in travelling. She had visited this city several times. So they drove around the whole day wandering. They stop when they come across a place that capture their interest. At the end of the day, their stomachs are filled with snacks and they bought a whole bunch of toys.

That night, they stayed in a waterfront villa. The gray walls, white window, red roofs with delicate patterns and a beautiful landscape. He He is very interested in the place and inspected almost every brick and every piece of décor in the villa. She also drew the diagram on a piece of paper. "This place is so beautiful. Just like a house in the fairy tale. I had drew a lot of this type of house. Almost exactly the same, do you remember? In the spring, if there are morning glory or creepers on the wall... how beautiful."

"Okay. I will look for someone to grow them."

"Your house? I thought it belongs to your friend."

"Of course it is mine. I passed this place a few years ago and felt that this house has a familiar feeling. Then I remembered that when you started drawing, you had drew a lot of such houses. So, I bought it for investment. It was a very low rate. Very reasonable."

There were no one else in the house. So both of them did not had to sneak around like how it was back in the old house, as there is no fear of Aunty Wang discovering them. The culprit as usual, Xiao He He, she got Zheng Xie to play the old-fashioned game of hide and seek. The result of course, no matter how she hide, Zheng Xie has always been able to find her.

Going back and forth a few times, Zheng Xie lost his patience. He drag her out of her last hiding place and carry her over his shoulder upstairs. In the bedroom, just like being in the animal laboratory, as an experimental object, the formal experiment that starts with touching that is itchy. As she cried out itchy, she smiled while the experiment operator tired out in sweat.

A long long time after, when Xiao He He energy and strength are almost gone, the room finally settled down into quietness.

||

## Chapter 29.7: Climbing up Half A Moon

*So... as it turns out, He He and Zheng Xie are finally together yet dating in secret as He He is refusing to let Zheng Xie come clean with their families. Their live resume back to normal while they are happily spending time together where possible. I am guessing starting from here, there are really not much drama anymore between them although I do hope that when their families finally found out about them, would happily accept both of them together, after all, isn't that what both families had always wished for?*

*The start of this chapter is a little difficult for me to translate just like some of the other chapters. So be warned as my translation might not be that accurate. And be warn that, some of these part are not suitable for not below 18 years of age.*

### Chapter 29.7: Climbing up Half A Moon

Setting aside the foreplay, he only entered when both of them are fairly ready and then gradually reached the peak. Afterward, when both of them are filled with sweat with a fairly high skin temperature, He He lay on him while pressing her ears to the position of his heart. Using the stopwatch function on her mobile phone, she tested his heart. "Only 68. Is the amount of exercise we did just not is small?" She started to measure her own.

"Xiao He He. You are really filled with nonsense."

"Ah. This is a little shameless. Are you disappointed in me?"

"Fortunately, it is a new experience."

She continue to lay on him and buried her face in his chest. Using her fingers, she drew strange graphics on his body while muffling asked: "Do you think that Uncle Zheng like my mother?"

"I should think it is appreciating her."

"My mother too. In fact, so many years, from my point of view, it seems that there if there are no hindrance, they would not be so polite towards each other. If there is no third person present, they would not say a single word to each

other.” He He silence down.

“Continue.” Zheng Xie said.

“Your family would not like me to marry you.”

“Your mind is really filled with nonsense. I am the one marrying you, not them. And how do you know that they will not agree?”

“Because even I think that I am not suitable for you. I am stupid and silly. I have no background, so what do you like about me? What can I do for you? Even these incidents, I have done so badly, causing you to almost go crazy.”

Zheng Xie said: “There you go again.” With a helpless expression and a long sigh: “Xiao He He, I really cannot stand you. How come you never have such spirit when you are studying?”

He He open her mouth and place it on his neck. Zheng Xie shook. He touch her back to comfort her. “Well, you are not stupid nor a fool. Just you don’t use them in the right place. And your progress is not big enough. If your skills are more skilled and superb, I would have been driven crazier by you.”

He He kept quiet for a long time only to find that the way she asked the questions are wrong. Or is it Zheng Xie’s skills of answering is too high. Apart from the somewhat vague question, the other questions he did not even seem to have answered.

The next day, the weather is still good. He He wore a pair of gloves and play with the sand. The sands are wet so was a little hard. Zheng Xie went to the nearby store to buy a set of children’s toy to help her in shoveling the sands. When He He was concentrating in the shoveling of the sands, Zheng Xie picked up chunks of pebbles to throw them back into the sea. In the distant sky and sea, with the near golden little sparkling waves, it feels like both of them have gone back into their childhood years.

Such a good weather, there is no one by the seaside. An hour later, they were the only having all the fun there.

Suddenly, there is a burst of small wind. He He said: “Let’s go back. There is not a single person here. Really strange.”



“Let’s hang out for a while more. It is not cold.”

“Your throat and trachea okay?” He He took out from her pocket, a sterile mask. She force Zheng Xie to put the mask on. There were a cat embroidered on the mask. Looks really funny. Zheng Xie insisted on removing the mask.

“Do not remove. The sea wind can be harmful.” He He looked at the cat and Zheng Xie with the mask on. It seems funnier as you look at it. She tiptoe and kiss the cat. She held on him like a child clinging on to Zheng Xie.

Suddenly, there is a flash of light and He He instinctively indent into Zheng Xie’s arm. She turned to look. On the beach, don’t know when, there had been a third person. He was carrying a professional heavy looking camera. He was standing about ten meters away from them taking a photo.

The man was wearing a black-rimmed glasses and wearing heavy clothing. He was also wearing a large masks, grotesque while carrying a tripod. He look very professional. She is not surprise to see the man. The always careful Zheng Xie also did not find anything weird.

The man saw them looking at him and felt very embarrassed. “I am sorry. I am sorry. I am from the photographic society. The two of you from a distance look really harmonious. So cannot help but took a picture.” He showed them the photo of them that he took. “I want to do a solo exhibition soon. Can I use this photo?”

“No. I am sorry.” He He was the first to say something.

“Ah. Sorry Sorry. Do you want me to delete it?”

“Forget it. Goodbye.” Zheng Xie said and pulled He He’s hand to leave.

The man shouted from their back: “Hei. Leave me your address. I send both of you the photograph?”

“No need. Thank you.”

After the man appeared, He He lost her interest. “There is someone here. Let’s go back.”

“Just now you were complaining that there were nobody.”

“That man is weird. Does not seem to look like a good man.” She turned to

glance at him. She saw that he had already place the tripod and solemnly snapping photos of the sea.

“I am here.”

“We continue to play cat and mouse game. I go to the front side of the pergola. You can then start chasing me. The end is the station in front.” He He wanted to be a little further away from the man.

“With your kind of speed, even if you run another fifty meters more, I can still catch up.”

“Really? Well let’s try it then.” He He finished and ran away.

||

## Chapter 29.8: Climbing up Half A Moon

*It is already Friday! Another week had gone by. Time really flies when one is busy.*

*So who is the man by the beach? Is he really a photographer or someone else? I wonder what today's chapter bring for us. We are 2/3 done with Chapter 29. So I am eager to find out of Zheng Xie and He He would be thrown another challenge or test to their current sweet relationship?*

*Enjoy the read today!*

### Chapter 29.8: Climbing up Half A Moon

"What is the bet this time?"

"When the result is out, then we discuss the bet." He He said looking back with an unsteady breath.

For Zheng Xie to catch up with her is really effortless. But he deliberately tease her, and leisurely kept behind her by one meter. When she was quick and fast, he also followed slowly. She turned around and saw that the man is left with a small black spot and stopped on the beach. She was caught by Zheng Xie. She hang onto his arm and lie on Zheng Xie's back with her arms around his neck while getting him to finish the rest of the journey by carrying her.

When they got back, Zheng Xie became really busy and often worked late into the night. He He said: "There is no need to rush. We can go in a few days."

"When all things are done, I want to take a long break."

He He is actually very free. Since she bid farewell to her nine to five life, she had become very lazy. And slowly getting accustomed to the lazy life. She would read manga daily, draw for a few hours and when the weather is good, head out to see exhibition. She would spend half a day in the exhibition hall.

Her mother towards her choice in life have no objections. When she wants to continue her studies, she said okay. When she changed her mind, her mother also said nothing. And now she wants to study again, she did not extend any advice. She just asked how much money she is short of and if she needed any

help. Zheng Xie seems more like her parent in comparison.

The Zheng old house is very quiet. Basically hardly anyone come. So not many people knows that she is staying there. The neighbors knew her since childhood so considered her as his younger sister.

That day, when He He returned from her day out, she saw a black car parked outside. The car license plate carries the three provincial capital code. When she saw the car license place, her heart went into a chaos.

She wandered outside but the door had been opened. She saw a familiar face in front of her. He kindly said to her: "Miss He He, come inside. It is cold outside."

She hesitantly step into the house. Standing in the living room with her head down, she greeted: "Uncle Zheng". Then she only dared to look at his fingers.

"Sit down. Thank you for taking care of Zheng Xie recently." Zheng Xie's father tone is still as cheerful as ever.

He He stood still. The secretary that asked her to come in, took her shoulder and gently get her to sit down while patiently explained: "Secretary Zheng is here to just check out how is Zheng Xie."

"I am bringing you to see my old house. Who say I am here to see him?"

The secretary carefully smiled.

"Since the last I saw you during the Spring Festival, you have gain some weight. A girl with some weight looks better. Don't go and lose too much weight."

"Ah." He He obediently answered. She had always been respectful to the elders. At the moment, because of the guilty conscience, she is more worried.

Uncle Zheng introduced He He to the other person in the house. "This is He He, my goddaughter. When Qian was still alive, she had always hope for a well-behaved daughter. And with He He staying in this house for so many years, also considered a fulfillment of her wish."

The serious faced other person in the house suddenly realized: "Oh. I have heard of her. This is also Professor Lin's daughter?"

He He do not know if they were saying positive words or irony.

“What time are we scheduled to depart?”

“Half-past four. Unless if you want to spend the night at home.”

“No. Too much trouble. Accompanying these people to stay the night in the hotel is also a waste. Zheng Xie is still not answering the phone? Call him in the company. Ask him to come back immediately.”

“Yes.” Secretary Lin immediately went to make the call.

He He sat down with lots of pins and needles. Uncle Zheng’s attitude is making her feeling flustered.

She took the advantage to go and change her clothes and dial Zheng Xie’s phone. Thankfully only once, she is able to get through.

She felt like she is a thief. But Zheng Xie is indifference. He said that he would get home within the hour.

He He went back downstairs and sat down. Her eyes kept on drifting to check the time on the wall clock.

Seeing how nervous she is, Uncle Zheng deliberately look for a casual chat with her. But what he thought is an easy topic, to He He, it felt like she is going through the university entrance examination. He asked in a very relaxed tone with kind expression on the current employment, price and health care reform views. He He tried her best to bite the bullet and chat with him. But in her heart, she extremely regretting for not reading the news.

When she was beginning to worry about the next ‘exam’ topic, thankfully, Zheng Xie is back. She gave a sigh of relief but at the same time, went into another round of tension.

Zheng Xie came in without his coat. He respectfully stood at the door and greeted: “dad”. And then he turned to face the other man and in a more relaxed tone: “Hello, Uncle Li. The two of you are back for a visit?”

The man whom was serious earlier laughed. “You have just recovered. Why wear so little? Your dad in order to save time to come and see you, did not even had lunch, only to find out that you had gone back to work. Have you recovered?”

Uncle Zheng said: “Apart from his mind that is sick, all other part of him is perfectly fine.”

Zheng Xie looked down and kept quiet. Even Secretary Lin dare not say anything. Only the middle-aged man named Li smiled: “You this young man don’t know how to consider the elderly hearts. Not even a phone call although missing you. And had to find your situation from someone else. How not to get angry?” He turned to He He and using the excuse that his daughter also love to draw and hence want to consult He He with several issues. He used the opportunity to step away with He He, leaving both the father and son alone.

| |

## Chapter 29.9: Climbing up Half A Moon

*Last chapter ended with Uncle Zheng visiting both He He and Zheng Xie in the Zheng old house. What was the purpose of the visit? Let's find out today.*

*This is the last part of Chapter 29. After this, we will be starting the last chapter of the main novel. And the good news is that Chapter 30 is only 6 pages long. So at most, it would be only 2 parts before we could read the sweet ending of this couple.*

### Chapter 29.9: Climbing up Half A Moon

Zheng Xie followed the back of his father and step into the study.

He entered the room and stood at the doorway, not daring to step forward. Father Zheng sat down in the study only chair, and picked up the very thick original bibliographic book from the table. He studied the titled of the book. Is was the book that Zheng Xie was reading several days ago. His face clouded: "Close the door!"

Zheng Xie closed the door. He calmly and politely asked: "Do you want some tea?"

Father Zheng took the book in his hand and forcefully slam on the table. "You are so daring! Your last incident is not ugly enough. You really want to force me to death?"

Zheng Xie bowed his head.

"Speak up! Did you not dare say anything?"

"I did not mean it." Zheng Xie said sincerely.

"Shit!" Father Zheng cursed the words that he had not used for many years angrily. "If you did not mean it, had already come to this stage. If you had done it intentionally, what would it had become?"

Zheng Xie remain unapologetically.

After swearing, Father Zheng cooled down a little: "The reason for engagement break off is this?"

“This has nothing to do with her.”

“Tell me about your plans for the future.”

“I would like to listen to your opinion.” In case of his father still being in the fit of anger, whatever he said would be dismissed. It would be better for him to use the soft approach now.

Father Zheng turn to the thick hardcover book and used it as a gavel and beat heavily onto the table while said angrily: “You have nothing to fear? Have you had been compared with the others’ children, those who said that I have nothing to worry about.... I see that even if they had done 10 stupid thing, it is nothing comparing with you. Not only had you done it once. You did it twice!”

“I am sorry, father.”

“I am giving you a week to sort things out! You had caused trouble towards Miss Yang. If you dare to cause any trouble towards He He, I will break your leg!”

“I know. I want to send her out to study and after a year, after the whole incident is almost forgotten, I want to marry her.”

“In less than a month, you had already caused so much trouble. You still want to wait a year later? You get married now. Immediately! So dark and dreary!”

“Of course. But there are the Yang family emotions that we need to consider. And don’t we have to take the family face into account? Your face.....”

“That is your problem. You deal with it on your own! I just want results!”

“Yes.” Zheng Xie replied.

“You also know face value? I thought you had put the whole virtue to shame. He He is your sister. You want to treat her like how you treat other women? Do you think that just because she do not have a father, there is no one to make the call for her?”

“I will deal with it well.”

“You better handle it properly. If not, I will deal with you!”

“But He He have her own ideas.” Zheng Xie whispered.

Father Zheng glanced up and down Zheng Xie. “Now I can see the whole thing.



Because you are not able to convince her, so you use reverse operation. That is why I think it is strange. A cautious man like you, if you don't want me to know something, you would certainly conceal it tightly."

Zheng Xie kept quiet.

"And the surgery after the big New Year argument. I thought it was more serious. But you are just playing desperate to gain some sympathy. Do you think that you voluntarily endure two operation, I will let the bygones be bygones yet? Even want to play this set with me."

Zheng Xie remain quiet.

"Considered you lucky. Xiao Yang is a good girl who let it go so lightly. She also kept the whole secret for you. He He that little fool that you had cheated. Do you think that you are so smart? I think you are a brain worm. All relied on by mistake."

Zheng Xie quietly standing on the side of his father while letting him eliminate the 'fire.' But Father Zheng saw that his son is hanging his head with a calm appearance. He had not more 'gas.' Whisking the book into his hand, he threw it over at Zheng Xie. "Get the hell out of here!"

The book is thick and hard. He is worried that his son's body had not fully recovered. Originally he wanted to throw past Zheng Xie but the book burliness hit his calf. He wrinkled his eyebrows but did not utter a single word. He bowed towards his father and he opened the door to go.

How Father Zheng would not know that with Zheng Xie agile skill, how is he not able to judge the direction of the book been thrown? He is just playing the mediocre gangster to make his father happy and to shut him up. Father Zheng brought Zheng Xie up although with no many but very strict principles of things. He would not think that he would easily let this slip.

But with his suffered and heavy look, his father could not bear it. He opened the door and gently tell Zheng Xie: "Let He He come in. I will speak to her."

When He He heard that Uncle Zheng wants to see her, she was almost trembling as she enter the study. But Uncle Zheng was surprisingly pleasant to her: "He He, you have suffered."

He He is confused.

“This brat, Zheng Xie, you do not worry. I will call the shots for you. I will not let you continue to suffer.”

“Uncle Zheng, it is not like that.”

“When I return, I will propose marriage to your mother. May be hasty so it will be simple. So after a period of time, I will give you a grand ceremony.”

“I”

“Do not worry. I will convince your mother. You just wait at ease.”

After Uncle Zheng left for a long time, He He could still not regain her consciousness.

“How could it be like this?” He He asked while still feeling confused and disoriented.

“Someone sent some pictures to dad. Probably over the weekend when we were out on the beach.”

“Ah! That strange man! That is why I said the man looks wrong. How come you do not find it strange? What does he want to do? Blackmail you? Not worth it!”

“Should be he is bored.”

“It is so hateful!”

“Yes ah! Really annoying people.”

Later, He He found the bruise marks on his leg. It had swollen, and was extremely distressed. “How did you get it? You are really careless...”

She helped him to rub the bruise part and only realized much later that she had been sold and any protest is invalid.

## Chapter 30.1: End of Autumn

*Anyone surprised with how the chapter ended yesterday? I must say that I am very surprised when I was translating it. Black bellied Zheng Xie. Never thought that he was behind the whole photo and getting his father to find out about his relationship with He He. So naughty of him!*

*I am happy to read about how Father Zheng accepted He He so readily. And how quick he found out that his own son was behind the whole thing just because Zheng Xie could not convince He He.*

*We have finally reached the last chapter of the main story. As I have shared in some of the comment column before to some of you, I have decided that I will continue doing the epilogue although it would be a long one. So bear with me and enjoy the read along the way.*

### Chapter 30.1: End of Autumn

Next Stop... Happiness. The wandering day will soon end.

The marriage of Zheng Xie and He He was fast and simple. They only invited the most important family and friends. But to He He, she felt that it is still too grand. In fact, what she hope for most is to secretly register the marriage with Zheng Xie. But on this issue, she unfortunately do not have any right to speak. What she was most worried about was her mum whom actually not say anything but remained polite and kind to Zheng Xie still.

The most surprising is the large parcel that she received before the wedding from Yang Wei Qi. It is the exquisite workmanship of the wedding gown that He He had personally designed for her. In the note, Yang Wei Qi said that the dress is done in accordance to her size. This is counted as her returning the pendant and gifts. But He He still owe her a set of design.

He He's heart felt relieved. She asked Zheng Xie, such a good woman, to let her go, will be not feel sorry?

Zheng Xie said that it is not true. Because she is very good, so she is worth more for others to appreciate her. At least for him, improvising He He is

sufficient. Then in the evening, he was abused by the angry He He.

Taking into consideration of what had happen, He He went back to school in accordance to Zheng Xie's plan. But she choose to remain close, so only went to the adjacent city to further her study. Similar climate and closer distance to home. So every weekend, she will come back or Zheng Xie will head over to see her.

In fact, Zheng Xie often in a little tipsy mood, will appear in front of her in the middle of the night even when it is not the weekend. Driver Wang explained with a smile that Zheng Xie had drank a little high and especially missed her. So he took the three hour drive to see her.

At first, He He stayed in the campus. In the spring, the big fairy tale house is covered with green. Since it is so close to the university, He He moved over to stay there. Zheng Xie hired a middle-age woman to take care of her. And the cat Xiao Bao that accompanied her, is getting fatter and lazy. Xiao Bao act more like a dog in a cat's body. Each time Zheng Xie visit, it would wags its tail and roll. Completely forgotten who had been feeding it, bathing it while giving it nice clothes to wear. And also make interesting toys for it. Also forgetting that it is a cat.

When Wei Zhi Xian went to hand some office documents to Zheng Xie, he was looking at a few photos. He was considering whether or not put those photos into the shredder.

Wei Zhi Xian said: "If you don't want those photo, give them to me. Those photos are so beautiful. That classmate of mine could not use it for his exhibition. He is very sad as he says that these are his proudest piece of work..."

Zheng Xie and He He was rolling on the sand in the photographs. Zheng Xie smiled looking at those photos. He placed them back into the bottom of the drawers. "These are really good photographs. But due to poor resilience, I could not even get him to be our photographer for the wedding. I am worried that He He would recognized him and get really mad."

"Well this is a professional. Not a private detective or paparazzi. And he is reliable. Because he suspect that he is doing something bad, it took him two days of consideration before agreeing. And most importantly, it look nice ah.

Such a beautiful picture, the heart would soften.”

“Listening to it. Seem that it make sense. Thank him for me. And my dad’s spy that you have taken advantage off, remember to find a good way to thank him. This week, I will head over to He He’s place a day earlier. If there are any urgent matter, call my cell phone.”

Over on He He’s side, she was looking for information in an electronic library while chatting with Ding Ding and Su Ren Ran online.

He He: “Both of you come over to see me this weekend. The gardenia I planted, the flowers had bloomed.”

Ding Ding: “Another day. Weekend is your reunion. We do not want to be light bulb”

Ren Ran said: “Yesterday while attending a banquet, I overheard a little about Brother Zheng Xie’s gossip. Really funny.”

He He: “.....”

Ren Ran: “He is now participating lesser in various meetings. And also refuse to see people over the weekend. Some people rumored that his body may have a big problem. So over the weekend he had gone to see the doctor. The reason they suspected for his cancelled marriage. And that he does not seem to have any girlfriend now.”

Ding Ding: “There are also rumors that he is the one that.... But we can’t even tell whether he is still the subject to attack.”

He He: “.....”

||

## Chapter 30.2: End of Autumn

*The post earlier is not enough? You want more for today on He He and Zheng Xie?*

*A bonus post for today especially for all those special and supportive readers whom been through these months as I work on my first translation. Words just cannot describe my feeling of appreciation from all the encouragements. Gracia.... Merci..... 谢谢.... ありがとう..... 고맙습니다.... Thank you!*

*With this bonus post today, apologies for the readers / followers of [Finding Glowing Beauty in Books \(书中自有颜如玉\)](#) as that means no post on this one for this week. We will try to be back next week (if time permits for me – unfortunately, I have a super pack back to back meetings for next week at work)*

*So it was Zheng Xie behind the whole thing. And he got his wish to marry He He without waiting for the few years as per her wish. Indeed Black Bellied Zheng Xie. Did anyone ever suspected that? I certainly did not!*

*Did anyone find those rumors about Zheng Xie that Ding Ding and Su Ren Ran is sharing with He He funny? It is indeed a funny and happy ending!*

*We have now reach the last part of Chapter 30 as well as the main story. Tomorrow, Epilogue 1 will start.*

### Chapter 30.2: End of Autumn

Opposite He He is a gentle and graceful art boy whom occasionally looked up and secretly observed her. Using his mouse, he painted her image on the screen.

How delicate and pretty. Cute while elegant girl with a delicate features with fair skin. Soft think like voice when speaking with a gentle and sweet smile. Her makeup look elegant and simple. Her face is the size of the palm, a girl with both pure yet matured charm. Generally, looking at her is intoxicating, like the spring filled with flowers with pleasant fragrant and yet somewhat mysterious.

Why did some people said that she is sponsored by a wealthy old man? Just because she drove a small sport car to go to school and live in a nice little seaside villa. There is also said to be a retired martial arts instructor as housekeeping and

a rare breed expensive cat.

But from her dressing, there is no slightest shadow of a woman who worships money. Ah, maybe she is originally a rich girl instead.

Well, he admitted that all the information above is from what he had collected when he followed her for a few days. During the period of time, he was nearly beaten by the first housekeeper. He also narrowly escaped from being scratch by the damn cat.

No, if his princess is really imprisoned in the castle, then he must be the brave knight in saving her.

Just that, she does not seem to be a single bit suffering. She look fresh and happy daily.

What is more frustrating for him, is that they were in a total of 24 classes. He had also taken the initiative to approach her 12 times. But every time when she see him now, her smile is the same as the smile that she had for the others. And what's more, she can't even remember his name.

He He is unaware, packing while getting ready to leave. The innocent boy now lost his model, touched his head and listlessly prepare to head back to the dormitory.

He watched the exquisite slim silhouette head out of the library. But God seems to think that he is not frustrated enough, chosen for him to turn and saw his goddess suddenly swoop into a man's arm.

His human evil side is telling him that he is very jealous of the scene in front of him. Although he hoped that his crush is happy, but he would rather it be a man that is short, ugly with nasty temperament middle-aged bald uncle.

But instead, from the distance, he can clearly see the handsome young man with an elegant yet light style.

His heart broke into many broken pieces.

"How come you came today?"

"Tomorrow I have something to do. Do you have something on tonight?"

"Nothing. Just want to go back and watch the awards show live. How come

never notify me? This is the first time you come to my school.”

“I am here to carry out a surprise check. To see if you have done anything that wronged me.”

“Hateful!” He He holding Zheng Xie’s hand hard.

At this hour, there were not many people on the campus. He He put her head buried on Zheng Xie while shamelessly walked with her hand around his waist.

“He He”

“Hmmmm”

“Who is the man behind us? You owe someone money? He looked like he is at the verge of tears.”

He He quickly looked behind through his arm slot. “A male student. He seems to be interested in tracking my things. I heard the other day, he had a fight with someone for me.”

“Become so sought-after? I arrange for someone to chauffeur you daily.”

“It is okay. Now it is rumored that I am being natures as a little lover by a legendary wealthy old man. And the old man is a very powerful one, so they are very kind to me. But I suspect that from the beginning of next week, they will say that I am behind my benefactor, quietly raising 小白脸”

*小白脸 (pin ying: xiao bai lian) – chinese verbs that means ‘toy boy’*

“If you are not used to this, then change to another place. Towards the end of the year, I bring you home.”

“Let me finish my study. With the degree, I can fool people and act like a dignified lady.”

He He thought to herself. I don’t want to go back. No autonomy and no right to speak. And also have to face a lot of people and thing that I don’t like. Here is good. Comfortable and happy.

Because of the distance between them, she is particularly spoiled by Zheng Xie. But Zheng Xie felt that he had wronged her hence loved and care for her more. In fact, she see Zheng Xie at least two days a week. This is the same frequency of



how they were long time ago. In addition to the fact that they are now close, there were no other changes in life.

Zheng Xie had other idea in mind. Let it be a year or two, he will no longer be so generous. He will let He He get pregnant. Even if she do not want to go home, she will still have to go home.

Both of them deep in their own thought and ideas while crossing the bridge of while marble carving. At the end of the bridge, there were a loud sound of a pair of young lovers quarreling.

Woman said: "I no longer love you. You give me a break!"

The man said: "Is it wrong for me to love you? Please give me another chance!"

Woman said: "Please do not force me!"

The man said: "It is you who forced me. You are forcing me to jump from here!"

He He heard and chilled. She leaned over to look under the bridge: "Jumping from here will kill people?"

"No. Would not even break any leg. This must be two person from the drama club doing their rehearsal?"

"Ah. This is possible. Recently they seem to be practicing here every day. They have rehearsed for several weeks." He He smiled and said: "You seems to have never told me that sentence."

"Which sentence?"

"I love you, that sentence."

"Me too."

"You are so crafty. This is not considered."

He He turned around and drag Zheng Xie's hand passing the nauseating pair of young lovers, tugging back and forth under the bridge. They remain entangled in the shadow of the bridge with the golden sunset.

**THE END**

*This is the end of the main story. I hope that everyone had enjoyed the reading as much as I had enjoyed translating while reading the story. Yes, I must admit that there were thoughts of dropping this translation project along the way especially during the draggy and long winded part that goes round and round. Thank you to all of you readers out there that had given me lots of encouragement to pulled this through. Now.... let's head off to the next part, Epilogues.*

## Epilogue 1 – Part 1

*After the happy ending yesterday, epilogue 1 is really funny. It talks about Zheng Xie and He He's childhood where one loves to read while the other does not. And their funny conversations over the years. Enjoy this light and entertaining read!*

### Epilogue 1 – Part 1

Xiao He He never like reading as she was growing up. But Zheng Xie really like reading, so he had required He He to like reading as well.

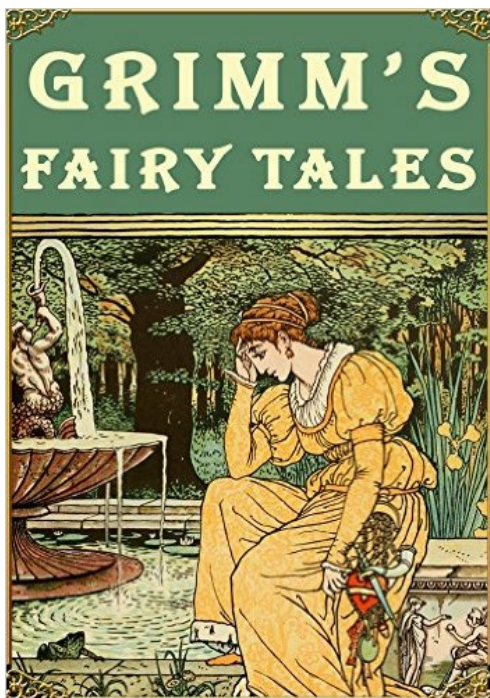
When he went to buy books, he always buy a few books for He He.

This is not only it. He often asked her to review the book as well as its publication.

As a result, He He's plan to put those books on the shelf as decorations failed.

—- Xiao He He and Xheng Xie's Discussion on Books —-

**'Grimm's Fairy Tales' – 9 years old He He and 14 years old Zheng Xie**



He He: I have completed reading 'Grimm's Fairy Tales

Zheng Xie: So fast. You managed to complete a story book with more than 300 pages in less than 1 year.

He He: I read them very carefully. I have read every single words.

Zheng Xie: Which one is your favorite story?

He He: Of course it is 'Cinderella.' The story illustrates that people with small feet will have the best luck. Among all the girls in our class, I have the smallest feet.

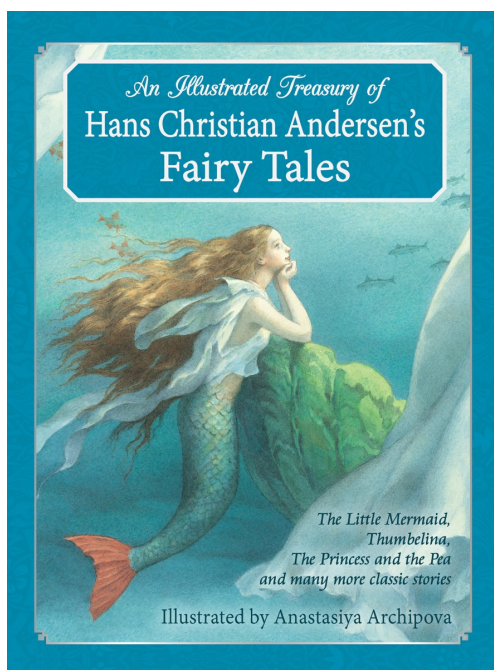
Zheng Xie: Your angle of understanding the story is really strange.

He He: Ballroom dancing is very important. Otherwise, even with the fairy Godmother and the pumpkin car is useless. Brother, you teach me ballroom dancing.

Zheng Xie: I will not teach you.

---

### **'Andersen's Fairy Tales' – 10 years old He He and 15 years old Zheng Xie**



He He: Really sad. 'Mermaid' The prince in the story, if he knows that he will save his little mermaid, he will not marry the princess.

Zheng Xie: He has to marry the princess. It is a political marriage.

He He: But..... he does not like her.

Zheng Xie: You did not read carefully. He actually like her.

He He: But..... he obviously loves the little mermaid..... Well, faithless! Fickle minded!

Zheng Xie: Since when you learn so well idiom?

He He: 呜呜, why is it so? I hate Anderson.

呜呜 (*pin ying: Wū wū*) – is a form of whining.

Zheng Xie: He He, you asked me yesterday why the ancient Chinese men can marry several women.

He He: But you did not managed to answer.

Zheng Xie: You see, if a man can marry two women, this problem would be solved. Isn't it?

He He: Well, then why now can only marry one?"

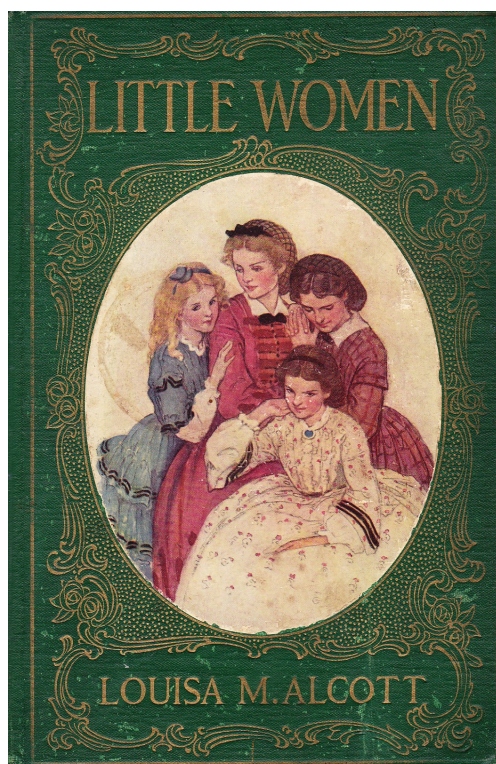
Zheng Xie: In the past, the price is relatively low. So a man can support a lot of women. Now the consumer price index is now too high. Most men cannot afford to support two wife.

He He: ..... Then you must be feeling regretful, since you can only marry one wife.

Zheng Xie: Nonsense! I think one is already too many.

---

### **'Little Women' – 11 years old He He and 16 years old Zheng Xie**



He He: Hum, I hate sequels. Hate sequels!

Zheng Xie: ?

He He: The actress married another man. The main actor married the actress sister.

Zheng Xie : So what?

He He: How can the author without my consent wrote such nonsense.

Zheng Xie: The author had passed away. Your protest is invalid.

He He: Give me time machine. I want to go back to the day before I read the sequel. 呜呜

Zheng Xie: Why why you should go?

---

### **‘The Little Prince’ – 12 years old He He and 17 years old Zheng Xie**



He He: Have you read this book?

Zheng Xie: A few years ago.

He He: What have you been inspired by this book?

Zheng Xie: Let me think about what this book had written. Uh, is that the one with rose and ten thousand roses that present? The story tells us that if you accidentally missed a rose, do not be sad as there are exactly another ten thousand roses out there.

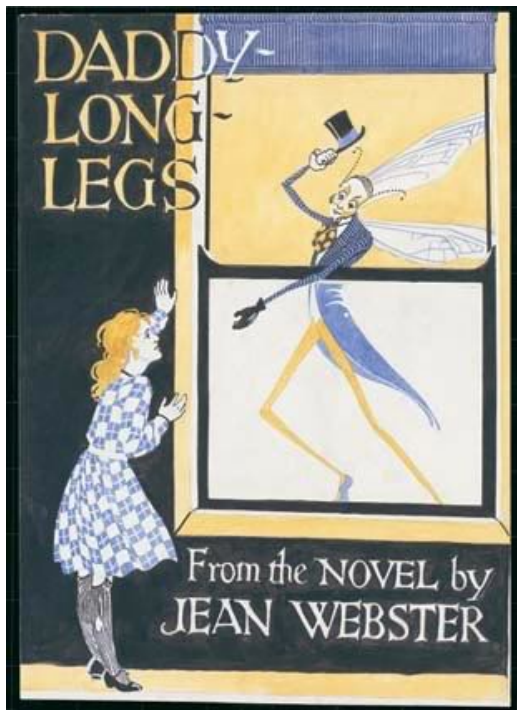
He He: So this book is talking about the other version of ‘Do not cry over spilled milk.’ I really do not understand the story. I always thought that this story is about a romance.

Zheng Xie: Is there such content in this book?



He He: .....

**‘Daddy Long Legs’ – 13 years old He He and 18 years old Zheng Xie**



He He: This book tells me not to be too honest. It would be a disadvantage.

Zheng Xie: .....

He He: You think ah, if it is not because Judy wrote such a naughty composition, how did Daddy found out about it?

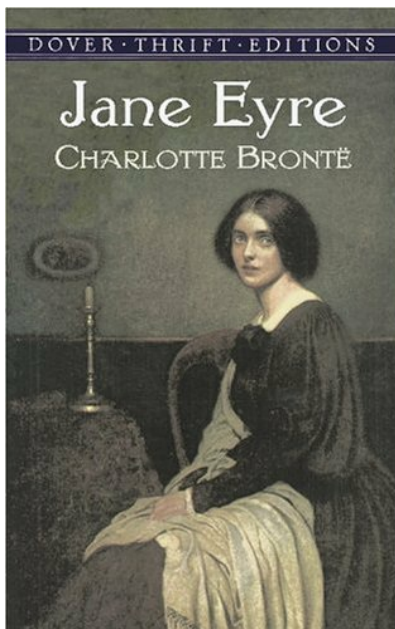
Zheng Xie: He He, no wonder when you write your Chinese composition, you have always wrote out of the topic. You have never scored in the area.

## Epilogue 1 – Part 2

*Enjoy the read as we read more about Zheng Xie and He He's cute conversations about books.*

### Epilogue 1 – Part 2

**'Jane Eyre' – 14 years old He He and 19 years old Zheng Xie**



He He: Jane Eyre is very lucky.

Zheng Xie: .....

He He: If it is not because Rochester is blind, she would have never told him and end up together.

Zheng Xie: .....

He He: This means that if we always be a good person, do not do bad things. This way, God will always see and bless us.

Zheng Xie: .....

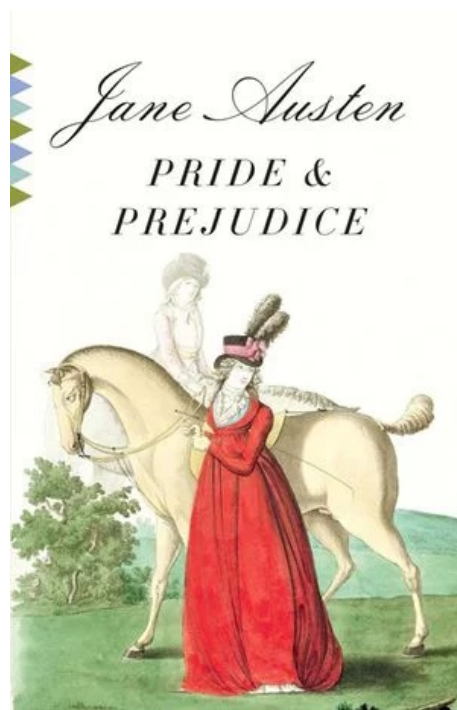
He He: So, I want to be a good person.

Zheng Xie: ..... As my dad always say, you are looking at the issue too highly

---

**'Pride and Prejudice' – 15 years old He He and 20 years old Zheng Xie**





He He: I discussed this book with my fella student. It is so depressing.

Zheng Xie: Why?

He He: I like Charlotte. As a result, they laughed at me.

Zheng Xie: Normal thinking, should be like the heroine. The heroine's sister is also good.

He He: Both of them have good luck. Like a good man, buying a lottery tickets can win a prize. And to nearly missed it. But Charlotte, she chooses her own life. You have always thought me, most respected people are those who take initiative in their own hands.

Zheng Xie: Do you read the novel so seriously?

He He: You told me before, do not read junk books as it is a waste of time. For example, can pick those with spelling or something. So I have always been reading a novel with the attitude of approaching to stylistic models.

Zheng Xie: You say that this book is 'junk reading'?

He He: I did not say it. You said it yourself.

---

**'Dream of Red Mansions' – 16 years old He He and 21 years old Zheng Xie**



Xiao He He found it impossible to sentence summary of the book and decided to start it from Zheng Xie.

He He: In this book, which woman do you like?

Zheng Xie: Well....

He He: Lin Dai Yu?

Zheng Xie: No feeling

He He: Xue Bao Chai?

Zheng Xie: A little

He He: Tan Chun?

Zheng Xie: So so

He He: Is it Wang Xi Feng?

Zheng Xie: I like Granny Liu

He He: I mean, if you want to choose a wife.....

Zheng Xie: The youth version of old lady Jia He He: .....

---

### **‘Besieged City’ – 17 years old He He and 22 years old Zheng Xie**



He He: I finally understand why you do not want to get married. After reading this book, I also do not want to get married.

Zheng Xie: I now have different thought about marriage. Anyway, when the time is right, and the right person comes along, one need to get married. Nothing wrong with improving lifetime.

He He: ..... How can you not pay attention to the quality of life Zheng Xie:

What kind of rubbish book are you reading?

He He: Assassins

Zheng Xie: Small kid, why are you reading those kind of books?

He He: This is the book that you bought for me Zheng Xie: Impossible

He He: How is it possible that I buy it on my own? Not possible Zheng Xie: In short, I did not buy the book He He: Oh. I remember now. I took the book from your bookshelf.

Zheng Xie: Why are you taking my book for?

He He: The stamp that you gave me, I am afraid of crumpling it. So I put it into the book and took it back to my room. Later, I took the book to read.

Zheng Xie: ..... He He

He He: Ah?

Zheng Xie: Girls always have to get married He He: Ah

### ***THE END of Epilogue 1***

Everyone enjoyed Epilogue | |

## Epilogue 2 – Part 1

*Yesterday we read about the funny moments between Zheng Xie and He He as they were growing up. I must admit that I had truly enjoyed translation Epilogue 1. The way He He interprete the novels that she read was really funny, don't you all agree?*

*What is in Epilogue 2 for us today? We will now discover about Zheng Xie's first love. So enjoy the read.....*

### **Epilogue 2.1 : Cherished “First Love”**

Zheng Xie's first love came very late. Only in his sophomore year that he publicly acknowledged having a real girlfriend.

In view of his good skin, good net worth as well as civil and military qualification that are good, the so-called love came pretty late.

The reason is pretty general. He had been chased by girls from young until he have grown-up. So he was annoyed by them. Hence, he is not tempted at all.

Even Gao Mo Mo herself is very surprised. She felt that the heaven had drop a piece of golden pie for her.

Who is Zheng Xie? He had difficulty to remember the name of beauties. Even rejecting love letters from others. He actually took a fancy to her. It feels like the fairy tale Cinderella from Grimm's stories. This freshman Gao Mo Mo, at a glance had a calm personality, average grade points and came from ordinary family.... Really a surprised to everyone.

Gao Mo Mo attracted Zheng Xie this way....

That year in school, the school welcomed a group of students whom were engaged in basketball. Zheng Xie was honored to be sent by the Student Union to coach the women's basketball team.

Zheng Xie is a good coach. He have very little expression and almost no temper. In the face of the young chattering girls, no matter fat or think, he remain handsome and glamorous while treating them all like cabbage. Later, this cabbage team actually reached the final and won runner-up. Although it is

runner-up, the girls college is rare and unknown. Their achievement broke many expectation.

At the celebration dinner, the girls finally stood up and lined up to respect Zheng Xie. Some even sang song for him.

When it is Gao Mo Mo's turn, the usually shy lanky girl sang 'Close to you.' Her singing is adoringly horrible. But she looked very confident and there were pure enchantment too. A little tipsy, while singing, she said loudly into the microphone: "Brother Zheng Xie, today is my birthday. If I could make a wish, if it does not rain tomorrow, please come with me to the mountains to see the maple leaves."

Everyone whispered and laugh together. They have long planned to tease Zheng Xie today. And this girl caught up in 'Zheng Xie confession.' Even Zheng Xie's buddies whom were present were thinking, 'I am afraid this child will now be included in Zheng Xie's blacklist.'

But Zheng Xie reaction was beyond all expectation. He was silent for a second, and then very calmly spoke up: "The weather forecast this morning said, tomorrow would be a sunny day."

So this was how Gao Mo Mo easily won Zheng Xie's time to accompany her to see the maple leaves alone. And later, she became his girlfriend.

Unsuspecting girls were very flat. How come no such luck that would fall on their head? And those other girls were more jealous. How come it is not them who caught him?

In fact, in the relationship of male and female, there were a saying that human drinks water and, 冷暖自知. In the eyes of others, the radiant Zheng Xie will never be the same as someone else's boyfriend. In the morning with a meal waiting in front for the girl, immediately after school will occupy a seat with the girlfriend.

冷暖自知 (*pin ying: lěng nuǎn zì zhī*) – *know by oneself whether it is cold or warm*

And he rarely smile, rarely speak. He cannot remember any anniversary. He does not fun and places with many people. He does not like to wait in line in any

place and does not like someone standing close to him. He never takes the initiative to hold her hand nor say anything sweet.

But in addition to all these, Zheng Xie is smart, handsome and generous with good temperament with good background.

Although he could not remember any important dates nor her birthday, but often during the non-holiday season, Gao Mo Mo will received a variety of chocolates and expensive doll delivered by Zheng Xie. When she was ill, she will have a large restaurant takeout directly sent to the security room to be delivered to her.

Although he does not like foreign fast food but was willing to accompany her to eat KFC. But he will never line up but handed her the money and let her buy. Although he does not like shopping, he will never go shopping with her but he will be very generous and hand over his bank card for her to go and buy herself. Very occasionally, he even offered to take her to the ice-cream parlor or accompany her to watch a movie.

In short, Gao Mo Mo had always think that he had been perfect. She had been in an unreal state mind, living a day at a time.

||

## Epilogue 2 – Part 2

*So, Gao Mo Mo drop in for a surprise unplanned visit to Zheng Xie. And she discover the existence of Xiao He He. Anything exciting that happen when she was visiting, I wonder?*

*Enjoy the read today.*

### Epilogue 2.2 : Cherished “First Love”

Towards the end of the year during the winter, one morning, without prior appointment, Gao Mo Mo appeared in the city where Zheng Xie stayed. On the way to school going through the city, she suddenly want to get off to look around.

She bought the evening train to return. Then she call Zheng Xie to try her luck.

She was lucky. Zheng Xie did not had to travel far. He was not even surprised. She made an appointment to meet at a place. Not a second late, he had appeared in front of her.

Zheng Xie brought her to the parking lot. He personally drove to pick her up. As a sophomore with a car, she is very surprised.

Zheng Xie open the car door for her. As she just sat down into the car, she heard a soft voice: “Hi, 姐姐”

姐姐 (pin ying : Jiě Jiě) – greetings for Older Sister

In the car, sat a little girl. Pale and slender with delicate features. Looking really small. She is looking back at her. She spoke with her hand pressing to half of her face.

Zheng Xie explained: “This is Xiao He He, my sister. Just half an hour ago, she went to the dentist. The anesthetic had not cleared yet.” The little girl nodded.

Gao Mo Mo said: “Hello. We have the same two names structure ah. How old are you?” She remembers Zheng Xie was an only child but she did not ask further.

He He made a ‘14’ with both hands. But she looks nothing like a junior high

school students.

“Am I bothering with your plans today? I can actually look around myself.” Gao Mo Mo says politely.

“Nothing. The only task today is to look after this child.”

He He covering her half face that is still under anesthetic and mumbled: “I can play by myself. I do not want to be a light bulb.”

Zheng Xie said: “To be honest, you don’t even think about running around today by yourself.”

While Zheng Xie turned sideways to put on the seat belt, He He pulled her ears and stuck out her tongue, making a face at the back of his head. When Zheng Xie turned around, she immediately restored her cute look.

And then the three of them began the long tour for the day.

The first stop is Ocean Park. Gao Mo Mo tried to go along with Zheng Xie in order not to lose sight of him. But Xiao He He looking around like a child, always stays behind.

Zheng Xie always stopped to wait for her. And finally pulled the strap of her bag, just like holding a puppy to get her firmly in sight.

He He this time resisted and said: “I will not wandered off.”

Zheng Xie said: “Recently, there are a trafficking group. Your look is very suitable to being trafficked.”

Gao Mo Mo is very surprised. Because when she went with Zheng Xie, regardless if two person or in a group of people, Zheng Xie always instinctively refused to be close to anyone. If she took the initiative to pull Zheng Xie’s hand, he does not throw her off. But before long, do not know when, she will discover that he had siphoned off his hand.

The second station is to eat. The location is..... KFC. Zheng Xie face is a little speechless.

When he asked Mo Mo, “What do you want to eat?”

Mo Mo said: “Anything. As long as it is convenient.”



He He enthusiastically said: “姐姐, do you like KFC?” with an eager look in her eyes.

Mo Mo carefully consider the situation a little. Although Zheng Xie does not like KFC, but apparently He He loved. So she said: “Well, then we have KFC for lunch.”

He He make the gesture of ‘YEAH’ with her fingers. Zheng Xie then poured cold water on her. “Where to eat has nothing to do with you. Your dentist says that you cannot eat at noon.”

He He said: “The doctor say that I can eat ice-cream at noon and drink iced drinks.”

Zheng Xie frowns at her: “Eating all these cold stuff in winter?”

He He said: “The doctor said, although I cannot eat, I also need to replenish my energy.”

“Then I will send you to get intravenous drip to replenish your energy.”

Gao Mo Mo was surprised. The Zheng Xie that she know, never continuously talk so much. He usually is quiet, not speaking too much.

When He He very generously took away two dollar bills from Zheng Xie’s pocket, she took the initiative and bounce off to queue. Much to Mo Mo’s surprised, Zheng Xie got up and pressed He He’s head. He told her: “Obediently sit down.” Then Zheng Xie actually took the initiative to queue up! This is the first time she saw Zheng Xie queuing! But to He He who obviously did not feel that Zheng Xie lining up to help to buy food is an honorable gesture, also become very picky: “I do not like milk. I want coke.” And continued: “I like chocolate sundae. I do not like the strawberry flavor.”

## Epilogue 2 – Part 3

*Happy Friday everyone! Hope the week had been a good week for everyone. Time flies indeed. I have another 2 weeks left before I end the 1st round of my contract with the current organization. After that I will be taking 1 month of break before returning for the 2nd round of contract with the organization. During my break, I will be travelling, so as much as possible, I will try to keep up to the regular daily post but I really can't promise them.*

*It will be a short one today. I wonder what will happen today. Enjoy the read!*

### **Epilogue 2.3 : Cherished “First Love”**

The third station, to the mall. Zheng Xie waited patiently and review all the doll in the toy area. He He said: “I like the one wearing the yellow color clothes.”

Zheng Xie said: “The pink one is good. Wrap it up...”

He He said: “I like the yellow one.”

The sale staff asked: “Which one do you want in the end?”

Then Zheng Xie said: “Wrap both of them up.” Then he turned around and asked Gao Mo Mo: “Do you have any that you like?”

Gao Mo Mo is not used to this situation.

Passed through the gas station. Zheng Xie got off to refuel. Xiao He He had pro-actively went to sit at the back seat, giving the front seat passenger to Gao Mo Mo.

While waiting, He He had been playing with her new doll while gently humming a song. She sang ‘Close to you’ in a very fluent English.

He He found herself being watched and said frankly: “I am tone deaf. When I was in primary school, my music score had C. Brother taught me this song ten times a day, so that I don't sing it out of tune. Then I was able to cope with the talent show.”

She saw Mo Mo keeping quiet, so pulled out from her pocket a beautifully packaged candy and handed to her: “Sister, do you like chocolate?” The package

of chocolate is very familiar as well as the brand. He He showed Mo Mo the two dolls: “Sister, which one do you prefer? I give you one, okay?”

Gao Mo Mo said: “Your favourite is ice-cream, chocolate and dolls, right?”

He He thought about it and then said: “I also like to watch movies.”

Gao Mo Mo turn the women’s magazines, and read the emotion column that said: most hopeless wait, is not that he will never be as what you wish. But he obviously did it all, is not for you. The article is titled ‘shadow woman’.

Shortly after the start of the new semester, Gao Mo Mo requested for a break up.

Zheng Xie asked quietly: “Are you serious or joking?”

“Seriously.”

“Okay.” Zheng Xie said. He did not ask for any reason nor did he try to retain her.

Many years later, accompanied by her husband while attending a high business meals, Mo Mo met Zheng Xie. She instantly recognized Zheng Xie. But he took a long time before he could remember who she was.

She could then happily showed Zheng Xie her baby pictures. Taking the opportunity, she frankly asked him: “Why did you choose me as a girlfriend then?”

Zheng Xie gave her an answer that is no different from not giving her any answer: “Because at that time, I needed a girlfriend.”

## Epilogue 2 – Part 4

*This is the final part of Epilogue 2.*

*So that was how Zheng Xie ended his ‘first love’. Even back then, the girlfriend realized the importance of He He in his life and that he did everything not because of her but because of He He’s interest and likes.*

*In this post, we will read about He He’s ‘First Love’. This brings to the end of Epilogue 2. Hope that everyone had enjoy this epilogue.*

### **Epilogue 2.4 : Cherished “First Love”**

#### **He He’s ‘First Love’**

He He has always thought that her first love is Cen Shi. But in accordance to Zheng Xie’s psychological definition of ‘first love’, he has always believed that He He’s first love object is a man named Xiao Mo.

Xiao Mo is a very talented young man. He had personally held calligraphy and painting exhibition as a teenager. Often, he leaves a little poem in the local newspaper in small text, so considered as a local minor celebrity. His writings are evil and sharp while his paintings are an alternative. But Xiao He He loved these so much.

When Zheng Xie was heading into his sophomore year that summer, the local television stations organized a month-long comprehensive profile talent competition show. This semi-celebrity actually participated.

Although in he is nothing remarkable in the eyes of Zheng Xie but in He He’s eyes, he is simply a man of God. This is because he is the highest scorer in the painting group, and in the dancing and singing group, he is the highest too. In the calligraphy group, he writes the best and also the most handsome. Moreover, this young man has a melancholy temperament.

He He become a fan of this person to the extend she watched the live broadcast on the TV daily. Once, during the broadcast, there was a sudden power cut. She cried anxiously. Zheng Xie thought that she thoroughly unpromising.

What more unpromising things is yet to come. She had phoned the television stations to protest the unjust judges. She make a total of two calls with the other call with her nose pinched to make it sound different. She even pester Zheng Xie to get her tickets to the live show while holding a handful of flowers for her idol.

Since Zheng Xie went to college, according to his request, He He wrote to him a letter every two weeks. It has to be handwritten and not less than a thousand words.

As he expected, the letter from home, the content is filled with Xiao Mo.

Xiao Mo has a single out. The song is .....

Our family Xiao Mo has launched a new poetry and painting sets. The content inside are.....

Our family Xiao Mo want to direct and act in a movie. The movie is about.....

Our family Xiao Mo.....

He He more and more daring behavior, later directly copy the text from Xiao Mo into the letter.

Zheng Xie finally became intolerable, and reduce her words requirement is reduced to six hundred words while warning her to not mention the name in the letter.

Still later, he began dating with Gao Mo Mo. As to how both of them had the words Mo, it is purely coincidental.

But Xiao Mo did not hit it big. He confidently invest in his own self-directed and acted in a small budget film. He was hit with a severe blow after the defeat, hence disappeared.

He He was sad after a while and then never mentioned this person again.

After many years later, when Zheng Xie went to the inland city for business, he found vicissitudes of a street painter that look very familiar.

He stopped and looked at him for a long time. He said to the people accompanied him: "This is a very talented people. But a little lofty. Mr Zheng, he is said to have come from your hometown."

That time, Zheng Xie brought home a gift for He He. It is a very old poetry and signature collection as well as a small He He sketch figurine. The sketch is a picture of her college graduate who was found from the Internet according to Zheng Xie.

He He asked with a puzzled: “Who is Xiao Mo?”

Zheng Xie: “He is your first object of interest.”

He He: “Do not fool me. How would I do something so shameful?”

No matter how Zheng Xie describe her humiliating moments, He He refused to recognize any of them. But she very seriously kept the figurines on the desk and carefully read the Xiao Mo poetry set. And she felt that those poems are familiar.

Then, after 2012, in the entertainment field, there was a man with a melancholy vicissitudes that quickly become popular. He shot his own film, his own records and wrote his own script. He design his own style and was able to write very well. He could draw very well and was touted by media and the cultural circles.

His youth is emerging a middle masquerade that was depressed. And then the hard work of a famous battle to the legend with a concert and news feeds that was well written.

But artist like Xiao Mo are very low-key. In addition to the work itself, he rarely talked about his private affairs.

Until after a few years later when he was more popular, during a talk show, he said: “I want to thank you a girl called Xiao He He and her brother. During my lowest point of life where I completely lost the power of life, her brother met me on the street. He told me that many years ago, his sister was one of my fans. And he hope that I can continue to create good works. At that moment, I suddenly rediscovered the meaning of life.”

This is the most baffling accidental Zheng Xie’s charity that was completed.

*THE END*

| |

***Note from mhryu***

*With this, the story on Xiao He He and Zheng Xie ends here. After reading Epilogue 3 and 4, I have decided not to translate those for now. Both Epilogue 3 and 4 are side story of an entirely different couple. I might do the translation of those later when I have time on my hand, however, I cannot make any promises at the moment.*

*Using this opportunity, I would like to thank you everyone for taking the time to read my first attempt in C-Novel translation. It had been a wonderful journey of translation although there were many frustrating part in between especially when the couple were going round and round, heading no-where. Thank you for all the wonderful encouragement and comments as well. I had indeed enjoyed the interactions with all of you.*

*Reference to my post @ [Announcement : Tinkerbellsan is going on Hiatus](#), both tinkerbellsan and I have decided to take a break from translations. This is no longer due to the concern that were raised in the post but more to because we both have decided to take a short break for a while. At the same time, I have yet managed to find a novel that would attract my attention to want to do daily post. We will try however (without any promises, to keep the post on the other two translations project that we started [Boss's Blind Date Notes \(Boss相亲笔记\)](#) and [Finding Glowing Beauty in Books \(书中自有颜如玉\)](#) occasionally but not a schedule post. Apologies for the inconvenience caused for those whom are eagerly waiting to read these novels. We promise that we will complete these novels as we certainly do not wish to start something without completing them.*

*I would start travelling in August, hence I will be focusing on my other blog: [mhryupassions.com](http://mhryupassions.com) where I would be sharing my exploration to one of my favorite country in Asia. So for those whom are interested in finding out where I would be travelling, do stay tune! Till we meet again, **Stay Healthy and Happy!** Ending my post with the quote below from my favorite, **Winnie The Pooh...***



"Don't walk behind me;  
I may not lead.  
Don't walk in front of me;  
I may not follow.  
Just walk beside me  
and be my friend."



## Epilogue 3 – Part 1

*Hi everyone. Yes, mhryu is finally on her last working day before taking a long break while exploring the 'world'. Since my handover note is almost done, I decided to take a short break and went back to Epilogue 3 of Caught in my Own Trap (作茧自缚) that I left off after completing the translation on Xiao He He and Zheng Xie. Anyone missing them? I actually misses the daily post that I did and the interesting conversations and comments that I read on those post.*

*After completing Epilogue 2 of [Caught in my Own Trap \(作茧自缚\)](#), I had announced that Epilogue 3 has a different story and is not related to He He and Zheng Xie. So, I left Epilogue 3 and Epilogue 4 and hoping that one day, I could return to it to explore if I would want to continue with the translation and completing them.*

*So this is what I have decided to do.... because I could not decide if I want to continue translating this, so I will let all of you decide if you like this story enough for me to continue translation. I am purely going to leave this to the followers and readers to decide this time round.*

*So, enjoy the read... and if you like me to continue the translation of this short story (aka epilogue 3 & epilogue 4 of Caught in my Own Trap (作茧自缚)) please like the post or share your feedback in the comment field. I will make the decision based on the number of likes and comments received.*

### **Epilogue 3.1 : Special Accidental Episode**

| | Next Chapter

#### ***A sudden one-night stand***

Zhong Lian Chen opened her eyes and discovered that her eyes is looking at an unfamiliar ceiling, high and deep arch curve with the painting of 'Birth of Venus' nude, sea, clouds and surrounded by cherubs.

Where? In Europe?

After that, her heart skipped two beats. She had a second amazing findings. She is totally naked!

This discovery made her heart feels like a space shuttle riding up and down with a somewhat overweight like weightlessness. She sat up. She rotates quickly her handover to recall through her brains how the female lead deal with the male lead.

Then she discover a very frustrating fact. On the nightstand, there is a metal tag, nice light green in color with elegant print: Hyatt Regency Hotel welcomes you!

Zhong Lian Chen shake her groggy head. And this time, she heard from the direction of the bathroom, the sound of rushing water.

She quickly clarify to herself: A-drunk. B – One night stand.

The problem is, at the moment of this state, whatever done is done. In her alcohol-wasted stage, the pain in the head overshadowed the possible discomfort of the body, making it difficult for her to judge.

The second question: Who is in the bathroom?

Zhong Lian Chen's heart is pumping and accelerating hard.

A minute later, she finally remembered. The wisest strategy at the moment is, should get dressed quickly and escape. She shifted her weight but at the same time, the bathroom door open. She look from the dripping on the ground and saw the beautiful shape of the foot and lower leg. Then it moved up to the muscular thighs that are wrapped in the towel. With lean waist and chest..... okay okay, pretty good shape then.... Then her turn to look up to the face on the body.

“What!”

Zhong Lian Chen's morning bell rang with her student singing 'Love China'.

Acquaintances! It turned out to be an acquaintance! She would rather now have a stranger coming out of the bathroom.

Cheng Shao Rong looked at Lian Chen and said sincerely: “Xiao Chen, I will take responsibility for you.”

“Cheng Shao Rong, nothing happen between us. You have made a mistake!” With a high tone, she continued to scream.

Unfortunately, she saw a small scratch on his chest. It would be impossible if nothing had happened.

“I will ask Father whereabouts Uncle Zhong to propose marriage.” Cheng Shao Rong continued to earnestly say.

“Cheng Shao Rong. You are now sleepwalking!” Changed into F tone, she continued to scream.

Unfortunately, his eyes are too clear, so sleepwalking is impossible.

“Xiao Chen, you calm down a little. Last night.....” Cheng Shao Rong said. The sheet had already slipped to the waist, Zhong Lian Chen’s is now totally 70% naked in front of him.

This time she stopped screaming. She directly rolled herself with the sheets over onto the other side of the bed. Her body on the side across the bed sheets, she declared:

“Cheng Shao Rong, this matter is to be kept in this room. If you dare to mention this outside of this place, I will end everything with you!”

Uh, “end” is too ambiguous of a word. Change it.

“If you dare to mention this incident later, I will tell your mother!”

Hey, it is not right. This is a trick that you used to use on me when we were children. Now this trick has no use. Change it!

“If you dare to mention this incident, I will report you to your troops for strong xx!”

Ai, this does not work. In the end who is stronger xx who really cannot say. Continue to change.

“You do not dare to mention a word about this later. If you do, I will break off relation with you and will never meet you again!”

Hu, this is intense enough.

Zhong Lian Chen disregard Cheng Shao Rong, holding her clothes, quickly slipped into the bathroom.

Flushing, she found her back pain. And there were a thin hickeys with a little

bit of blood remaining on her legs.

Ah.... Her precious virginity.

~~~~~

Like the story? If you do, don't forget to like or comment this post. And I shall announce within 48 hours of this post if I would continue with the translation of this short story.

Epilogue 3 – Part 2

*Hi everyone. Sorry, it took me so long to translate this **Epilogue 3 of Caught in my Own Trap** (作茧自缚). I finally realized how tough is it to have 2 running translation projects happening at the same time... hehehe.... As what tinkerbellsan would tell you.... I just love to challenge myself all the time. Bad habit that is hard to get rid of.*

The anticipated day has finally arrived..... I am finally flying off today to start my holiday. So just before I head for my adventure, although this post is very short, I hope that everyone enjoys the read.

Have a wonderful Sunday!

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.2 : Special Accidental Episode

She resisted temptation so many time. Including those blue-eyed, green eyed, blond and brunette good looking guys. She observed this little reference to the thousands of words, even writing papers is not an issue. She studied so many portions of the X-Rated piece of postural aesthetics with unique and profound insights. She had illusion of the scene countless of times on how romantic it would be filled with ecstasy....

But now, even breaking her head, she could not remember anything about her first night.

In the gloomy morning bell, in the bathroom, the major G pitch continued to scream.

One will hold onto the seat.

Zhong Lian Chen had many ideas about her future. But the structure may not include the involvement of family interests. Those boring and shameless marriage or a child sleeping in the cot that resulted her in a marriage.

Of course, it cannot be avoided if the interest of the marriage. If she had to

marry Cheng Shao Chen, she is tolerable.

Well, she was not so hypocritical. She was an honest person. Of course, that feeling is much better than 'tolerance.'

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

But of course this is impossible. Because Cheng Shao Chen never take her presence more important than the laurel tree in the yard of his grandmother.

For instance, he will asked her two years after her junior high is over: "Little love, you have graduated from elementary school."

Or after she had kept short hair style throughout the year, he would say: "Little love. When did you cut your hair?"

Not to mention that when she was fifteen years old, she summon the courage to seriously confess to him: "I love you, Brother Shao Chen."

Cheng Shao Chen whom was intently watching the laurel leaves turned and looked at her: "Uh?"

Her crystal clear glass heart had crashed and broken into many pieces.

Although a few seconds later, her little brother Chen miraculously react that she had just said something. And then his reciprocity and casual answer to her: "Oh, I like you." Then there are some additional conditions: "When you do not give me trouble all the time."

Zhong Lian Chen innocent crush was never officially received in the field.

The only good news is that, everyone else call her "Little Chen". Only Cheng Shao Chen called her "Little Love". What a unique title. Although his intention is to no want their name to be mixed up.

But the sad past did not leave any psychological shadow on her. She happily flirt with variety of guys. Happy to talk about one after another love. But her heart is that the most superb guy must always achieve the following conditions: apathy but not cold. Slender fingers that can play musical instruments. Tall and

think that is good in sport. Sound that is magnetic and cold with dimples when laughing.

Zheng Lian Chen's love is just so boring.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 3

Hi everyone, this is another pre-scheduled post since I have just started my holiday. By the time this post is out, it is my 3rd day of exploration in Busan, South Korea.

Today, we will read about her thought and bits and pieces of who Cheng Shao Rong is. So enjoy the read!

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.3 : Special Accidental Episode

But she is being silly. She never had the fantasy to get together with this little guy, Cheng Shao Rong!

The degree of cousins' genes should be high, but how is it that they are miles apart in their personality.

But why is the fate of such impermanence. She appreciate that Cheng Shao Chen, whom she see a few times throughout the year. And this contradict this Cheng Shao Rong, where he will appear just like the three daily meals in front of her.

This is because both of them grew up away from their parents. He lived with his grandparents while she stay with her maternal grandparents. In the courtyard, they happen to be comrades and also are neighbors.

So when her grandparents needs to be away and worried that nanny is not able to control her, she would often be sent to their home. So when the old couple is not home, without much financial concern, she was sent to the neighbor house. Often she treat her own home just like a hotel.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

If it is not because of this reason, she would never want to be a close acquaintance with this guy, Cheng Shao Rong.

Cheng Shao Rong from his younger childhood days is just like a fine Swiss watch. He acts according to the set of tracks, not a second of bad move. Simply not a slightest error.

His love for the motherland, he is concerned about the collective. He highly respected his teachers and are united with his fella students. In one word, he is simply outstanding! In short, there is not a disadvantage as there are no mistakes. Just a boring guy.

Elementary school, he said: “Zhong Lian Chen, you cannot swear.”

Junior High school, he said: “Zhong Lian Chen, your skirt is too short.”

In high school, he said: “Zhong Lian Chen, girls cannot smoke.”

When in college..... luckily during college years, he was serving in the national service, so he is not around to control.

It is all to blame on him.

Three hours later, Zhong Lian Chen is already sitting on the southernmost tip of the aircraft. She needs to find a blue sky picturesque place to rest for a few days to steady her nerves.

She was spared too hurried, so forget the principle of gender equality. Should have talk less while investigating the charges in the five-star hotel room AA system problems.

But when she went, Cheng Shao Rong’s face is really ugly. If she re-tender the tender spot, she did not know if he would accidentally strangled her.

Her death is a small matter. But the hurt to the country pillar of culture, it would be such a waste.

Zhong Jia Zui respected elders commented to the junior: “Lian Chen, this child is very good-natured.”

We have no misunderstanding on the meaning of the old man. He was never concern about Zhong Lian Chen’s gentle and virtuous character.

The old man subtext: This heartless child. Intuit is not the same as other member of the family.

Zhong Jia Shi is a scholarly brother. A civilian with Confucian mind. He is very attentive and careful with all things except Zhong Lian Chen.

Ms. Zhong's academic performance had in a year suddenly fell to the tenth place. It shocked the class. Only she nonchalantly said: "It's all right. Next time I can rocket my progress."

Ms Zhong learned dance for nine years before she managed to enter quadrennial competition. The day before, she fell and twisted her feet. So she lost the possibility of a huge chance to win. The teacher cried while she gladly said: "Oh hey! Thank goodness it is my foot and not my face. If it is my face, I would be too shameful to see anything."

Her first boyfriend abandon her and left with her best friend. Her friends are very angry. But she look normal: "Fortunately he did not change his heart after I marry him. If that would had happen, my lost would have been big."

Because Ms Zhong had this and other liberal-mind. So by the time the plan landed after over an hour, she had already got out of her frustration and the loss of virginity. With a light heart, she looked out at the clouds outside the windows.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

Although she is not willing to admit it, but the process of less than melt. Cheng Shao Rong is indeed a very handsome guy. He is tall and good looking.

Rolled between the sheet with such a person, there is really no lost.

If it happens that he is a small person, so ha ha ha, but she had gained from it.

But, she is still troubled. She actually did not remember any details of last night.

It's her body. How could she not have the right to know!!!!

Epilogue 3 – Part 4

Poor Lian Chen. As much as she wanted to try to remember, she could not remember anything from her first night.

Enjoy the read today! Weekend is here again! Wishing everyone a great weekend.

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.4 : Special Accidental Episode

But Zhong Lian Chen can remember the incident from earlier.

In order to apply for a job, she had come to that city.

Her long-awaited work, which she had did a lot of preparation.

And now she was completely denied any adequate.

Zhong Lian Chen is not satisfied: "Give me a reason."

Answer: First, Ms Zhong is too beautiful. Second, Ms Zhong net worth is too good.

Fxxk!

As the saying goes, bad. This is really the case.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Then, she met her former boyfriend in an upstart in a hotel, Xiao Ren Dezhi. He disgusted her for a long time. She had severe disorders aesthetics deep inside her.

If she wants to write her own memoirs, this man's existence would be described as one that brought her a lot of pain.

She wandered at night on the bustling road. The sky suddenly without

warning, began to pour rain. She promptly fled to the big hotel underground bar, semi-wet or drenched.

That ambiguous light bar psychedelic music. In order to warm her cold body, she ordered two glasses of spirits and drank them. Then she saw Cheng Shao Rong in the dim light.

Although they have not been too friendly over the past years, but they have also not formally met for many years. After half an hour, their relationship felt very cordial.

Zhong Lian Cheng pat on Cheng Shao Rong's shoulder: "Yah, Rong er, it turns out to be you. A good boy like you also come to this place!"

Cheng Shao Rong dodge her little claws: "Zhong Lian Chen, you are still the same. Like this, how to get your married?"

Zhong Lian Chen hooked his neck and truffle his hair: "Oh, time flies. Our Rong Er has already grown up. I almost could not recognize."

Cheng Shao Rong brushed her hand aside: "Zhong Lian Chen, men and women should keep a distance, do you not understand?"

So they separate themselves away by half a meter and continue drinking. There is no idle chat between them.

"Bachelorette should not come to this place."

"You're able to come to this place. Why I cannot come? Do not bother me. I am in a bad mood."

"I am also in a bad mood. So you don't bother me."

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Things that can put him into a bad mood must be interesting. Zheng Lian Chen love to play her nosy instinct. After an hour, she finally managed to dig out the reason. He just broke up with his girlfriend.

"Jiang Wei?"

“Correct”

“Wow Cheng Shao Rong. She had spent most of her youth years with you. You actually dump her.”

“She dump me.”

A good rejection. Zhong Lian Chen acclaimed in her heart. But with a look of compassion, she said: “Jiang Wei really did not know that you are such a good young man. Holding the flashlight, one also cannot find anything wrong between both of you. Could it be just a misunderstanding? Do you need me to help.....”

“There is no misunderstanding. She claimed that I am too handsome so she don’t feel safe. And she said that my family is too rich, making her depressed.”

Zhong Lian Chen spray the wine out while laughing. “Rong er Rong er, a few years not meeting you, you now have this sense of humor.”

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

As a result, a few minutes later, someone caused trouble in the bar. Gamba kick boxing. Cheng Shao Rong being a gentlemen guarded Zhong Lian Chen. She was holding the bottle of wine while lying on the shoulder of Cheng Shao Rong watching the enjoyable fighting scene: “Cheng Shao Rong, I bet that the little man in black will win.”

“You are thoroughly bored.”

“If he loses, I will drink this bottle of brandy.”

“Zhong Lian Chen, how come your clothes are so wet?”

“Aiya, stupid! Left hook, right hook!”

Cheng Shao Rong drag her towards the door while she glide her foot along the wall: “You are so naïve. How can you be so childish! Go and shower and then change your clothes.”

Well, her pale memories stop here.

Epilogue 3 – Part 5

Another pre-scheduled post for the followers of Caught in my Own Trap (作茧自缚) : Epilogue 3 today. So, yes, mhryu is not leaving all the avid followers and supporter without anything to read while she is enjoying the holiday! The post today may be short but I hope that everyone enjoys it.

Enjoying the read on Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong so far? The imagination of Zhong Lian Chen is going a little wild as she tries her level best to remember the night. Enjoy the short read today!

| | Next Chapter

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.5: Special Accidental Episode

Second – Blow up a little difficult

Zhong Lian Chen under the blue sky and fine white sands waves resort and have a leisure tour around it.

Occasionally out of boredom, she would try again to recall the supposedly counted as one of the hallmarks of her life. The scene from that day!

Although her character is habitually careless, but no matter how much, after all, she did inherited her family point of being careful. She also have good thinking genes. Very occasionally, she will also have the research spirit.

She just grabbed her hair while thinking about that day. Ah thinking about it! She only vaguely remembered her tugging away on Cheng Shao Rong. And then they tugged back and forth. And then..... screen is blank.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

However, according to her understanding of Cheng Shao Rong over so many years, as well as a profound understanding on her own, plus she is said to have a

very good logical reasoning ability, there is no obligation to infer blame. The happening probability distribution are as follows: Cheng Shao Rong rape her: 5% (or less)

They cannot help and lost themselves: 0%

She rape Cheng Shao Rong: 95% (or higher)

This conclusion really shame her.

But, Cheng Shao Rong is a strong and healthy guy whom is also a taekwondo master. While she is a weak current woman. Her sports scores never pass the edge of the struggle..... then how could she be such a genius, could have made him into submission?

She is able to think openly person. But she cannot stand the problem with no solution. She could not think of an answer and that resulted her into headache. So she makes up a few scenes to comfort herself.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Assumption 1:

Rong Er – Come on. Drunk is a solution to unhappiness. Once you are drunk, you will forget everything.

I will have 1 glass and you have 3 glasses. Why? Because you are a man!

Finger guessing game! Who cheat you... you go and find a witness!

Then, her bad mood melt away after being drunk.

She would then have the best of intention to help him take off his clothes. And then she looked at the sleeping half-naked beauty in front of her. So..... (leaving the omitted part to your discretion) **Assumption 2:**

Cheng Shao Rong, let's wrestle!

Okay, okay. I know. Let's do judo!

You need to give way to me. Why? I am a woman!

The very gentlemanly Cheng Shao Rong give in a lot to her. She finally pressed him below her body. Her disgraceful because of this hard-won victory got carried away. Dancing, dancing and dancing. Suddenly dizzy, she fell.....

Cheng Shao Wong, why you press me?

Don't allow me to move? I am bias! I move, I move move move!

Ha ha ha... how red your face is. Cute! Yeah. Let me squeeze. Pinch me, I will squeeze.....

She touch left and right, pinch and finally.....(leaving the omitted part to your discretion) **Assumption 3:**

Hide the face. Too unbearable. The image is too detrimental!

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 6

Hi everyone,

Thank you for taking the time to place your vote or to comment [Mhryu needs your vote](#) when I requested for your time and comment on how all of you prefer my translation to be done moving forward. Appreciate the time and effort.

*As mentioned when I announce the [result](#), based on the feedback received where there is almost a tie between preference between both novels, I will be continue to working and alternating the translation for both **Caught in my Own Trap (作茧自缚) Epilogue & Finding Glowing Beauty in Books (书中自有颜如玉)**.*

So, today Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong is back. To refresh where we stop, you may want to head back and read [Caught in my Own Trap \(作茧自缚\): Epilogue 3, Part 5](#) (I know I had to just to refresh my memory as without realizing, the last post was over 2 weeks ago).

Cheng Shao Rong finally called Zhong Lian Chen.... with a little surprise that Zhong Lian Chen had overlooked. So what is it? Anyone had any guess? Read on and enjoy!

| | Next Chapter

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.6: Special Accidental Episode

Zhong Lian Chen nearly did not get any news on Cheng Shao Rong for nearly a month.

Although she does not want to get his message, but putting that incident aside, whatever the outcome, they are also considered refresher in the foreign land. He should also just check on her, right?

But thinking about it, it would be awkward if they are in contact. So it is better to just forget about the whole incident. Out of sight, out of mind. Cheng Shao Rong must also had the same thought.

In fact, when Cheng Shao Rong was away in the university, they have kept in touch.

He often handwritten letter and sent to her. Really old-fashioned.

The content of the letter are typically boring and serious. Just like writing a work report.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Such as:

“We run ten thousand meters every day with sandbags.”

“Last week, we train up the mountain. And we found a big python.”

“Someone cannot stand the hostel anymore. So he dropped out. Such a pity.”

Although these letters contain only few words, but being bored in her sophomore, his letter has become her most interesting reading materials. Showing her another part of the sky.

Of course, she rarely reply. Occasionally she will write one back. Lesser than his words.

“Ai, pity.”

“Good luck! Good!”

Later, on her third year, the schoolwork gets really busier. In college years, she sheep graze and overspend in blind love. So finally really neglecting their contact. Only when she returns to her grandmother's place and he went back to his grandmother's place, they would meet up and catch up.

Time ah.... From the time... the power of the most powerful thing in the world.

She kept his letters. When she discard waste materials and even love letters that she received from the beginning of junior high school, she only kept his letters.

This is mainly due to Cheng Shao Rong writing is very nice. The words are neat

and elegant with demeanor generis. Back then, she thought, if one day she decided to practice calligraphy, it would be easier to practice according to his words. If according to those books, using his to practice makes more sense because those words in those books are very common, and do not highlight her unique taste.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

As a result, Zhong Lian Chen forgotten about the whole thing. It was placed at the back of her mind until she received his phone call.

Cheng Shao Rong explained that he had not finished his vacation when he received an emergency call to go back to the troops to participate in a closed training. They were only allowed today to contact with the outside world.

Okay. Zhong Lian Chen admitted that she overestimated him. He is still a child that anilities prudish specimen type. No change at all.

They chat for a while. On the other side of the phone, Zhong Lian Chen hearing the sound of the breathing, knew that he was going to get to the subject.

Cheng Shao Rong halt and with little hesitation, finally said it: "Little Chen you.... Your body, all okay?"

"Uh, what does that mean?" Her momentary reaction.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

"I mean..... you have not....."

After a while, Zhong Lian Chen finally understand.

"Cheng Shao Rong, you mean, you did not take any protective measures?" Her forehead started to sweat.

"How would I know that that day I will..... I though afterwards you" In

order not to make things worse: “Not to mention the matter.” She percept.

“I do not have experience! Why did you not remind me?”

“I am also not aware of the problem until a few days before.....”

Zhong Lian Chen back start to sweat. She grabbed the hair and try to recall her menstrual cycle’s dates.

She is done! She cannot remember. She has always not remember her own menstrual cycle.

She did not speak for a long time. In the phone, the little voice had a melting point of anxiety: “Little Chen, if you really have something, I will face it together with you. You do not keep it to yourself. And you make your own decision. If you want to keep it, then we immediately get married. If you do not want it, then you must let me accompany you to the hospital for surgery.”

Zhong Lian Chen cried out: “You better pray that I am okay, Cheng Shao Rong. Otherwise, you are dead!”

Yet another amusing incident.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 7

Oh no..... something that Zhong Lian Chen missed out.... safety precaution that night. And she can't even remember her last menstrual date.... what will happen if they strike 'bull-eyes' that night? What happen next?

Enjoy the read today as we find out more about Cheng Shao Rong..... and Zhong Lian Chen..... not much interaction with Cheng Shao Rong today but we will read more about the concern from his team at work.

||

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.7: Special Accidental Episode

Zhong Lian Chen realized for the first time the feeling of tossing and turning. Even the eve of the college entrance examination, she never felt such nervousness before.

She was holding on to get into domestic universities, therefore did not had to worry about going abroad.

She took a deep breath and started counting sheep. And then finally, she self-learn Scarlett anesthesia: "Cross the bridge when we get there!" When she finally recite for the 100th time, she finally felt asleep. In her dream, she see the doll that she trashed during her childhood climbing out of the rubbish bin. With his dirty face, he called out "Mummy, hug!" So she was awakened. The sky is already bright.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Then again, she found that the supposedly extremely worried issue that cause her ecstatic, in her muddled state of mind and anxiety, finally came. Her poor new bed linen.

Oh yeah! She is saved.

Zhong Lian Chen is so happy and started reflected her words and deed. She recalled the little attitude of Cheng Shao Rong yesterday that was really bad.

Conscience, she is the real victim here. If it is not because of meeting him, and he dead haunt her, nothing would had happen.

Zhong Lian Chen is something with not much principle and not an ideal girl. But Cheng Shao Rong is different. The incident between them would be considered a stain in his life.

Zhong Lian Chen remember that he seems to be having a difficult flight training today. She began to worry that if he is preoccupied, how dangerous it would be.

So she tried calling him to tell him and make him feel at ease. One, two.... Average one hour of calling him with no success.

This time she was really scared. If anything happen to Cheng Shao Rong, then she would be the murderer ah.

Fortunately, Cheng Shao Rong mentioned in the phone yesterday, MUST contact him no matter what happen. He said that since his phone is not easy to call through, he had left her with the phone number for the camp.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

So she hastily dialed the number given.

Who answered the phone is unknown. He do not anxiously asked her questions. Then over the phone, she heard him speaking to through the radio: "Comrades. There is a woman looking for Cheng Shao Rong."

She was embarrassed but at least she knows that Cheng Shao Rong is fine. Just that at the end of the training, he was called to the heads office.

"You are Jiang Wei?"

"No....."

"Don't be shy, sister-in-law. It is not who you are. Shao Rong hide you so tightly, it is only now that we could hear your voice." She do not know this guy

and the nonsense that he is talking about. Nor that she care if he recognize her. He talked for so long, not a chance for her to rebuttal.

The man finally gave her an opportunity to utterance and she said: “Nothing important. Please help me to leave a message to him. Tell him that everything is assured.”

She was about to hang up the line when another person pick up the microphone and said: “Ms Jiang, wait. We want to talk to you about instructor.”

The head hum is getting stronger.

She did not expect that it was a female instructor. Listening to the sound over the phone, sounded like a big sister figure who serious yes loving earnestness said to her: “Little Jiang ah, Shao Rong is a nice guy. You can encounter such guy, it is considered that you are lucky. You better cherish ah.”

“I.....”

“Shao Rong these days have been depressed. When I asked him, only then he told me that you have broken up with him. Since you called, that means that there is an opportunity to turn this around.”

“In fact.....”

“We are all women. So I can understand your feelings. Separated in a distance far away, the opportunity to meet is lesser. And Shao Rong has a temper, and does not know how to coax anyone. He will not say sweet words. But look at the good nature of the man, good character is most important. Shao Rong coming from such family background, but he is not arrogance. As a man, he work conscientiously. He never philander and treat each women with polite and respect. A really good kid.”

“He.....”

“Now is the critical period for Shao Rong. He has an excellent opportunity waiting for him. If he drop off the chain this time, it would be a pity. You must be a good support for him.”

叽哩呱啦, 叽哩呱啦.....

叽哩呱啦 *means jabbering away*

She has been educated by this sister into the world of dizziness. She is afraid to say that she is not Jiang. If the instructor knew that she is the accidental flower that mess up with Shao Rong, she do not know if the instructor will climb over the communication signal line to strangle her.

Ai, why is life so frustrating.

Zhong Lian Chen after the morning of ideological and political education, she began to seriously carry out self-criticism.

She felt that she was being ridiculously too headstrong and too overbearing. If she did not have any temperament, then she would not commit such error.

Although she cannot remember the details, but the Great Wall cannot be built in a day. And Yellow River cannot turn yellow in one day. Certainly because her body have been hidden with depraved factor, so with the right temperature and humidity, then suddenly the ground-breaking germination.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Fortunately, the one she met was Cheng Shao Rong. If she met any bad guy, such as a liar, such as a triad, her tears probably could filled a lake.

To others, there is no problem. She confessed. But this time she had hurt others, harm others' life.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 8

Time really flies. It is already mid-week. And already heading into the second week of September.

Guess this week we will read more about Zheng Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong..... A short one today where we find out more about Cheng Shao Rong's romantic life.

Enjoy the read everyone!

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.8: Special Accidental Episode

Cheng Shao Rong is someone whom is very loving and loyal to love.

His first girlfriend was a girl with congenital heart disease from childhood. He met her in the hospital. For her, he abandon everything, giving her attentive care.

Back then everyone is young, so no one takes them seriously. Later, before the girl graduated from junior high school, she dies from the disease. Then he was seriously ill for a while. Later, he kept her picture with him all the time. And for many years, there have never been any girls beside him.

Uh, perhaps with the exception of her. Before they started dating, they had already the kind of relationship that eliminate the gender differences in purity and comradely friendship. That also includes the bickering defeating friendships words.

Jiang in fact is her high school classmates.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

When they were in high school, she injured her legs. Jiang Wei home is closed

to her home. Every day after school, she goes to her home to give her lessons.

Once in the evening, Cheng Shao Rong met them at the door. He said: "So late, it is unsafe for girls to go alone. I send you."

At that time, Cheng Shao Rong is in third year, and is preparing for the college entrance examination. But he set aside time every night to send Jiang home.

That is how both of them met. Leisurely knowing each other, it is also almost ten years.

Zhong Lian Chen felt that Cheng Shao Rong is not a quitter. He liked Jiang Wei for so many years, he would not casually agree to break up. Sooner or later, he will try to get her back.

But now, she is really puzzled.

Cheng Shao Rong has high morale. He would not just meddle with her. Even now want to marry her without any love-base.

So, now he had already physically betrayed Jiang Wei. He would feel that he is not qualified to go back to Jiang Wei's side.

Alas, she had spoilt the opportunity for this pair of lovers to reunite.

She was really ashamed.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Zhong Lian Chen felt tangled in the profound review of the feeling. It feels like back then when she was younger and was naughty. She took her grandfather's precious goldfish out to play resulting in the death of the fish. Because the fish is dead, so she was ashamed. And this time.....

She was tangled and tangled before gradually falling asleep. Just as she was about to hit into the sleeping state, her Donald Duck ringtone sounds awakened her. It is Cheng Shao Rong.

"You were looking for me?" Cheng Shao Rong's voice sounded a little tired.

“Uh. They thought I was Jiang Wei. I cannot refute. Fearing that it would not be good for you.”

“I understand. Okay. Thank you.”

“How do you know it was me?”

“She does not know this number of mine.”

Well, that of course. Cheng Shao Rong spent very little time at the base training when he and Jiang Wei broke up. She really thought too much.

“That issue. It is alright now. You can rest be assured.”

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

“I heard.”

“So.....” Zhong Lian Chen racked her brain to find the most appropriate vocabulary: “We can now forget about that incident. Take it as it had never happen.”

There is no movement from the other side of the phone.

**© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS
RESERVED.**

Epilogue 3 – Part 9

Sorry, another short post today. But an interesting telephone conversation between Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong. Lian Chen is struggling to make Shao Rong understand her meaning.... Enjoy the read!

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.9: Special Accidental Episode

Zhong Lian Chen is an impatient person. The more the other party kept silence, the more anxious she become. She then said: “Cheng Shao Rong, we have grown up. No longer a child. We can be responsible for our own actions.”

Still there is no sound but she heard the other party gasp. Hey, seems like she did not express herself clear. She added: “I mean, I am now an adult. So I can take responsible for my own action. You do not need to be responsible.”

Cheng Shao Rong gently cough but did not make any sound. But the cough is very muddy. It seems that he is uncomfortable.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

This really puzzled her. If he is standing in front of her, she would definitely go and smack him.

Unfortunately, he is thousands of miles away from her. It seems very fragile and low, so she had to have patience. She put in effort to bring out her motherly emotions: “Cheng Shao Rong, you know, uh. Moral and material contrast. Only substances basic only. The spirit is the most powerful. That is the general reason why we humans are different from animals. Because our spiritual strength are beyond theirs....” Her philosophy class scores are not high. So she is making herself dizzy first.

Here, Cheng Shao Rong finally spoke up: “What exactly are you trying to

express here?”

“I mean. As long as our mind is pure, even..... even in physically..... No, I mean material things. Not so pure, it is excusable. If you fall into the mud, a dip into dirty water, coming out of the bath, you are still you. Nothing has changed.”

Hey, Cheng Shao Rong this guy may not talk much but his understanding has always been superior. He certainly understood what she meant to tell him. Although he derailed physically, but as long as the spirit of derailment.... He is still am highly qualified to return back to Jiang Wei’s side.

As a result, Cheng Shao Rong is even more puzzled with still no movement. Damn. She really want to flatten people.

Zhong Lian Chen thought for a few seconds and quickly come up with new arguments. She felt that if she had to deal with this daily, she can become education experts.

“Cheng Shao Rong, there have been evolution of times. A long time ago, men seeing women’s face is a crime. Have to marry her. Later, touching the hand is considered taking away the virginity. Our country in the ancient time, couples do not even kiss easily. But in the western social culture, kissing is the most basis touch.” She said haltingly for a while before saying: “Kissing is like shaking hand. Shaking hands is like seeing the face. So that men and women, in fact, in the final analysis, kissing and shaking hands is about the same thing. So what happen between us, is similar just different parts only. We really have taken this too seriously. It is so funny.... Ha ha ha ha ha ha...”

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Silence ah silence. The atmosphere is so awkward.

Zhong Lian Chen is so depressed to the extend she wanted to cut the phone line and then pretending that she had drop the phone. As she wanted to do that, Cheng Shao Rong finally said something. The most words he had said today:

“Zhong Lian Chen, are you really a woman?”

Damn. She dug her heart out to try to comfort and enlighten him. And he even laughed and taunt at her. X your mother!

Zhong Lian Chen bitterly cursed in her heart, the curse that she never even dared to say out loud.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Then she thought. Mother Chen is a good mother and aunt. Why she scolded the innocent party? Corrections!

So Zhong Lian Chen curse again in her heart:

Damn. X you this Cheng Shao Rong bastard!

**© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS
RESERVED.**

Epilogue 3 – Part 10

Been a long while since I posted a long chapter. Guess today is just one of those days where I find it hard to stop translating as it is getting exciting. Today, there is no sign of Cheng Shao Rong, only Zhong Lian Chen. However, Cheng Shao Rong is being mentioned over at the end of the chapter.

So enjoy the read!

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.10: Special Accidental Episode

Third, Zhong Lian Chen's house has an unwritten rule. When it is Father's birthday, as busy as one can get, all family must gather to attend the birthday. Unless it is in prison, on the moon or on the battlefield, as far as one is, need to head back to celebrate Father's birthday.

Zhong Lian Chen is a well behaved person. She came back three days in advance. Birthday celebration is over for a week already but she is still around. Her grandfather is very happy to see that she grew up sensible.

In fact, it is because she had not thought of a good place to go next.

Zhong Lian Chen had graduated for a few years already. She had done a few jobs too, none of which have been long.

On both side of her family, in this generation, she is the only girl. So she is well pampered by all party. Never intended to give any big push to her. So she is happily playing to her heart content.

She is not ignorant. Her grades are good and she also work hard. Just that.....

Her first job was as a secretary. Once accompany the clients to the KTV to sing. They had a few drinks. In the corridor, the customers hugged her shoulder and pinch her face. Who would have thought that someone went to tell her cousin brother about it. So the guests and her boss had the misfortune while she was forced to resign.

Her second job is to run for approval. Once the information was not ready resulting in her being scolded. Really unfortunate, a cousin was also at the scene. Later, those who criticize her had to apologize to her in person. Then onwards, every day when she went through the door, countless strange look making her feel like she had been stripped. She resigned.

Her third job is to do sales. In the beginning, there were no result. Three of her cousin heard. They made a few phone calls to help her. So her business volume leaps and bounds and is ten times more than the second in place sales person. Although she was very motivated, although she also hopes to earn more money, but..... she quit.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Her fourth job..... her fifth job.... Forget it. Really unbearable memories.

So from then onwards, she became SOHO owners. Playing everywhere. Thanks to her cousins both maternal and paternal sides. All over the country she was well covered and protected. Should there are any difficulties, just look for these brothers.

Tired, she would write a travel guide and on shopping. And then take a few photos and email to her magazine editor friends. Sometimes, her work would be published. While those royalties are not enough for her extravagance, but always had to prove that she is self-reliant viability (as for those travel, lodging and meals expenses, these are negligible... hahahaha). Even had a brother chasing her asking her to publish a book, claiming that she will be a beautiful writer.

She fled.

That day, she slept in at home and only got up late in the afternoon.

She had stayed up all night the night before playing games. And now it is raining outside, overcasting the day.

Rainy days, it is a waste if do not sleep in.

When she woke up, she was feeling hungry. She got to the kitchen downstairs

looking for something to eat. She heard the door open and while eating, heard the voices. Grandmother, mother and aunty are back from their shopping.

Going out to say hello, she heard her mother mentioned her name: "I think this trip home, Xiao Chen is so much quieter and well behaved. It seems that scouring girls will eventually grow up."

Grandma said: "I don't think she is well behaved. She must have been tired playing outside. So now taking a good rest."

Her grandmother knows her the best! She had just wanted to greet them again when aunty said: "Xiao Chen is just like a tomboy running around. There are many boys around her constantly but there seems no one that is worthy to talk about marriage. She herself is not taking it urgently."

Sigh. It is best that she don't go out and spoiling the mood. Better to just sit quietly here.

Grandma said: "There is no hurry. Xiao Chen is still young. Let her be for another two years. We have protected and pampered her so well, who is willing to let her out and serve other man."

Mother said: "We should first find a boy while talking with her. While we watched, it will drag on for a year or so. Then it would just be the right time to get married."

Grandma said: "That is quite true. So that we do not lose the opportunity for the most suitable person to be taken up. Although there are many man out there, but there are not many that suit our Xiao Chen. Too prestige, afraid that Xiao Chen will have to face difficulty. If the threshold is lower than our home, afraid that she will have to swallow a lot of tough time. If the man at home is not as good as the woman, people will think that we have to force them to meet the eye and in the final analysis feels that we are mistreating them. The best is a good match with a good relations. Even if Xiao Chen makes any mistakes, they would not make things difficult for the sake of the old friends' relationship."

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Mother said: “Based on what you said, then there is really no one already. Those better boys all already have their respective partners.”

Aunt said: “No. There is. The Cheng family, third son. The one that is a financial officer. From childhood, he had been a good boy. Xiao Chen grew up together with him. Their age are almost similar.”

Mother said: “You must be kidding. Xiao Rong have been with his girlfriend for so many years. According to his temperament, marriage between them is inevitable.”

Aunt said: “They have broken up. The news is absolutely accurate. I heard his aunt said. Xiao Rong admitted it himself. He would not make such joke. If he said so, then they must have really broken up.”

Grandmother said: “Then let them get together. Get the aunty to pull string. From young, I have had always liked Xiao Rong but looking at them for so many years, I do not see him with Xiao Chen. Who knows, how there are possibility of sparks between them. As I have shared before, your father and very much early on had share of heart but we went our separate ways. As the saying goes, distance makes the heart fonder. Maybe this time, they will see eye to eye.”

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Aunt said: “I have done the initial work. Please do not worry. I had asked Sister Cheng to help to find out what Xiao Rong thinks. You guess what Xiao Rong says? He agreed giving Sister Cheng a shocked. And you know as the result what? Xiao Rong directly said that he is willing to marry Xiao Chen as his wife.

Grandma said: “I know that my view of this child is not wrong. Particularly from childhood, his taste and vision has always been steady. Very different from other children.”

Seeing how much grandmother is praising him, squatting the corner Zhong Lian Chen is covered with sweat.

RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 11

Zhong Lian Chen is back today! Anyone missed her yet?

Oh no.... her grandmother, mother and aunt is trying to match-make her with Cheng Shao Rong. But she is finding it hard to accept such arrangement. Eavesdropping is indeed not good in this case, right? Hehehehe.....

A short chapter today but an interesting and funny one.... so enjoy the read!

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.11: Special Accidental Episode

Grandma said: Xin Er, you go through the almanac and take a look at the second half of the year and next year. See if there are any good dates.”

Mother finally spoke up: “We got to listen to the view of Xiao Chen right? If she create any havoc, it would be very embarrassing.....”

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

Grandma said: “I have watched your daughter growing up. I know her better than you. That little thing, from a very young age, have no backbone. Playing with her, you have to talk about policy along with caressing her hair. She is very clever. You provoke her a little, she will become anti-bone. One could see her from young, constantly arguing with Xiao Rong but not once really had a big argument with him. They get along pretty good. One is because Xiao Rong constantly without her knowledge, let her have her way. And she certainly did not hate Xiao Rong. This is the basic of feelings. So we just have to say the benefits of Xiao Rong in front of her constantly, as well as the benefits of this marriage just to brainwash her. Within a few days, she will agree for sure.”

So, her image in front of her grandmother is so bad. She cried.

Her grandmother is not part of any direct sales organization and 'brainwashing.' She cried.

Aunty said: "That is right. For Xiao Rong to marry our Xiao Chen the most crucial part is to get Xiao Chen to agree. As for Xiao Rong, we will always have a way to go and convince him. Xiao Rong can be naughty from time to time but he is cardinal and obedient. As long as he does not hate Xiao Chen, all can be arranged."

Mother said: "Xiao Rong does not have any irritating qualification. For him to have a heart with Xiao Chen, it is much unexpected."

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

These three women, completely treated her like an unsaleable goods ah..... really..... alas. Cannot blame the elders.... Unable to curse them in the heart too.... She simply could not bear it, need to vent her frustration on someone. Cheng Shao Rong then....

Cheng Shao Rong, you this prudish pretending to be a cabbage caterpillar big rascal!

After cursing a few times, she felt that her frustration is reduced. She pricked her ears to listen, the old women are gone.

She crawled out from behind the huge kitchen cabinets, moved her numb feet. She scouted around, really no one around. So she rushed back upstairs to call Cheng Shao Rong.

Anyway, she did not expect to be able to convince her mother, grandmother and aunty. They are determined to dump her to him. It is better to find a way out through Cheng Shao Rong.

This time, he actually picked up after a ring. She asked: "Where are you?"

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the

permission of the translator.

Cheng Shao Rong mentioned a place name.

“Can you come out to meet up?”

He said that if they make agreement ahead of time, coming out for one hour is not a problem. I have a little favor to ask from you. (Of course, it is a small one, as it is only one sentence).

–Not urgent. We talk about it when we meet. (This dead puzzle, in case he does not talk on the phone, she would want to pinch his neck and kick him.)

–Not trouble at all. Anyway, I was planning to go over there to play. (Yeah, she finally came up with her next destination)

So Zhong Lian Chen secretly called the airline on the phone to book her flight. She surreptitiously began to pack her bag.

The place is known for unscrupulous trafficking decent and young beautiful women. So she does not plan to stay for long.

Zhong Lian Chen had planned very carefully.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 12

Its already Saturday and half of September is gone! Where has time flown by?

Anyone watched Decendant of The Sun, a popular korean drama that was a super hit some time back? Who could resist good looking men in uniform, right? Just like 'big boss'.... :)

The day finally arrived for Zhong Lian Chen to meet Cheng Shao Rong face to face. Did she successfully convinced him to change his mind of wanting to marry her? Or Cheng Shao Rong is adamant about marrying her....

From this chapter, I sense that Cheng Shao Rong did not want to marry Zhong Lian Chen because of 'responsibility'.... but more because he truly loved her for many years. His ex-girlfriend, Jiang Wei could only be a replacement for Zhong Lian Chen whom he had failed to capture her heart....

Exciting read ahead today, so do enjoy the read. This OTP will be around for another few more post (I guess) before Lan Ning and Yan Ru Yu returns.....

| | Next Chapter

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.12: Special Accidental Episode

Zhong Lian Chen had planned very carefully.

After getting off the plane, she went to the hotel to take a shower and something to eat. And then she drove to the cantonment sites where Cheng Shao Rong is at. Based on her experience, the surrounding of the base is where the beautiful scenery are. Finally, recharged and full of energy, she is comfortable enough to sit down and discuss serious matter with Cheng Shao Rong that are related to both of their future happiness.

Her goal is to make Cheng Shao Rong understand that marrying her is a very unwise decision. Not only sorry for him, but for their parents have whom supported them. Most importantly, sorry to the party and people, sorry for the

harmonious society. She must do the work and persuade him to put down the burden and scraping the whole idea.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

As a result, her plane was delayed for half an hour. When she got off the plane and took the car over, she was still twenty minutes late.

They originally agreed to meet up in the café near his camp. Then when Cheng Shao Rong heard that she had not eaten, change the place to a rotisserie. When she was depressed looking for the place, when she arrived, Cheng Shao Rong was sitting and waiting for her. When he saw her, she immediately got up, dressed in the military uniform, he stood straight and gave her a salute.

Zhong Lian Chen cursed him under her breath.

This is really awesome.

She had always been in a good control. Sure enough, as people said, anyone looks hot dressed in the uniform. When Cheng Shao Rong is not dressed in uniform he is generally handsome. But now putting him in the uniform.... That was awesome! This is her first time seeing him in his uniform.

Zhong Lian Chen is so taken aback that she forgot the purpose of her trip.

Fortunately, Cheng Shao Rong did not forget. He said: "This is the only shop around here that is more formal. I cannot go far. I have only forty minutes. You eat first....." slightly apologetically.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Wow! He thought that she is the kind that must eat in star restaurant? When she eat out alone, she will also eat roadside stalls, ok? She has no such superficial thing. Oh yes, fill up her stomach first before anything else.

The waiter served the food. At noon, many people are there for a meal, so the service is too slow. She is hungry and took big mouthful of meat. After eating everything on her tray, the next course is still not sent.

She felt slightly embarrassed when she saw Cheng Shao Rong's place still filled with meat. As a lady, she should not be like a vice-like gluttonous. Such a shame. Fortunately, she is not here to meet anyone else. She had after all done more embarrassing things in front of Cheng Shao Rong in the past.

Zhong Lian Chen looked around to hide her hungry look. Cheng Shao Rong quietly pushed his plate in front of her: "I have not touched these. You eat." And then he got up to help her take other dishes.

Hey, she had forgotten. This restaurant not only served barbecue meat, but many other buffet dishes as well.

This South American style rotisserie is stationed very close to the barrack. So there are many uniforms brothers and beautiful sisters. It seems that the soldier brothers also have very good leisure life. Her mind quickly turned to the large tracts of American soldiers' barracks in Aventura stories.

He is back from taking the food. Really touched. She actually remembers what she likes. He took all her favorite food. And he even carefully help her singled out the coriander and ginger. These are the stuff that she don't eat from childhood.

Zhong Lian Chen gets emotional easily. She got unthinking emotional and said: "Cheng Shao Rong, in the future, whoever marry you is very fortunate."

"Huh?"

Hey, hell. How could she forgot about the main purpose she is here? Time to get down to business.

Zhong Lian Chen wipe her mouth with the napkin. She then recover into a lady-like posture.

"Cheng Shao Rong, in this world, the most stupid thing is to fix a mistake with another mistake. This is called fixing the wrong with another wrong. Certainly not a negative to make a positive."

Cheng Shao Rong looked at her quietly, did not speak.

“强扭的瓜不甜, together, we will not be happy.”

强扭的瓜不甜 (*pin ying: qiǎng niǔ de guā bù tián*) – means Nothing forcibly done is going to be agreeable

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Cheng Shao Rong still kept quiet.

Zhong Lian Chen:

Cheng Shao Rong:

Zhong Lian Chen: (babbling away).....

Cheng Shao Rong:

Zhong Lian Chen: wu wu wa wa.....

Cheng Shao Rong:

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Zhong Lian Chen exhausted her patience: “Are you listening to me?”

Cheng Shao Rong: “I heard every single words.”

Zhong Lian Chen: “I am telling you. I do not want to marry you!”

Cheng Shao Rong: “Xiao Chen, do you have someone in your heart?”

Kao... insulting her. Since she was fifteen years old, she had set a grand ambition. She wants to be independent-minded modern woman, facing this life. In this life facing the handsome men, it is never right.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 13

How was everyone's weekend? I hope that those celebrating Mid-Autumn Festival that was last Thursday which is the same as Chuseok (Korean Thanksgiving) had a blessed and fun time with the loved ones.

As promised, Zhong Lian Chen and Sheng Shao Rong is back again today! So, did Lian Chen managed to convince Shao Rong again their marriage? Or Cheng Shao Rong managed to convince Zhong Lian Chen otherwise? A very interesting short chapter today as we read about the interesting conversation between them.

Caught in my Own Trap is proving to be harder to put away for now, so I guess I will continue with another few days of this novel before Lan Ning and Yang Ru Yu returns. So for those anticipating / waiting for Lan Ning and Yang Ru Yu aka Teacher Xing Xin, hang on there ok? I promise they will return within the week.

||

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.13: Special Accidental Episode

Cheng Shao Rong said: "You do not have any crush in your heart and I do not have a girlfriend. Why do not we try together?"

"There is no love between us, what is there to get married for?"

"In a marriage, affection is needed the most, not love."

"Because of this round of heartbreak, you wanted to give up. As I said, with a small touch of finger, there will be a whole list of beauty coming to you. Life is very bright and the future would be better. There is no reason for you to be depressed."

"Xiao Chen, to understand a person, it takes a very long time. And we are no longer young. We know each other almost from birth. We understand each other more than others. There are excellent family foundation between us. Don't you think so?"

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Now she understand. In short, because he is tired, he is too lazy to find another woman to start from scratch again. So she is the best option and he is willing to accept that.

See his big headed person!

.....

.....

.....

“Cheng Shao Rong, I will not marry you.” Zhong Lian Chen emphasized it for the xxx times. It is just so tiring speaking to these type of people.

“.....”

.....

.....

“Not getting married! I am not getting married!” She stressed for the last time!

Cheng Shao Rong used his watery eyes and stared at her seriously. (Why? What are you looking at?)

- The time I have at home is very little. Your life will not change. (This is true)
- After you marry me, your family would not keep such a tight hold on you. I can be your shield. You will be free than before. (This makes sense)
- You know my family very well. Especially my mum who likes you a lot. So you do not have to worry about in-law relationship. (Yes, ah. This is an important issue. Mother Cheng is an excellent lady.)
- You have always like to pester my 2nd brother.... If you marry me, in his sense you are a family member. You can do whatever you want with him.

(Shameless temptation. Went as far as selling his loved one. But why is she slowly being influenced by him?)

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

- When I retire in a few years' time, I can accompany you every day and fly up high. (Cheng Shao Rong, you are too treacherous bird, starting in the rarity of other peoples' weaknesses.)

.....

Time is up for Cheng Shao Rong. He watched her get into a taxi and wave her goodbye.

Zhong Lian Chen before leaving suddenly remembered a very important thing. It is so important that she cannot remember it!

Haiz, unspeakable.

She waited for the taxi to drive about ten meters away. Seeing him turning to walk away through the rearview mirror, she pulled out her cell phone and call him: "Hey, so what is the conclusion of our conversation today in the end?"

Cheng Shao Rong was a little surprised and said: "You said as per what my plans are. Now you have another idea?"

"No." Zhong Lian Chen gave a hollow laugh or two. "No."

After an hour later, Zhong Lian Chen becomes depressed while clutching her hair.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

She have been conned by the devil. She came here to persuade him to give up the thought of marriage. Why the result turns out differently and she was

convinced by him?

And she was convinced without her realizing it. She tried to once again remember the key details but failed.

This guy indeed had magic!

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 14

A super short chapter today as I really don't have much time to spare on translation as much as I am eager to find out more about Cheng Shao Rong and Zhong Lian Chen. Yes, I am reading, translating and posting this novel all together.... So if the chapter is short literally means that I have only managed to read that much today too....

So Cheng Shao Rong managed to convince Zhong Lian Chen that marriage is good for both of them. Why I still feel that Cheng Shao Rong is insisting on the marriage because he truly loves Zhong Lian Chen and does not want to lose her. So he is hoping to marriage her first and then get her to fall in love with him later.....

What happen next? Read on and find out Enjoy the read! And have a blessed remaining of the week ahead!

| | Next Chapter

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.14: Special Accidental Episode

In her chaos state of mind, he took advantage and disrupting her mind!

It must be so!

Zhong Lian Chen grandmother always said, it is a year of fate but lots of evildoers. So gave her a lot of red possessions. Red shoes, red belt. Red skirt with red coat. And a very valuable red coral necklace with a ruby bracelet.

As a modernized individual, Zhong Lian Chen does not believe in this belief. Only when she is meeting grandma, she wore the red thread on her wrist.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

As the saying goes, do not listen to the old words, one will end up suffering.

So, in the year, she hit bad luck one after another. First, somehow she lost her virginity. And then even losing her freedom.

Zhong Lian Chen is one that would never cry over spilled milk. The main reason is because she hates milk. So when the milk is spilled, she is very happy. People say she grew up as a happy child. She will see the positive of every side.

So she was depressed for a few minutes and then start to analyst the benefits of this marriage.

Cheng Shao Rong said some very reasonable points. She married him would be an advantage for her.

Besides.....

Additional benefits of marrying Cheng Shao Rong – 1:

From her younger days, she have seen many outrageous marriage. Including her brothers. There are friendship, no passion, marriage first then dating... like a pile of joint project.

In the beginning, her small mind cannot accept these, so she once dreamed that she is a pig and her family led her to the market for auction.

Taking into consideration that she had known Cheng Shao Rong almost her whole life, although there are not love, there are always friendship. Unlike her sisters-in-law.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Additional benefits of marrying Cheng Shao Rong – 2:

Although she also drool when seeing a good looking guy, she did not naively hope that her future husband is a handsome one. The ideal and reality is two different thing that she is able to distinguish.

While the process of finding a genuine good looking guy is minimal, she is really lucky. Although good looking cannot be eaten, but definitely better than watching an ugly looking guy eating dinner, right? Appetite would not be so

good...

Additional benefits of marrying Cheng Shao Rong – 3:

This marriage makes the whole family very happy. From grandparents, to aunties and uncles to mum and dad.... Although they probably are not because she is going to get married, but because Xiao San (3rd Son) of the Cheng family will be a member of their family. She realized it too. She had never brought into this house any honors, nor make any contribution to the family business after growing up. This time, borrowing the lights of Cheng Shao Rong, she is able to bring some sense of proudness into the family.

Zhong Lian Chen is a very responsible person.

Now that she had figured out the benefits of marrying Cheng Shao Rong, she no longer feels tangled. But now happily waiting to be the bride.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 15

Time really flies.... It is already Thursday, almost the end of another week.....

Now that Zhong Lian Chen accepted the wedding and fact that she is marrying Cheng Shao Rong, life is back to normal for both of them.... So today's post is just about what Zhong Lian Chen is doing. At the end of the chapter, her action was indeed a little surprised to me. Having said that, am also happy to see how she progress and reading about her feelings.....

Enjoy the read today and have a wonderful day ahead. Without realizing, it is almost the end of the week.... Lan Ning and Yan Ru Yu aka Teacher Xing Xin has not made any appearance.... Sorry for those whom were anticipating the next chapter on them. I will try to bring them back this weekend.... Thank you so much for your understanding....

||

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.15: Special Accidental Episode

She was indeed very responsible. So when she is drooling at good looking guys on television or magazines, her heart felt sorry.

But then thinking about it again, she is just using her eyes to appreciate the handsome looks of the guys. However, she will often able to identify deficiencies in the guys. And then she found Cheng Shao Rong more handsome than those guys.

So with very clear conscience, she continue to flirt with the various type of guys.

Not long after, her grandfather were hospitalized for a minor operation and then went home to rest.

At home, everyone else were very busy with their career. She is the only one that is free, so naturally she stayed at home to look after her grandfather.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

At the home of her maternal grandparents, her movement were restrained.

Grandma, as she gets older, she is more difficult. She drag her every day and gave her the latest fashion magazine.

How's do you want your wedding dress to be? 'Wai Ya Wang' is not too bad? Chinese people must support the Chinese people.

This set of jewelry looks good on Xiao Chen. Better than the model wearing this.

Xiao Chen, come and look at this shop. There are more suitable recommendation for honeymoon ah.

Grandfather has another style:

Xiao Chen, come and write a few words for me.

As the saying goes, to see people to see the words, your word cannot tell you the person's appearance or Mom inherent right.

Take these words and write them every day ten to twenty times. And within a month, your words will go a long way.

Zhong Lian Chen respectfully took the word and paste great big words: “女训”

女训 (pin ying: Nǚ xùn) – Female Training

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Feeling the pressure, she went over to Cheng Shao Rong's grandmother's house. The two elderly had moved, so no longer their neighbor. However, they are still very close, within the community.

Grandmother Cheng loves her dearly since young. Seeing her now brings a grin and she went to cook for her. She do not have servants to help. She said as she is

cooking: “I remember you and Cheng Shao Rong love these dishes that I cook the most.”

Zhong Lian Chen immediately understand the meaning of the elderly. Conscientiously followed the elderly to learn how to cook those dishes. A few days later, she was finally able to make the dishes well in the taste but not the presentation. But still got Grandma’s praise: “As long as the taste is good, the presentation is not important”

Grandmother Cheng like to recollect events. Often Zhong Lian Chen will hear from her the recollection of Cheng Shao Rong’s childhood memories.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Example 1:

Xiao Rong when he is four or five years old, someone gave him a box of chocolates and asking him to share with his brother and sister. There is a total of only 15 pieces of chocolate. He gave Xiao Qing 4 pieces, Xiao Chen 4 pieces, Mandy 4 pieces and only had 3 balance for himself.....

Example 2:

When he was six or seven years old, while playing, a naughty child fell into the small pool. Cheng Shao Rong immediately found the valve and release the water.....

Zhong Lian Chen remember Grandmother Cheng was in the education work. Yes, pre-school education.

Zhong Lian Chen stayed at home but often accompanied the two elderly people to go to the park to participate in activities. Seeing Grandfather playing the chess, accompany grandmothers dancing, playing gyro with the children and with the puppies scaring the sparrows.

She lived a very healthy and boring life day after day. As she started to feel bored, Cheng Shao Rong is on leave and is coming home. She was so excited, she drove the car to go and pick him up. When she saw him, she gave him a huge hug

very enthusiastically, knocking him back a few steps: “Cheng Shao Rong, I missed you!”

Cheng Shao Rong’s last leave was recalled. So this time can continue to take his leave.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 16

Its Fly-Day! The weekend is finally here! Hope everyone had a wonderful and fruitful week. I know I had although it was tough and tiring.....

Cheng Shao Rong is back for a short vacation.... and the OTP is finally spending time together as a couple. How smooth would that be? Let's read and find out.....

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.16: Special Accidental Episode

Thinking about it. He is really in bad luck. Finally able to take leave and come home. Not half way through, lost the nearly a decade relationship and then had to accept the 20 over years friendship, her. However, this also cannot blame the society. Just blame the not so good fate.

Zhong Lian Chen was thinking about this as she was cooking in Cheng Shao Rong's house.

As a result, she missed the process thought by Grandmother Cheng. The dish she was cooking, got burned.

She did not give up and continue to prepare the second dish. This time she dropped the whole pot.

Cheng Shao Rong comforted her: "It does not matter. Later we will hire a maid. And I can cook."

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

They went out to eat. After the meal, they thought they should communicate more to move their feelings up. So they went to the nostalgic childhood play area.

But the city changed so much, they almost got lost. They finally arrived at their common primary school.

Cheng Shao Rong looked up at the huge ginkgo tree. Zhong Lian Chen bent over to pick up a piece of small fan-shaped leaves from the ground. The original tree was in the middle of the playground, now moved to the edge of the playground. Zhong Lian Chen bent over for too long, and feeling faint. When she was helped by Cheng Shao Rong up, they saw the former teacher, now the headmaster.

The new headmaster actually recognized the two of them and cheerfully said: “Come together to view the alma mater. As a child both of you often come to play hand in hand. After so many years, still coming together. This is indeed a rare classmate friendship.”

They looked at each other.

Headmaster puzzled and said: “Hei, you both did not come together. So happen to encounter each other?”

Later at the school gate, up the very steep road, they saw an old man pushing a tricycle struggling uphill. Together they went to pushed and help. After that, the old man gratefully thanked them. He said: “You two looked alike ah. Laugh also alike. Brother and sisters?”

They looked at each other again.

The puzzled old man asked: “Not brother and sister? Then sister and brother?”

Fourth, Cheng Shao Rong only had three days holiday. Two days were planned to accompany his grandmother and hers.

The first day as a couple does not seem to go well. But it does not matter. Zhong Lian Chen’s grandmother once said, perseverance is one of Zhong Lian Chen’s few advantages.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

The next day is the weekend. She pulled Cheng Shao Rong early in the morning to go for a drive. Then she pulled him to the amusement park and got him to line up to play pirate ship, carousel, Space Shuttle, Bumper Car and many more childish games.

In the beginning, Cheng Shao Rong is very co-operative and obedient. Zhong Lian Chen rewarded him with a lollipop, a little rabbit holding a carrot. Her mouth also contain one.

But men does not have magical power. There are always limit to one's patience. Not long after, he refused to accommodate.

Cheng Shao Rong refused to eat the rabbit lollipop: "It feels like swallowing a life rabbit in the mouth. Very cruel."

Zhong Lian Chen: "You think you are a monk? Do you want me to give you a ginseng sweet?"

Cheng Shao Rong refuse to play kart: "A bunch of broken iron. What is more interesting about it?"

Zhong Lian Chen: "When you drive a sport car on the road, you are confident that you would not hit anything?"

Cheng Shao Rong refused to play the roller coaster: "Too high, too fast. I am afraid."

Well..... Zhong Lian Chen did not want to put him into a difficult situation.

Ten seconds later, she realized that she had been fooled. She rushed to Chong Shao Rong side and shook his shoulders.

"Cheng Shao Rong! You as a good pilot, you dare to say that you are afraid of high speed? You you you!!! You think I have a negative IQ ah!"

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Cheng Shao Rong eventually did not escape his fate.

Feeling extremely wronged, he said after he got down: "This is not the same as

flying an airplane. I fly my own airplane, the result is by myself and others and I am able to grasp the operation, managing it. I do not trust the safety index of recreational facilities.....”

Zhong Lian Chen thought that, he as a soldier, the fear of death is actually showing emotion on the playground. Bringing shame to the people in the army. She dragged him to line up the second time to play roller coaster, in order to train his bravery.

As a result, they are like two child tugging back and forth in a tug of war. Zhong Lian Chen laboriously dragged him two steps forward and then he would take a step back. After a while, she is too tired and was sweating.

Suddenly, Cheng Shao Rong suddenly gently trembled a little. His awkward hands were loose. Zhong Lian Chen had the opportunity to go forward and dragged him several meters. She turned to look at him with a puzzle: “Why?”

“Nothing. We go line up.” Cheng Shao Rong homeopathic pulled her forward.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Zhong Lian Chen subconsciously turn around and looked at the direction where Cheng Shao Rong was looking. Not far away, three young woman was organizing a group of different skin color and hair color children in front of the fairy cave line. The beautiful woman in the milky white shirt wearing a light blue trousers looks a little familiar.

Perhaps not just ‘a little’ only, but very familiar.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Oh no..... who do you think they saw? Stay tune..... they will be back soon!

Epilogue 3 – Part 17

A happy Saturday! Hope everyone had a great week last week..... It is a long weekend for me this week thanks to Public Holiday that falls on Monday! Hooray! Am so going to catch up on my dramas and some translation for all of you whom have been waiting patiently.

Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong is back again today after taking almost a week break. Cliff-hanging ending to last chapter? Who did they saw? Hmmm..... Is this the interruption to their slow relationship towards marriage now? What is going to happen? Jealousy sparkles?

With this chapter, we actually reached the half-way mark through the long Epilogue 3..... Hope that everyone is enjoying this short story so far.

Enjoy the read today and have a fantastic weekend ahead!

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.17: Special Accidental Episode

Her classmates for years, in relationship, have been a very good friend.

Cheng Shao Rong's ex-girlfriend.

Jiang Wei.

In the evening, when Zhong Lian Chen recall the incident in the day, facing Jiang Wei face to face, there is only one feeling to explain her mood.... 'guilty'

If one wants to use four words to literate the point, then it is 'put into the spot'. Of course, the one being caught is her and Cheng Mou Mou.

When she saw Jiang Wei, she was dragged away by Cheng Shao Rong. She pulled away her hand and said to him: "I will go over and say hello." And then she walked straight to Jiang Wei.

As the two of them were chatting politely, Jiang Wei looked behind Zhong Lian Chen and said softly: "Shao Rong, long time no see."

Zhong Lian Chen is so stiff, she dare not turn her back to look behind. Not long after, she heard Cheng Shao Rong said: “How have you been lately?”

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

“Not too good but also not too bad.” Jiang Wei said with a gentle smile.

The other two teachers said: “Teacher Jiang, you chat with your friends first. Wait for us at the exit.”

Jiang Wei reply: “Wait for me. I will be right over.”

Zhong Lian Chen abruptly said: “The weather is hot. I will go and buy cold drinks. The two of you, who wants?” Seeing that there is no responds, she said: “I will go now. I will be back.”

As she was stepping away not far, Cheng Shao Rong said: “Which stall are you going? Don’t get lost.”

Zhong Lian Chen casually glanced at the amusement park map and said: “I am heading to ‘Hummingbird’.”

“Okay. I will come over to find you.”

Zhong Lian Chen search for the snack bar according to the map. As she walked past the door, there was a burst of cold wind blowing. The cold air caused her to shiver.

Yes, the weather forecast said that today is going to be a cold day. Just now how come she was feeling hot? Oh right, being a high-power light bulb to illuminate others, you will first warm yourself.

She ordered the biggest box of ice-cream and ate until her body temperature drop several degrees. And then she ordered a big string of kebab, ate till her mouth are filled with oil. What she is most proud of is her strong stomach. It will never hurt and no matter what she eats, she will never get fat.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from*

tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Twenty minutes later, Cheng Shao Rong is no-where in sight. She returned to the fairy cave entrance but did not even see his shadow.

Zhong Lian Chen felt that she had slightly overeaten. She thinks that continue playing may end up with her vomiting. So look for a place to sit down, and to call Cheng Shao Rong. When she touched her pockets only she remembered, she did not bring her bag today. Only the phone and some notes stuffed in jeans pocket. Just before, she was feeling uncomfortable while playing roller coaster with the phone in the pocket, hence stuffed the phone into the pocket of Cheng Shao Rong.

Really! She ran to the door to see if Cheng Shao Rong is waiting for her outside. The car is still parked in the same place. Sure enough, he did not leave without her. But she had exited the amusement park, so could not get in except to buy a new ticket.

Poor Zhong Lian Cheng. She did not bring much money today as Cheng Shao Rong was paying for everything. Just now at the snack bar, she squandered too much away. Now the money in her pocket is only enough to take a taxi home.

She wanted to find a public phone to call Cheng Shao Rong but then suddenly remembered that she is a digital idiot. She cannot even remember her own phone number, not to mention Cheng Shao Rong's number. Every time she just have to take out the phone number from the phonebook and dial from her phone. Now, not only she does not have any coins to make the call, the telephone are all inside the amusement part and none outside.

Point back ah point back! Cannot blame the society.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

In fact, there are still other method. Use the amusement park management office to help with a broadcast. But also cannot afford to lose that face ah. Not to mention that Jiang Wei is still inside, she could hear it.

Forget it. Let the old couple catch up more. She can be sensible.

Zhong Lian Chen borrowed from the management office pen and paper. She wrote a few words and slid it under the car windshield. And then she topped a taxi and went home.

After returning home, Zhong Lian Cheng only said that Chong Shao Rong met with an old classmates to reminisce. Then quickly slipped back into her room before grandmother ask more. Her skill is much worse than her grandmother, so she will certainly be able to sense that she is hiding a secret.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 18

[Image Credit](#)

Happy Sunday to everyone! A late post today as I was totally crashed out yesterday and this morning. Never realized how exhausted I was.... Now feeling so much more refreshed.

So, Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong is back again today although there were not very much of Cheng Shao Rong.

Interesting chapter today especially towards the end. Yes, I know how excited some of you would get wanting more after reading this. I promise that they will be back tomorrow.... So hang on there and enjoy the read!

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.18: Special Accidental Episode

About the case of 'losing each other', a long time after, when Ms Zhong has already become the wife, they noisily argued till there were no new topic of argument, the old incident was brought up.

"You are a bastard. You rarely accompany me out to play, and even lost me!"

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

"You are a fool. Even the name of the place is wrong, how you expect me to find you?"

"Pictograms only. Using the toes only also can find it. You simply do not want to play with me, deliberately do not find me!"

"Peninsula 'snack bar' and 'bird' snack bar? You even have the nerve to mention about it. No wonder, I turn around the whole area to look for 'hummingbird' also is unable to find it."

“You have no imagination, you big wood!”

“You are illiterate! Kindergarten children can even read the word that you do not know!”

Every quarrel will lead back to the incident on this day!

Full of spirit of love, Zhong Lian Chen, pulled some books out of the bookshelves to read.

A few days ago, grandmother looked at her bookshelf with a frown. She suggested her to read more books on cultivation and to mold her temperament practice. Zhong Lian Chen looked at the pile of books that her grandmother found for her and wanted to vomit blood. She finally went to grandmother Cheng’s house and took a few books from Cheng Shao Rong’s shelves.

As long as it is brought from Cheng Shao Rong, even if it has romantic words on the book, grandmother would not say anything.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

As she was reading the book, a bookmark of a simple hard white cardboard fell out. It is a one-sided bookmark with blue ballpoint pen strokes delicate line drawing. It is a very delicate lady figure in the Republican era of a female student. The hair is comb into two braids while wearing a simple biased breasted shirt and pleated skirt with a messenger bag and plain shoes that is lifelike.

The foot of the paper had his signature: ‘Shao Rong’ with the date that was many years ago. Never know that he had this skill. This guy is really amazing.

Zhong Lian Chen secretly burst her belly from laughing. She stood in front of the mirror and comb her hair following the hairstyle. She looked around the drawers for two rubber bands to tie the hair.

Very nice. She had never tried such a simple style.

Then she went to grandmother’s room to look for clothes. Grandmother like Chinese traditional clothing. There are many and grandmother is not fat.

Zhong Lian Chen looked at herself in the mirror admiring her 'new' look. She even drag her mother to help her to take a photo. Grandmother Cheng phoned to inform that Cheng Shao Rong is back. He had drank a little too much and is asking if she have time to come and see him.

Zhong Lian Chen just left for his place dressed how she was. Grandmother Cheng smiled looking at the way she is dressed. She even recommended that she dressed like that for the wedding photo. Together with Cheng Shao Rong pretend to be old-fashioned student. She would like to have the framed photo of them like that in the bedroom to see every day.

Cheng Shao Rong was drunk and was fast asleep.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Grandmother Cheng said: "Among the children at home, only Xiao Rong is the most real, so he hardly drink. Last time, Xiao Chen claimed to want to do some experiment, hence got him drunk."

Zhong Lian Chen asked: "He is a bad drinker?"

Grandmother Cheng said: "Comparing with others, he is okay. But comparing along the Cheng children, Xiao Rong is considered the worst among them. Even Xiao Min can drink better."

Zhong Lian Cheng imagined them drinking together while Cheng Shao Rong sitting at the site biting the situation. She started laughing.

Grandmother Cheng said: "Xiao Rong is very honest. You see, Xiao Chen has the highest alcohol level of tolerance. The family have not seem him drunk too. He rarely drink to that level. But the last Lunar New Year, maybe because he is in a bad mood, he had a drinking match with Xiao Rong. As a result, Xiao Chen is still okay while Xiao Rong was totally knocked out. He slept for a full day and night."

Such a poor level of alcohol tolerance and still want to have a drinking match with anyone. He deserve it!

Zhong Lian Chen obediently went to Xiao Rong's room to take care of him.

It seems that they do have a level of understanding that is too good. While she sleep, he waited for her. Now, he is sleeping while she wait for him.

She sat quietly at the table by the window to read a little yellowed paper, 'Art of War.'

In fact, she did not read the book as reading it, she is prone to headache. So she is actually only reading at the blank space in the book where Cheng Shao Rong have wrote his remarks. It is very tender as he wrote them when he is still a child.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

For example, in the '田忌赛马', next to it, Cheng Shao Rong wrote: 'The rules of the games, there are loopholes!'. In '兵不厌诈' is written, 'Do not speak good faith. Shameless!'

田忌赛马 (pin ying: tian ji) – means Scripts and Scribes

兵不厌诈 (pin ying: bīng bú yàn zhà) – means... there can never be too much deception in a war. All is fair in a war. Deceit is not to be despised in a war. In wat, here is no objection to deceit. (all these different way of describing the meaning of this phrase)

She was amused reading it. Enjoying it while laughing. She heard Cheng Shao Rong turning on the bed while murmuring in a low voice.

She stood up and asked: "Are you awake? What did you say?"

It is evening. The sun ray is shining in from the window, in the face of Cheng Shao Rong, reflecting a ray on his body. Zhong Lian Chen is back facing the light. So she could not see his expression while he probably could not see her.

Cheng Shao Rong murmured: "Jiang Wei?"

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from

tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

There were a little buzz at the ears of Zhong Lian Chen. Then she fuzzily heard Cheng Shao Rong saying: “This is such a strange dream.”

Then he fell asleep again.

Zhong Lian Chen secretly grinding her teeth while approaching him. She saw him sleeping like an innocent child. He even had a silly smile on his face as he is dreaming.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 19

Cliff-hanging ending yesterday? Sorry about that.... hahahaha..... But that indeed got us all excited and wanting to find out what happen next, right? So I guess, this is another week of Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong.

Zhong Lian Chen is upset with Cheng Shao Rong... why is it so? Jealousy? Or she realized that he is actually marrying her for another reason and she is not whom he truly loved. Is he using her to forget Jiang Wei?

Enjoy the read today!

| | Next Chapter

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.19: Special Accidental Episode

She is really slow. That bookmark marked the time. It was her summer vacation during high school. And Cheng Shao Rong had received military school admission notice.

That yes, during the summer, their school club have performed some drama. She sent a ticket to Cheng Shao Rong. At the end of the show, he was holding two large bouquet of flowers. Both she and Jiang Wei have copies.

The name of the play is 姐妹花 (Flower Sisters). Both she and Jiang Wei played a pair of separated twin sisters whom because of different circumstances, lead a very different life. She wore a lacy poncho dress with fake curly hair, playing the extravagance eldest sister while Jiang Wei plays the poor female student.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

He figure he painted, is not like Jiang Wei but the dress is indeed the costume that Jiang Wei wore that day.

Cut!

Cheng Shao Rong turned over the body and the quilt fell to the ground. She picked it up wanting to cover him. As she was covering him, again he dropped the quilt back onto the ground.

Let him catch a cold and then seriously ill and die. Hum!

Zhong Lian Chen gave some excuse and then went home early. After eight pm, she received a call from Cheng Shao Rong. He sounded refreshed with no sign of drunkenness.

Cheng Shao Rong said: "Are you free? Come out and have some fun."

"No time. I am busy."

"Tomorrow I will got to my parents' place. Go with me."

"Tomorrow I am busier. I am not going. Not that Uncle Cheng does not know me."

"What are you doing now? Why do you sound strange?"

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

"Practice yoga."

"How come listening to it, sounded like you are practicing boxing?"

"How could you think of me like that... I am a lady..."

In fact, Zhong Lian Chen is practicing dart. In addition to her dance, outside of physical education, this is a sport that she does very well.

She sat cross-legged on the bed and locked the door. There is a dart wheel tied to the male rag doll on the door.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

The male doll have a pin wearing a cloth on its forehead. On the cloth there is

three words: Cheng Shao Rong.

Zhong Lian Chen very accurately shot the dart to the male doll. Each one hitting its target.

The len turned to Cheng Shao Rong. The time span move to two months later. Back in the single dormitory, the administrator congratulate Cheng Shao Rong while passing to him a courier that was sent by Zhong Lian Chen in the morning.

Cheng Shao Rong from the beginning of the year have been very smooth. He had easily passed a complex process assessment test and also made the first flight test. A few days ago, he and his comrades together in a division have won the technical championship. And then today, he had received the teacher's reception and recognition hence his rank has risen one level.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Moreover, in less than a month, he would be getting married. Although the subject of marriage is not whom had had plan to marry over the years, but marriage after all is difference from being in love. He is able to marry Zhong Lian Chen as his wife, he felt very contented.

One – Zhong Lian Chen is a woman that he had known his lifetime. He is very clear of all her strength and weaknesses. And he understood that to truly understand a person, it is a long and difficult process. He did not have the strength to re-start again.

Second – Zhong Lian Chen and his family have a deep root. Their grandfathers were once close combatants who had fought against guns. And now they are allies in business. Their union will make the elders very happy.

Three – Zhong Lian Chen has a good personality. She is very independent, like a tomboy. She has her mind all written in the face with a childish temper. Having her in the life, perhaps a little noisier but will never be tired at heart.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from

tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

He took the courier into his hand. Heavy. Is it that Zhong Lian Chen had sent him the wedding clause that needed his signature? Anyway, she always like to play around.

Opening the envelope. It is really a thick pile of paper. The content is not what he guessed.

That stack of documents are his test scores. Each one has been added annotations. Zhong Lian Chen’s handwriting.

She hates to practice. So it is particularly annoying for her to write by hand. So much earlier on before computer has become an universal item, she had begun using a typewriter to write her diaries and writing a draft.

The test questions are sent to him once a week by e-mail, asking him to complete it.

These are psychological test. Anyway, it does not take up too much time, so he played along with her.

Now, the test results are in front of him.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

~~~~~

*Ops another cliff-hanging ending today. Sorry about that. After completing my task today, I promise that I will be back to find out what Cheng Shao Rong’s psychological test results is. What was the purpose of Zhong Lian Chen getting Cheng Shao Rong to do the test?*

*Stay tune! We will be back soon! In the meantime, have a fantastic day ahead!*



## Epilogue 3 – Part 20

*Oh no..... What exactly did the result of those quiz that Cheng Shao Rong have been doing shows? Why do I have a bad feeling about the 'storm' that is heading their way now... What is the ultimate path that Zhong Lian Chen chooses?*

*Read on and enjoy the exciting chapter today.*

| | Next Chapter

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

### **Epilogue 3.20: Special Accidental Episode**

No. 003, please answer the following question from the first question and then answer the appropriate question.

The question....

Conclusion (Zhong Lian Chen's handwriting)

This topic test who is your love one: Your love is the one that you have lost and then you found again. You may pretend nothing had happened but you will remember a lifetime. Regret a lifetime.....

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.  
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

No. 005, please sort the following according to the first response.

The question.....

Conclusion (Zhong Lian Chen's handwriting)

This topic tests your love IQ and EQ. Your love EQ is high but IQ is poor. You can tolerate any woman but do not know who you love.

No. 007, please answer the following 50 questions and calculate the score. Choose A is 30 points, selected B is 20 points, select C is 10 points, D is 0 points.

The question.....

Conclusion (Zhong Lian Chen's handwriting)

This topic tests your current state of mind. You pretend you do not care. Anesthesia is all for your own good. You look forward to a better future. In fact, the huge loss of mind, anxious without a reason, overwhelmed and you need more to divert your attention. So you must have been all right now but your mind is in fact empty....

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

No 009....

Cheng Shao Rong patiently read each one of it while his heart has a bad feeling. Sure enough, there is a personal letter from Zhong Lian Chen at the end of her. Her rare pen written whole letter.

Cheng Shao Rong,

The test results answers all the problems, so I would not be bother to speak more about it.

If you like to deceive yourself, it is your business.

But I do not want to bring it into my own future.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

My life plan is:

To find a love that would love me to death.

Talk about a vigorous love.

I have not thought about what would happen after I get married.

But since the first two have been PASS, it shows that we completely have

different ways in life.

It is best that we go our own separate ways.

~~~~~

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

I wish you a life filled with happiness. Goodbye.

P/S1: Yes, we are still good friend, okay? Next time when I see you kindly say hello. Do not be embarrassed.

P/S2: I re-read this again and realized that the words are rude. Not properly considered. But because I am too lazy to re-write it again, so please read the letter while automatically converting it into elegant statement.

P/S3: I have basically settled everything. I did not discussed with you in advance is really embarrassing, mainly because I am afraid that it would affect your examination. Followed by the fear that you would not co-operate. Okay, see all notes on the testimony.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Note: The testimony of collusion with the elders

Cheng Shao Rong have always been proud of his calmness. Taishan collapse in the top without any discoloration.

His first slight coach was a stern man. But at the end of his training, he was delighted by his supervisor. "I have been teaching for so many years, Cheng Shao Rong is the best I have ever seen."

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the

permission of the translator.

But now, he holds the pile with seven or eight kinds of fonts with five or six size, drawing a mess of the same note, giving him the feeling of wanting to vomit.

5, Cheng Shao Rong from the beginning of the year have been smooth to this fay where finally there is a little stagnation.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 21

Anyone missed this funny and entertaining couple yet? They may not be as entertaining as Yifan and Xiao Bei, however, their story are funny in its own way, isn't it?

So, today Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong is back. What happen next?

Oh no.... So Zhong Lian Chen did choose the path of breaking off their engagement and wedding... What is Cheng Shao Rong going to do about it now? Will he be able to win her heart back? Or he truly does not love her enough and decided to let it go? Will there be a 2nd male lead coming into the story now?

| | Next Chapter

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.21: Special Accidental Episode

He and Zhong Lian Chen started more than two months of long and arduous struggle.

During these months, he also kept to accept the care and inquiry from the elders as well as scolding.

Excessive care and scolding all these, he can withstand. But dealing with 'inquiry'.... He is an honest and trustworthy good boy. Letting him against the conscience of Zhong Lian Chen to his set of words to flickers the elders, he is indeed not suited.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

In addition, the Executive knew that his marriage leave is cancelled. Afraid that he will become depressed, and also afraid he will cause some accident, so simply

sent him to train new students.

In theory, he is a lecturer and part-time counselor with not much strength needed. But it takes a lot of time, from day to night. So he had minimal free time.

And there were several female pilots whom are burning their eyes on him every day. He was worried that they would burn a lot on his clothes with their glare.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Occasionally when he has time, he will call Zhong Lian Chen. Analysis, discussion or negotiations. Anyway, the result is always the same. He lost!

Sample 1:

“Xiao Chen, what happened recently?”

“Nothing, just do not want to marry you.”

“Don’t take marriage as a joke, okay?”

“I am not marrying you because I do not take marriage as a joke. The one taking marriage as a joke is clearly you, okay?”

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Sample 2:

“Xiao Chen, is there a misunderstood something?”

“Misunderstanding your big head ghost!”

“Jiang Wei and I are already in the past. There is no way we can get together.”

“Well, you have to abandon her. You are not a good man!”

Sample 3:

“I broke up with Jiang Wei because of personality differences.”

“Despite the personality differences, both of you dated for nearly ten years?”

“I.....”

“Is our personality compatible?”

“But we’re complementary.”

“You are shameless with your language sexual harassment. Do you think that I cannot heart it? Get lost!”

“.....”

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Sample 4:

“Let’s find time to talk.”

“Talk about the time from my birth and you have already fallen in love with me. You are just waiting for me to grow up to marry me. And all the other women are substitutes while we are born to be together.....”

“.... You go and drink a cup of water. We will talk in a while.”

“I will not want to talk with you... get lost!”

Sample5 :

Sample6 :

Sample7 :

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

The boys in the Cheng Family are expected to be independent. And they have to solve their own problems. Not allowed to rely on others.

But in the face of such difficult women, Cheng Shao Rong self-inductance incompetent, so he had to ask for help from two of his paternal older cousin brothers.

He first call the eldest older cousin brother. Because this cousin brother and his personality is similar. And sister-in-law and he are also young acquaintance.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

“Big brother, how to deal with a very unreasonable woman?”

“What kind of relationship you have with this woman?”

“...fiancée, wife.... Somewhat of such sort.”

Big brother kept quiet for a while and then said the word:

“Ignore.”

It is as if nothing were said at all! He then had to call the second older cousin brother. This hopefully is his trump card.

Second older cousin thought for a long time before finally carefully reply with only one word:

“Endure.”

He fainted.....

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 22

Cheng Shao Rong is now working hard to win Zhong Lian Chen back.... read on and enjoy the effort that he put in. Will he win?

Time flies... it is already the end of the week, the end of the 1st week of October. Hope everyone had a wonderful week. And have a fantastic weekend ahead!

Tomorrow Lan Ning and Yan Ru Yu aka Teacher Xing Xin will be back!

[Previous Chapter](#) | | [Next Chapter](#)

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.22: Special Accidental Episode

At the same time, the Cheng family and Zhong family elders are talking either on the phone or face to face about the two disappointing child absurd marriage.

The first group of people:

Father Zhong: “Lao Cheng, I am sorry. My girl was spoiled by the family since childhood. It is disappointing about her nonsense pertaining the marriage!”

Father Cheng: “She is a girl. Her naughtiness is also called lively. Total opposite of Xiao Rong. This does not blame Xiao Chen. Certainly it is my Xiao Rong whom upset her.”

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

The second group of people:

Mother Cheng: “It is because Xiao Chen mind about Xiao Rong and Jiang Wei meet up? Xiao Rong said himself that he had really broken up with Jiang Wei. You know, this child is very reliable.”

Mother Zhong: “You still don’t understand Xiao Chen, this child? She forgets things very fast. Let her cool down, once she is tired, it will all be okay.”

The third group of people:

Grandmother Cheng: “You say, how come the children now are so full of nonsense? Even Xiao Rong can upset Xiao Chen to the extend she don’t even want to marry him anymore. And I was hoping to see the next generation of children, my great-grandchildren before I leave this world.”

Grandmother Zhong: “Well, you do not worry. As long as your Xiao Rong still want to marry Xiao Chen, this marriage will still happen. As for Xiao Chen, let her be for a while.”

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.



Asking for help that is not a help. After a day, Cheng Shao Rong no longer call Zhong Lian Chen on the phone. He decided to write her love letter. He wrote to her every day. One letter a day. A very short one. He cannot write a long letter.

- I really want to spend my lifetime with you. Although I have spent a decade with Jiang Wei, but comparing with lifetime, the decade is very short, isn’t it?
- You blame me for not forgetting the previous memories. I admit to it. But the memory is involuntarily. If I say I have forgotten Jiang Wei, do you not will think that I am a scum that is unreliable? You see, I can clearly remember that twenty years ago, we went to climb a mountain and we saw a weasel there together.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

- Although we both have not spend too much time loving each other but we

have our deep friendship and affection. Love in the end will turn into family affection. We are just taking a shortcut. Of course, if you like, we can slowly cultivate.

.....

.....

.....

The weekend is here! Cheng Shao Rong's team-mate, Shao Gen Jin came to see him. He saw Cheng Shao Rong leaning against the wall with the bent legs while sitting on the bed with a laptop. He is trying to write something while biting a toothpick in the mouth.

"Why? Outside the sun is good. It is a waste cope up indoor. We go out to play." Shao Gen Jin said.

"Wait for me. Another two minutes." Cheng Shao Rong quickly browse through what he wrote and then press the 'send' button.

Shao Gen Jin probe his head to see. Cheng Shao Rong snapped the computer shut and almost snapped his head together.

"Cheh! So secretive... Who wants to read? Are you writing a love letter or writing a report?" Because Cheng Shao Rong's reaction is too fast, Shao Gen Jin did not managed to see a word. Very upset, he readily pull out the 'toothpick' that is bitten in the mouth of Cheng Shao Rong. "Cool ah you. You think you are the knight in the shining armor?"

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

The result stunned him. He pulled out a lollipop. Shao Gen Jin is astonished and reach out to touch the forehead of Cheng Shao Rong.

Cheng Shao Rong said: "Writing to my wife whom is angry." Nauseating, sour to the extent that my teeth almost fell out. Yet some sweet and slightly neutral.

Shao Gen Jin said: "I have told you already not to pretend to be kind to give a

false impression. You deserve it! Hahaha.... As they say, do not cheat in the examination! Now, you know how it feels. Hahahaha.... So funny!”

Cheng Shao Rong sighed with resentment while putting away his computer emotionally. “My second brother, after working for a few months once said something to me. At that time, I thought he was extreme. But now I have to admit, his perception is always faster and stronger than me.”

Shao Gen Jin smiling from ear to ear while saying: “What did your 2nd brother said?”

“Brother said at that time, behaving in the line of the current situation.”

Zhong Lian Chen is actually very happy to receive the daily email from Cheng Shao Rong. Although she rarely reply. Occasionally when she reply, it is scolding back: “Smart tongue! You think I am so naïve?”

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

But one day, she did not receive any email from Cheng Shao Rong. She refreshed the email frequently until night. Did not even sleep well that night. If it is not because the task of military personnel is very detrimental to the interest of the country, she intended to continue with the dart activity that night.

Fortunately, she received two email that night, so she forgive Cheng Shao Rong in her heart.

Not because she is not ambition nor backbone. But because she is open-minded, considerate, gentle and virtuous. She could distinguish right from wrong.... And so on. All these fine traditional Chinese women’s fine virtues. Zhong Lian Chen self-deception thought.

She grew up not a tangled child. When she could not figure out the things, she usually would not think about it.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 23

Happy Monday! I hope that everyone had a wonderful weekend. I had a well spent weekend. Had Indonesian friends visiting, so well spend quality time catching up with them. And of course the enjoyable part of preparing the scheduled post for this week.

Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong is back today although we will read more about Zhong Lian Chen. So, what happen next? Something pretty exciting ahead of us today.... so enjoy the read!

And have a fantastic week ahead!

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.23: Special Accidental Episode

Because of a little jealousy, she decided not to marry Cheng Shao Rong. She forgot that the former girlfriend and the one before is really nothing of a big deal. To put it bluntly, she felt guilty to have been the 3rd party, destructing their relationship.

Although the external behavior of Zhong Lian Chen is very childlike, but in her heart, she is just like a virgin.

Moreover, a few days ago, she met Jiang Wei, so they ate together.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

She persuaded Jiang Wei about fate. And do not casually abandoned the almost a decade of love. She repeatedly stressed that she and Cheng Shao Rong's marriage is purely the arrangement of family. They are definitely not voluntary. Their feelings are very pure.

Sigh. God forgive her good motives. Moreover, she really did not lie. This

marriage is indeed the arrangement of the elderly originally. She said she and Cheng Shao Rong really do not have any 'feelings' isn't it? In particular, she stressed the 'emotional purity'. She really did not say anything else.

Jiang Wei said, in fact, she and Cheng Shao Rong was close to breaking up four years ago. Just because they did not had the heart, and procrastinated, hence never entirely broke off.

Jiang Wei explained, Cheng Shao Rong is an emotional defects yet outstanding young person. Those years they were together, they were not much of a couple. It is more appropriate to say that they were good friends of opposite sex. He does not understand love, only understand the responsibilities and obligations. And she never was successful to gain a spot in his heart.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Finally, Jiang Wei stressed that it is rare to have a lifetime relationship like Cheng Shao Rong and Zhong Lian Chen. So she must take advantage of this to save a good yet exhausting young man.

Zhong Lian Chen and Jiang Wei went their separate way. She recalled Jiang Wei's words on the road. She suddenly realized that Cheng Shao Rong is pitiful.

This is clearly a hope that the parents have to continuously improve and self-cultivate that eventually become obsessed with ultimate flawed personality of a talented young man case.

Zhong Lian Chen shed a few drop of tears and felt that instead of letting Cheng Shao Rong go with his high-quality appearance to deceive other women, it is better to just let her be the one that needs to endure this.

She intended to wait for Cheng Shao Rong to bring up marriage again before promising him.

But this Cheng Shao Rong, every day revolving around her telling her major principle. But never mentioned the sentence 'When will you re-marry me?', really hateful!

Don't expect her to be the one to say 'I want to marry you?' Dream on!

In the end, it is Zhong Lian Chen that brought up the sentence.

She still continue to live a day at a time. In her daze, she stroll around. Checking emails, going online...living her life in a free and easy way. Then suddenly there is a place in China where earth-shattering event occurred. That resulted in tens of thousands of people whom were killed and millions lost their home.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

When she recovered from the shock, she realized that Cheng Shao Rong have not wrote to her on time. And the 2nd day also the same.

Although he did not to disclose his whereabouts, she already guessed where he went.

Zhong Lian Chen did not want to recall the suffering that she went through during that time.

She returned to her parents' place and watched television daily while sobbing. And when she went online, she quarreled with her online friends.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Three days later, Cheng Shao Rong finally gave her a call. The signal is not good, the line could cut off anytime. He said: "Are you okay? Stay at home quietly and don't go out running anymore."

Zhong Lian Chen started crying and said: "You must come back alive. You will come back alive and marry me. Or else you wait and see...."

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 24

Translating this chapter gives me a mix feeling. It started off with the happy feeling seeing the progress of Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong. However, the chapter ended with another storm ahead of this couple. Sigh.... nothing seems to go right with them.... I wonder how many more 'storms' do they need to battle before they finally end up together....

Enjoy the read. Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong will be back the day after tomorrow!

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.24: Special Accidental Episode

Zhong Lian Chen, finding a new life goal, her life is once again enriched.

Her previous days are also very substantial. It should be said that her life has now become more fulfilled.

In the day time, she volunteered to help with the donations statistic and registration of the materials. At night, she habitually waited for Cheng Shao Rong's phone or mail. But she always failed to wait for them. So she is worried. Worried that he is too tired. Worried about the hard conditions. Worried that he is in danger.

One day, she plans to be part of the volunteer team to the disaster area. She would like to see if she had the chance to see Cheng Shao Rong. Father heard about the news and head over to bring her back.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

She suddenly found herself so concerned about Cheng Shao Rong. She is worried about him all the time. Is this the legendary great love?

She had not like Zhang Ai Ling. She thinks that this woman is cool and thin. However, when Cheng Shao Rong used the lesson learned from her when quoting words, she read more to get familiar with the enemy.

Her deepest impression if the 《倾城之恋》 – Love of Allure. It takes the city to fall only to achieve the love of two person together.

And now, she shamefully thought, in such a national distress, she actually achieved her long awaited love.

Right, of course this is love.

Since Cheng Shao Rong do not know how to love, then their love is entirely up to her.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

How happy it is to be master of the house!

Many days later, Cheng Shao Rong finally withdraw from the disaster area. His last phone call only contain a few words. He said that he received a new task. He would not be able to contact her for a long time. There is no way of communication.

But there is no danger, so she is not to worry.

When he finished his task, he can take a long vacation. Then they can have their wedding.

Zhong Lian Chen thinks that the blue sky outside the window is particularly blue. The clouds in the sky are white and even the sound of the crickets are beautiful.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

She began to seriously plan her wedding. The dresses, rings, flowers as well as

the banquet arrangement. Her days are now more fulfilling than before.

The next day, Zhong Lian Chen received a shipment. It is sent from Cheng Shao Rong's troop but the handwriting is not his.

She open it feeling very confused. Inside the courier, there is a sealed letter. And on the envelope is indeed his handsome writing. One that she had not seen for many years.

Zhong Lian Chen opened the enveloped feeling excited. The words were scribbled but it does seems more chic.

But the content of the letter—

Xiao Chen,

I have thought about it. You are right. We really cannot have a lifetime of love.

Moreover, I really cannot forget Jiang Wei.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

I want to marry you, as you say, it is to be responsible to you. And also it is the want of our elders. To make them happy.

But since you are so free and easy woman with lofty ideas, then let's forget our marriage.

As you say, we continue to be good friends. Let's not continue the mistake.

I wish you to find the most suitable person soon. To find a vigorous love. And then marry him and have an eternal life.

Yours sincerely.

Salute.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Zhong Lian Chen was shocked! And then she was angered till she trembled.

She fought back her anger and read the letter carefully again.

She studied the thin piece of paper several times. She finally confirmed that she did not misunderstand the meaning of his words. And this letter is definitely his handwriting.

Jerk! Bad guy! Surely he hated her for writing him a letter refusing his marriage. So now he is returning it... a tooth for a tooth!

Zhong Lian Chen first thought is to call him to tell him off. But could not reach him. Oh yes, he had said. She could not contact him for a while.

Premeditated!

Zhong Lian Chen angrily tear the letter into tow and bite it a few time. She then throw it onto the ground and stomp on it a few time. But her anger is still there.... Finally she use the scissors to cut the piece of paper into hundreds of pieces before flushing it down the toilet!

Zhong Lian Chen felt that she should cry but her anger is so extreme, there were no tears. Moreover, the parents are not home. Even the servants are out to buy food. So she do not even have anyone to complain.

She calmed down a little. She felt that she will not tell the others first. It is too embarrassing, that she was dump by a guy.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

However, she is about to explode. So she must find a place to breath.

Zhong Lian Chen dug out her perennial suitcase. Very good. Her passport is still valid and the visa did not expire. She want to go somewhere far away to lick the wound.

She left a note for her parents and quickly ran away.

Goodbye Cheng Shao Rong! The next time I come back, if I still remember who you are, I will follow your surname! XXXX!

Epilogue 3 – Part 25

Its already Thursday! How time flies day after day... we are nearing the end of the 2nd week of October. Anyone already planning for Christmas yet? Hahaha.... I am asking because I have! That show how much Christmas mean to me....

It is just one thing after another for poor Zhong Lian Chen, isn't it? So, she choose to step away somewhere far again to take a breather... Read on and find out what happen next to the poor girl.... Sigh!

I am beginning to wonder who sent the letter to her? Is there a malicious meaning behind the act? Did Cheng Xiao Rong really mean what he wrote in the letter? I have always thought that he loves her for a long time already just dated other girls because he could see the shadow of Zhong Lian Chen in them... Was I wrong? Sigh..... Anyone?

||

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.25: Special Accidental Episode

Saying that the heart was severely traumatize, Zhong Lian Chen took the morning flight and fled across the ocean to a place far away.

She telephone the family to tell them that she is safe. But she did not bother to explain to them what had happened. Her cell phone is of course off.

She called her older cousin brother and requested for him to help her to deal with the aftermath. Zhong Lian Chen of course does not dare to face her father and mother.

She stayed in one place for a few days before changing the place. This is to avoid the family from finding out where she is and coming to bring her home. Before she leave the place, she would locate a phone and call to inform them that she is still alive.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the

permission of the translator.

Zhong Lian Chen traveled and played for two weeks and her mood improved. Now, thinking about Cheng Shao Rong no longer angered her.

And she thought, fortunately she did not marry Cheng Shao Rong. Or else, next time when she want to go abroad, the process would be troublesome. The health examination and approval procedures will be very complicated.

But..... hey..... Forget it..... TMD..... Really is hell!..... Pooh!

On this day, when Zhong Lian Chen confirm the next leg of itinerary and is preparing to buy the ticket, the cashier politely said to her: "I am sorry Miss. Your credit card is decline."

How can that be!

She changed one. Also a failure.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Replace with another one. The same.

Zhong Lian Chen uses her smart head and think. Immediately understand that this is the doing of her family. Because her credit cards are all prepared by her brothers, the set of passwords she do not have it. Moreover, as long as they want to harm her, they will have plenty of ways.

Damn! Her hotel bill is yet settled. Huge amount of money. Of course, she do not have enough cash on her. They know that she rarely keep cash on her. So after careful calculation, this way, she could not escape.

If know that this would happen today, she would have overdraft her credit card yesterday. No, if she know this would happen today, she would not have used the credit card. Now they have found her whereabouts.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the*

permission of the translator.

She really did not have any sense of crisis ah!

Zhong Lian Chen bitterly returned to her room.

She is not worried about survival. There will certainly be someone who would help her settle the bill. And then bring her home.

But then, she will soon be extradited like a prisoner.

Who would be coming?

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Her father? She is done! She might as well directly jump down now. She glanced down. So high. So she gave up the plan. Or pretended to faint? After all, she has low blood sugar. So this should be able to fool them for a while.

Cousin brothers? Better not be them. She is afraid that she would not be able to control her emotions and rushed to bite their neck.

Dad or brother's secretary? The best are these people. Because they are afraid of her, so she might be able to get her way.....

Zhong Lian Chen thought of the next strategies. She felt a little relief but the deep sadness hit her.

Her recent life is somehow every unbearable ah. Drunk and lost it, got cheated into engagement and then..... no unilateral love, and when she finally started to really love the fiancée, she was ruthlessly abandon. And now.... She was framed by her most trusted family. So she could not do anything but stay in the hotel waiting for them to come and bring her home. Because if she escapes now, it may not even require several hours, it may be the federal police coming to catch her.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the*

permission of the translator.

She is simply more desolated than Xiang Yu. Ah, those are concubine.

She was even more miserable than the little girl who had sold the matches. The little girl could even play with the match to her fantasy. And she whom have just drawn two boxes of matches, choked herself for 5 minutes and also burnt some of her own lock of hair.

Zhong Lian Chen grew more and more aggrieved as she thought about it. She lay down on the bed crying for a while and then fell asleep. When she woke up, she realized that several hours had passed. But those sent to bring her home has not arrived.

This is giving her great mental torture ah. Anyway, give her a knife to kill herself mah.

She pace around in the room and then decided to go out to take some fresh air. This way, she could also take advantage of the Chinese consulate if they are still open. To explore and if necessary, she might seek help from them.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

She changed her clothes and was about to leave when there is a call from the front desk saying that there is a friend waiting for her in the lobby.

What a timing. Her earlier shocked and the anger resulted her in missing her lunch. Now, she is so hungry. Even if she wants to escape, she do not have the strength.

Hiding also cannot escape. Zhong Lian Chen pace around her room for 5 minutes and finally reluctantly head down to the lobby.

The one waiting for her in the lobby is a little beyond her expectations. Perhaps it is not right to say 'a little.' It should be 'seriously very greatly' beyond her expectation!

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS

RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 26

Anyone guess who actually came to ‘rescue’ Zhong Lian Chen? As how it is normally in any novel, it is definitely someone beyond our expectation, isn’t it? Sigh....

Rest be assured, the chapter today can be seem as pretty entertaining though.... So enjoy the read today! As per the scheduled we posted recently, Zhong Lian Chen will be back again on Monday. Hopefully by then, we will see the return of Cheng Shao Rong...

TGIF! I can’t wait for the weekend to be here. Have a great day ahead!

| | Next Chapter

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.26: Special Accidental Episode

Turned out to be her only ‘crush’ from young, Cheng Shao Chen!

Zhong Lian Chen is shocked to the extend, she only stood there stunned. Forgetting to even say hello.

Cheng Shao Chen said: “Give you half an hour to pack up your things.”

She finally recovered. “No Need. 15 minutes is enough. You wait for me for a while.” Then quickly rushed to the elevator.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

Hey, not ah! She planned before how to deal with the person whom were coming to pick her isn’t it? How even now she so honestly submitted herself? Disgruntled distraught!

When Zhong Lian Chen realized this, she is already sitting on the plane heading back to motherland. Now, she really no longer can escape.

Moreover, Cheng Shao Chen timing is so accurate. She did not even get to eat

anything, she was already whisked onto the flight. Now really hungry.

“Brother Shao Chen, I am hungry.” She whispered.

“The food will be served shortly. You can have two servings.”

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

“I hate airline meals.”

“Then you sleep for a while. When you are asleep, you would not feel hungry.”
Cheng Shao Chen turned the English newspaper without looking up.

“Why did you not let me have dinner before boarding the plane?”

“If you eat, you will have enough strength. If you run away, it will be strenuous
to catch you.”

She feel like crying. Even her dearest Brother Xiao Chen is bullying her. But she
was so hungry she did not have the strength to cry.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Zhong Lian Chen cried in her hear. Sob Sob! She is her father and mother, and
even her uncle who care so much for the stray cats and dogs unwanted and
unloved poor child.

The stewardess finally served the meal. Cheng Shao Chen very politely push his
share in front of her.

“I want a very strong cup of coffee and four cakes.” Said Zhong Lian Chen.

Cheng Shao Chen finally turned around and looked at her. He turned to the
stewardess and said lightly: “Give her a glass of juice. And give me two packets of
tissue.”

Well, although she did not get what she wanted, but her Brother Xiao Chen is

still very concerned about her.

After eating, Zhong Lian Chen finally have the strength. She started sharing her recent months of miserable experience one by one to the listening Cheng Shao Chen. She have been holding it back in her heart for a long time without a chance to share with anyone. Finally there is a living person who is listening to her.

The more she share the more aggrieved she got. She first quietly shed the tears. And it turned into whispered sobbing and slowing the tears just flow continuously getting heavier by the minutes.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Cheng Shao Chen is really lacking in sympathy. She cried so miserably but he is indifferent with his eyes still staring at the English newspaper in his hand. But when her tears is about to flow into her mouth, he will reach out to her and wiping her tears with tissues. Really strange, he obviously is not looking at her.

But Cheng Shao Chen is a good listener. He did not tell her to shut up. Not say anything while she is talking. But do not know even if he is listening. No matter, anyway, Zhong Lian Chen pouring her heart grievance out, she already feeling much better.

But of course when she is narrating, she only focus on exaggeration of Cheng Shao Rong's deeds. And she never mention their one-night stand events.

Later, Zhong Lian Chen realized that Cheng Shao Chen is listening to every words that she said. Because when she mention the letter, Cheng Shao Chen even smiled and with the expression of surprised and laughing: "When did this kid become so bold?"

Zhong Lian Chen cried up in anger and aroused the other passengers in the first-class cabin to turn around and looked at them. Fortunately, there are not many first-class guests.

The stewardess hurried over: "Is this lady uncomfortable? Do I need to do

anything for you?”

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Cheng Shao Chen waited till her sobbing settled and then patted her shoulder. “Well, well, that letter should not have been written by Xiao Rong. Or he is just teasing you.”

Zhong Lian Chen after the loud cry earlier, could no longer cry. But she still want to pretend to cry: “Sob sob. You are bad people. Even you bully me!”

“Later when you want to cry, find a place and cry loudly just like just now. Just crying is too depressing and is detrimental to your health. People listening to you will also feel uncomfortable.”

Zhong Lian Chen close her eyes and play dead..... No, pretending to sleep.

This flight journey is so long. There are many more hours. She really have no face to see anyone.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

The plane finally landed. On the way home, Cheng Shao Chen took her to eat her favourite food. She was very happily eating when someone came to give Cheng Shao Chen tickets. Only one ticket.

Zhong Lian Chen asked: “Brother Shao Chen, where are you going? You want to leave me here alone to fend myself?”

Cheng Shao Chen said mildly: “How could I? Uncle Zhong went on a business trip. I am sending you to him.”

“Which Uncle Zhong?”

“Your father.”

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS

RESERVED.

Epilogue 3 – Part 27

The start of another week! How was your weekend? Mine was indeed well spent.

Ops.... Zhong Lian Chen is now brought home to her homeland. What a surprised that it is Cheng Shao Chen whom went to bring her home instead of Cheng Shao Rong.

What happen next? Will she be sent home to her father as requested? Another 'storm' ahead?

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Epilogue 3.27: Special Accidental Episode

Zhong Lian Chen cried again. The countless eyes around the luxurious restaurant turned to look at her.

Cheng Shao Chen raised the magazine in his hand to block his face. He hope that passer-by will think that he has no relationship with the woman in front of him.

But then Zhong Lian Chen went around his side and pulled his sleeves: "You cannot leave me here regardless. Sob Sob. This time, my father will certainly locked me up for at least a month. I don't want! You bring me along where you go!"

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

So a few hours later, Zhong Lian Chen successfully escape her father's influence and is temporary safe.

Getting out of the airport, a spacious car is waiting for them. In the car is also seated a middle-aged woman with a serious expression. She saw them, got up

and politely salute. There is still no smile on her face, as if everyone owed her money.

Cheng Shao Chen did not seem to mind. He introduced her to Zhong Lian Chen: “This is Manager Leng.” And to the driver, he said: “I need to first go to the company to attend a meeting.”

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

In the car, Cheng Shao Chen instructed Manager Leng: “Prepare a credit card for Ms Zhong. Only to be used in this city. Find Ms Zhong a place to stay. Bring her to buy some clothes and necessities within reasonable range. Meet all her requirement.”

Manager Leng nodded earnestly.

Cheng Shao Chen stressed again: “Within a reasonable range.”

Manager Leng nodded again.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

Before getting off the car, Cheng Shao Chen took out a bank card and hand over to Zhong Lian Chen. And he confiscated her passport.

Zhong Lian Chen wiped her tears and said: “Brother Shao Chen, they are all bad. You are the best person to me.”

Cheng Shao Chen said: “You be obedient. You are not allowed to be naughty. Not allowed to cause trouble. Or else I would be worst than them.”

Zhong Lian Chen nodded obediently. “I will listen to you, Brother Shao Chen. You are better than Cheng Shao Rong a hundred times.” She thought for a while and added: “A million times better.”

Cheng Shao Chen looked up the sky at the plane in the sky: “The recent

inflation is really very powerful.”

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.

~~~~~

A few days later, Zhong Lian Chen is having dinner together with her older cousin brother, Zhong Zhen Kai and Cheng Shao Chen.

“Xiao Chen this girl. Ran over to the other side of the world. Even the phone is off. Only calling home every two or three days to report that she is safe. The entirely family went through anxious time because of her. Let see how we ‘clean’ her up after this.” That time, Zhong Zheng Kai had a few drinks and said hardly.

“If you dare to touch a single hair of hers in the foreign land, be careful that she goes to the police. At time, you will not even be able to return to homeland.” Cheng Shao Chen coolly said.

“Ah, according to her state that time, the damage is absolutely large. So I worry about it. My uncle told me to go and bring her back. But this ghostlike girl, before I could make a move, she changed place. And how do I have the ability to catch her?” Zhong Zheng Kai said sadly.

“There is method. You guys just did not had the guts to do it. Drive her to the corner without food. Cut all her credit card usage. This girl have never suffered. She certainly would be calling home for help after a few days.”

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.  
Translated for [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com). If you are not reading this from  
[tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com), then this translation has been posted without the  
permission of the translator.

“Damn! That is my baby cousin sister. Your comrade sister. You are really poisonous.” Zhong Zheng Kai is fully awaken from his drunken state.

“That is why I said you don’t have the heart to do it. So you still wait for her to play outside till she is tired and come home. Sooner or later.” Cheng Shao Chen said without a care.

“You know my sister very well.” Zhong Zhen Kai wiped the amount of sweat. “If I dare to let her suffer a few dare outside there, when she return, she may potentially kill me.”

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.  
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from  
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the  
permission of the translator.*

“I am heading over to where she is for a business trip. You really do not need me to bring her back?” Cheng Shao Chen said casually to Zhong Zhen Kai.

Zhong Zhen Kai almost cried out and rushed to embrace Cheng Shao Chen. “Yes, of course. Brother, you must bring our Xiao Chen home. The sooner the better. I will do whatever you command.”

**© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.**

## Epilogue 3 – Part 28

*Happy Tuesday everyone! Did your week started okay?*

*This chapter today may be a little confusing. Suddenly, it seems like everything abruptly changed and it is not flowing from the last chapter yesterday. There were a lot more confusing in between text that I actually gave up translating as it is so unrelated to the entire story.*

*What is in this chapter today is translated exactly how it is in the novel. So, I hope that it does make some sense to you all when you read it. Hopefully the chapter after tomorrow would be an easier to understand chapter.*

*With this, we are also nearing the end of Epilogue 3 (FINALLY! Yeah!). From what I see remaining from the original text in chinese, I think we should be able to finished these by end of next week. And then it is the final Epilogue 4 (pretty lengthy too but half of what Epilogue 3 are) before say the final goodbye to this novel.*

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

### **Epilogue 3.28: Special Accidental Episode**

A month later, Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong finally reconciled with some details omitted in the middle.

They will of course as what Grandmother Zhong had said. As long as Cheng Shao Rong really want to marry Zhong Lian Chen, the marriage will definitely happen. The Cheng family children best criteria is keeping their promises even if they have to overcome ten thousand of difficulty to achieve the end goal. Zhong Lian Chen has always been strong on the outside but in actual fact, she is a real 'chicken'. So the result is inevitable.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.  
*Translated for [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com). If you are not reading this from [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com), then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

The beautiful dusk, golden sunset, Cheng Shao Rong hand in hand with Zhong Lian Chen walking through the center of the square fountain. They startled a few pigeons.

Cheng Shao Rong rub her fingers and asked: “Do you want to eat cotton candy?”

Zhong Lian Chen: “Am I that childish? I want to eat candied fruits!”

Cheng Shao Rong went to buy her a lot of candied fruit. All the different tastes. Zhong Lian Chen ate till her ear pained.

Next to them is a pair of couple with white hair, walking while looking at them with a smile. They said: “What a sweet and loving couple. The guy even use candied fruits to make into a bouquet flowerlike to give her.”

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.  
*Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

Biting into the candied fruits Zhong Lian Chen said: “That lady with the surname Piao, why suddenly become so kind? I thought she would certainly take the chance to stave off the image of both of us, turning us into ugly people. Especially the smart and lovely me. And then make our beautiful story into a beautiful and vulgar absurd script to make money. Why she suddenly turn so nice? I am not used to it!”

Cheng Shao Rong said: “How can the world be so cheap? It is said that her script is written but 2nd brother sent her a cheque of two million with the condition that she destroy the original scrip that was written.”

Zhong Lian Chen whispered a curse. Cheng Shao Rong turned and looked at her. He saw her biting back her tongue.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.  
*Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

Zhong Lian Chen said: “2nd brother is very compromising, unfamiliar to his evil forces. He is too kind to this woman.”

Cheng Shao Rong said: “Who knows what guilt that the woman use again him. Or what damage she is using from the trap to try to frame him. You know, 2nd sister in law situation is a little special. So 2nd brother is worried.... Really strange... why 2nd sister in law like the author name Piao so much? Almost as if it is her friend. 2nd sister in law is such a tasteful woman... in short, 2nd brother has a headache because of this.”

Zhong Lian Chen said: “Isn’t her novel finished? The outcome is set. So want to change may not be necessary successful.”

Cheng Shao Rong sighed: “Isn’t there a thing call changing script? A few hundreds of words changed will change the outcome of the story. 2nd brother gave her face. Letting her have her way.”

“It is better to change the two million dollars into coins. Put her into the pit and then bury her with the coins. Then the world would be much cleaner.”

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

Cheng Shao Rong said: “She is not guilty of evil. But you have to stay away from her. So that you don’t learn her bad habits.”

Zhong Lian Chen thought: “In fact, Sister Piao is not a bad person. Occasionally she have a strange temper. But come to think of it, compared to the security if sister comes, she is good to me. She basically do not bully me and still arranged for some games for me to play while waiting. She really loves me ah....”

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

Cheng Shao Rong glanced at her: “That is consider a good person? Then you have to please me. Every year when we go and visit 2nd brother for a week, I will

chat with 2nd sister in law and you go and handle 2nd brother.”

Zhong Lian Chen: “Really?” Then with a little frustration: “Better not! Later Brother Shao Chen will irritate me.”

Cheng Shao Rong gentle snorted and mutter under his breath to the ears of Zhong Lian Chen: “That is the purpose. To let him irritate you.”

**© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.**

## Epilogue 3 – Part 29

*A super short chapter today with only mentioned of Cheng Shao Rong. Today's post is where we find out exactly what happen and why the letter to Zhong Lian Chen from Cheng Shao Rong was courier to her.*

*I have to make this chapter short today only because there were a lot of gibberish which I decided to cut out. Only translating the part where it would make sense and has connections to the story of Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong.*

*Enjoy the interesting read today. Zhong Lian Chen will be back tomorrow with Cheng Shao Rong for another exciting update on their cute and funny relationship. So stay tune!*

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

### **Epilogue 3.29: Special Accidental Episode**

The debut of Shao Gen Jin, a soldier in uniform.

Shao Gen Jin: This is how it is. In the implementation of the task into the disaster area, because of the situation with many uncertainties with high risk, we have all the comrades to write a letter. So that should anything happen to the comrades and they are killed, we will send the letter from the organization to the family as their last words. At that time, my mind flashes countless memories of childhood.....

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.  
*Translated for [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com). If you are not reading this from [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com), then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

General Public: Shao Gen Jin... please get to the main point.

Shao Gen Jin: Yes. Who do you want me to talk about? Cheng Shao Rong.... Oh, he wrote the letter the fastest. After he sealed the letter, later he found another piece of paper and then began to write the second letter.... It is to his fiancée.

(Shao Gen Jin took a long pause here...)

General Public: It is departing letter only when something happen to the comrade. Why send it out?

Shao Gen Jin: Blame it on me for being such a good friend. When we wrote those letters, we look dignified and solemn as if we really want to say goodbye to our family. Only when Shao Rong wrote the letter to his fiancée that he had the smile on his mouth. The level is not really high, but we can imagine the content that he wrote.... Must be sweet and loving. Then... we withdraw from the disaster areas and those letters were all given back to everyone. Shao Rong because of emergency was assigned to another assignment in another area. So he asked me to take the letters on his behalf and destroy those letters.

General Public: Oh!

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.  
*Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

Shao Gen Jin: We are buddies from childhood. And I know him well. This guy is terrible. If not forced, I am afraid this life he will never say any words of love from his heart. My 'sister-in-law' would rarely have the opportunity to listen to his heart and loving words, how can miss this opportunity? So I cleverly sent the original letter that he wrote to his fiancée.

General Public: Brother Shao, when Cheng Shao Rong know the truth, did he beat you up?

Shao Gen Jin: We are brothers ah. As the saying goes, brotherhood, such a hand-footed woman, how to hand-foot for the purpose of anti-purpose.... Of course, when he know about the truth, it was a long time after. That time, we were thousands of miles apart. Even if he wanted to beat me, I was beyond his reach.... Cheng Shao Rong has always been healthy, but he suddenly had health problem. He vomited blood slightly. But the appropriate release of the blood is also helpful to him. So he should be very grateful to me, just not good in expressing his emotion. Don't you think so?

General Public: Time to go. Shao Gen Jin, thank you for your time.





## Epilogue 3 – Part 30

*Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong is finally married! Yeah!*

*With this, we are at nearing the ending of this super long Epilogue 3. Today is a short chapter. So enjoy the read! And have a fantastic weekend ahead.*

| |

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

### Epilogue 3.30: Special Accidental Episode

Zhong Lian Chen's wedding is just like how she lost her virginity... it came unknown and unprepared to her.

Initially she had discussed with Cheng Shao Rong and decided to extend the wedding for two years. In the two years, she and Cheng Shao Rong will enjoy the long distance relationship.

Cheng Shao Rong had no comments.

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.  
Translated for [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com). If you are not reading this from [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com), then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

As a results.....

It was only a party. Maternal grandmother's eightieth birthday celebration at the Grand Hotel where there are a lot of friends and family invited.

Cheng Shao Rong happen to also be on a long holiday.

Someone came over in help Zhong Lian Cheng with the makeup. Grandmother say that she wanted her by her side, so must be properly groomed and dressed up.

The makeup took a long time and also the hair is neatly groomed. Zhong Lian Chen felt strange: "Is it necessary to be so grand?"

And later she was given a milky white dress with many layers. Zhong Lian Chen

said: "This is too exaggerated. Not as if I am getting married!"

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.  
*Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

And then..... announcement was made to the guests of the banquet. Maternal grandmother said with a smile: "Welcome everyone to this old lady eightieth birthday party. But there is a much more important program for tonight that I would like to announce here now. That tonight is my precious baby granddaughter Zhong Lian Chen with another precious child that I watched growing up, Cheng Shao Rong's Wedding Banquet. We did not notify you in advance is because we wanted to surprise you."

All guests cheered happily when suddenly there were fireworks in the sky. That cover Zhong Lian Chen's expression of dismay and angry protest.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.  
*Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.*

The hall are filled with friends and relatives. Zhong Lian Chen die not have the courage to escape the marriage. She pretended to be a happy bride nestled in the arms of Cheng Shao Rong.

Her face was smiling but through her clenched teeth, she said: "Cheng Shao Rong, you are dead!"

Cheng Shao Rong said with an innocent face: "I also do not know ah"

In the lounge.....:

Zhong Lian Cheng: "How come I don't know that I am getting married today?"

Aunty: "Oh, sorry. Forgot to inform you both."

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.  
*Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the*

*permission of the translator.*

Zhong Lian Chen: “But we do not have any marriage registration ah?”

Aunty: “Fortunately, the guests does not know. Quickly make up for it tomorrow.”

In short, Zhong Lian Chen’s complaint went on deaf ear. So she was inexplicably deceived into marriage.

**© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.**

## Epilogue 3 – Part 31

*Happy Saturday everyone! A slight change to this week's schedule unfortunately. Apologies for those whom are anticipating the return of Lan Ning and Yan Ru Yu aka Teacher Xing Xin today. Time did not allow me to translate the novel. So I decided to move up the post for next week scheduled for today.*

*There is not much of Zhong Lian Chen and Cheng Shao Rong today. Today, we will read about the interview done with Shao Gen Jin on his thoughts and what he knows about the OTP. And today, it will end with a light and funny incident with him. So enjoy the Saturday read! Should time permits, Lan Ning and Yan Ru Yu should be back tomorrow. Hopefully....*

|

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN [tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com](http://tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com) ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

### Epilogue 3.31: Special Accidental Episode

~~~~~

In front of the special amateur journalist, Shao Gen Jin said: A few of the comrades and I are very familiar with Cheng Shao Rong. So we are actually very puzzled for a long time on how Shao Rong and Xiao Chen started their relationship together.

Before this, he occasionally mention the name Zhong Lian Chen. But more as a growing up playmate, also like a younger sister. There were no slightest clue of him loving her. Why so suddenly she became his fiancée. Really a big doubt.

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

And Cheng Shao Ron was dating a woman named Jiang Wei for many years isn't it? Although he also rarely mentioned her.

At the same time, Cheng Shao Rong is very tight lipped about the whole thing. We attempted many time to try to force him to share with us but failed.

Well, since there are so many unsolved mysteries, this is just one of it.

I do not want to waste my previous brain cells.

What? Talk about the wedding scene? Oh, okay.

In fact, there is nothing to talk about. It is just like another wedding ceremony.

Just more luxurious, since both side of the family are wealthy.

The bride and groom are more beautiful than average people © 2016

TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

The wedding dinner is more delicious.

Yes, I heard a little talk within the family.

“We are finally a real family now.” Grandmother Cheng said. “But cheating them, the children will not rebel back?”

Grandmother Zhong said: “The two children are solid. They will not have any strength to rebel back.”

Shao Rong’s mother said to Lian Chen’s mother: “No matter, it is better than us worrying about it day after day.”

Hey, what is this? I do not understand.

Shao Rong and Xiao Chen are still arguing outside for a while.

Xiao Chen said: “You swear that today has nothing to do with you.”

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED. Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the permission of the translator.

Shao Rong said: “Have you had enough? This is the third time.”

Xiao Chen said: “Then you make the oath. If you lie today, you will have to endure my lifetime of bully and slave abuse!”

Shao Rong said: “it is necessary to do this oath?”

Ha Ha Ha. But still did not understand.

Yes, at the wedding, I met a particularly beautiful little girl. Simply like the little angel.

The little angel pulled at my pants and said: “Uncle, uncle, you are so handsome. I love you so much!”

*© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
Translated for tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com. If you are not reading this from
tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com, then this translation has been posted without the
permission of the translator.*

I was flattered: “Really?”

The little angel smiled: “Do you have a girlfriend?”

I said: “No”

The little angel smiled and said: “Then I introduce you to a good one, okay?”

I said: “Okay. Where?”

The little angel pointed to her nose: “That is me. You must wait till I grow up. So you must not fall in love with anyone else. You know that you must wait for me to grow up.”

I said: “That.... This.... You must be kidding!”

The little angel said: “You have promised me. A man making a promise that must be kept. Let’s do the pinky promise. If you do anything behind my back, your nose will grow to be as long as the elephant trunk. Oh, my name is Cheng Qian Yu. What is your name?”

This is not an angel. This is a devil!

Let me see, what else happen at the wedding. Ah ah. How can I forget it! I finally met my dream ‘wife’. Let me think of how to describe this... hey, I really regret not learning the language. She is quiet and elegant, a beautiful Dutch with a sweet smile. How come I never get to meet this woman before.....

© 2016 TINKERBELLSAN tinkerbellsan.wordpress.com ALL RIGHTS

RESERVED.

Caught in my Own Trap Special: Life After Marriage – Part 1

*A happy Sunday everyone.... yes, we are back with more on Zheng Xie and He He. Thanks to **Astariterix** and the link that was provided, we are able to read a little more about their cute interaction after their marriage.*

Work had been really swamped lately. So my translation would be really short as I will be trying to translate as much as I could in each post. There is a total of 7 parts with the first post today of 3 parts.

In the meantime, do enjoy the short read today!

Caught in my Own Trap Special: Life After Marriage – Part 1

Little Darling

Part 1

“Let’s have another baby.”

When Xiao He He was saying this, she was lying in bed with fever. Her body was covered with a thick blanket with a cold towel over her head.

In the meantime, Zheng Xie is sitting on the chair beside the bed. He is bored to the stage where he was turning the page of the book every five seconds. He took the book from He He. When he first saw the cover of the book titled: “晨曦之雾”, he thought that He He finally had a changed of taste and is ready literature. He did not expect that it is still a romance book.

晨曦之雾 (*The Fog of the Morning*) – This is actually a C-Novel



“Ah?” Zheng Xie said while turning the page.

“Let’s have another baby.”

“Such a boring book can even be published. And still there are people want to buy.” Zheng Xie flip the book and continued: “However, this book heroine felt very familiar. I am sure I have met her somewhere.”

He He snatched the book: “Hei, let’s have another baby.”

Zheng Xie took the towel away, touched her head and said to himself: “Clearly the fever is gone. How come someone is talking nonsense?”

That is how He He’s first attempt to discuss about having a second child is dismissed.

Part 2

He He wanted to initiate the idea of having a second child is her efforts in establishing a loving relationship with her daughter, Zheng Zhu You (nicknamed Yao Yao) had been declared unsuccessful.

The reason for this weird matter is unknown.

In this house, He He is very well liked and is friendly with everyone. From the always serious father to the forever smiling cleaner’s sisters.

In this family, Yao Yao is also very well-liked by everyone. From the always serious grandfather to the always smiling cleaning ladies.

But only the two of them, are unable to show their love for each other. Everytime He He faced Yao Yao, she gets a headache. While Yao Yao seeing He

He always complain of stomach ache.

He He finally understand. In the short time, she had no way to change the situation. To accommodate her unexpressed maternal love, she decided to have another child. After all, both she and Zheng Xie are an only child.

He He summarized her failed first attempt as inappropriate time.

The second time, she look for an excellent opportunity. Late at night, when both Zheng Xie and He He were entangled in a heap, when Zheng Xie was ‘investing’ very hard, she said: “Let’s have another baby.”

She thought that when Zheng Xie is distracted, he will just promise her. And this guy will never renege his promise to her.

But Zheng Xie suddenly stopped and said solemnly: “If you do not like, you can just say it.”

“Do not like what?”

“Are you trying to get pregnant in order to avoid such obligation?”

He He felt very regretful. The last time, when Zheng Xie wanted to do it, because she was upset with him, she uses all sorts of excuses to disappoint him. She did not expect for it to be used against her so soon.

Part 3

“Let’s have another baby.”

After two failed attempt, He He made an appointment with Zheng Xie to have a serious discussion.

“Why”

“Yao Yao is a girl. Let’s have a son. We complete the word “好”, that would be good isn’t it?”

好 (*pin ying: hào*) – the meaning of this word: Good

“He He, I do not have patriarchal ideology. My dad does not too. You are born in the 80s, you should not even have that thought.”

“Even it is two girls, it would be good. For Yao Yao to be an only child, it is a disadvantage for her growth.”

Zheng Xie studied He He's expression. She bowed her head as her guilt conscience.

“He He, you may have forgotten the pain. I still remember the nine months of your pregnancy, there were not a day without torment. Every day I live in an abyss. Even if you are willing to go back to those days again, I do not want to.”

And thus, He He's third attempt again, failed!

| |

Caught in my Own Trap Special: Life After Marriage – Part 2

Did you all enjoyed the read yesterday? Funny isn't it? I could not stop laughing when I was translating them. My husband thought I had gone nuts....

More funny part today. Enjoy the read!

Caught in my Own Trap Special: Life After Marriage – Part 2

Part 4

Xiao He He decided to self-reliance. Her so-called self-reliance, she intended to reproduce a sexual production. And she decided to adopt the little unconventional ways.

He He referred to the famous scene of many famous movies as part of the program.

Scene 1:

Zheng Xie came home late as usual. No one open the door for him. He entered the bedroom and saw that the room lights were ambiguous. Fragrance filled the air, with the music on lightly. His disheveled and ambiguous wife reclined in the big bed with her innocence and temptation eyes.

Zheng Xie took off his jacket and said: "He He, it is cold. Cover yourself with the quilt. There is no heating, don't catch a cold." And then he went straight into the bathroom.

"I shower together with you." He He jumped out of bed and hugged him, trying one more time.

Zheng Xie said: "You obviously had showered. Shower too many time will cause skin cancer."

He He ogled at him.

"Your eyes hurt?" Zheng Xie asked with interest. "Tomorrow go and get it checked at the hospital."

By the time Zheng Xie finished showering, He He had fallen asleep in anger.

Scene 2:

While Zheng Xie was asleep, in his drowsy state, He He tied his hands up with a scarf. She shook the little blue pill in front of him: “If you do not promise me, I will make you take double. And then I will rape you. Today is my dangerous period.”

Zheng Xie although is not in a sober mind, but he clearly had an idea.

“He He, even if you get your way, you determine that the drug has no effect on your children?”

He He: “.....”

“Where did you buy the drugs? Not fake, right? How if you poison me?”

He He: “.....”

“He He, when you buy the medicine, no one else saw it? People will doubt my abilities. Virginity does not matter, losing reputation is very serious.”

He He: “.....”

“You have tied it too tight. Loose it a little.”

“Just go to sleep.” The extremely angry He He decided to go to the study and sleep.

Xiao He He had not taken time to leave the bedroom when Zheng Xie broke free and bundled her. He throw the little blue pill into the toilet and pull the scarf and He He..... *(I will leave it to your imagination on what happen next)*

In short, in a sense, then He He had actually won half of the battle. But because Zheng Xie’s mind is too clear, he had used protective measures. So in fact, He He had only won parts of the battle.

Part 5:

Just like that, once, twice, three and four times..... He He finally gave up the thought that as long as you work hard, you are able to get it.

The enemy is too strong, and her ability is too weak. She decided to give up.

Xiao He He and Zheng Zhu Yao continue to leisurely argue and torture each other.

Zheng Zhu Yao: "Mummy is afraid to go to the toilet at night if the lights are not turned on. Ha ha ha...."

Xiao He He: "Yao Yao hear the thunder during the day will start to cry. Ha Ha Ha...."

"That is because I am a child. It is normal for child to be afraid of thunder. But it is not normal for adult to be afraid of the dark."

"Naughty child. Who taught you that?"

"Father"

Zheng Xie, you wait! He He thought while gnashing her teeth.

Poor Zheng Xie. In fact, he said the previous sentence while comforting his daughter. The sentence after is what his clever daughter interpreted.

Xiao He He continue to rival with Zheng Zhu Yao leisurely.

"Daddy, come with me to the zoo today."

"But I have agreed to go with your mother to see the exhibition. If you want, you can also go together."

"But I am a child ah. Adults should give in to the child?"

"Yes ah. Because you are a child, so you have to respect the adults."

"Okay." Zheng Yao Yao unhappily agreed. "Well daddy, can I sleep tonight together with you?"

"You go and ask your mother. If she agrees, you can sleep among us."

"Do not want mother. Just the two of us."

"....."

Caught in my Own Trap Special: Life After Marriage – Part 3

I wonder if Xiao He He will get her wish and have the 2nd child? What funny story is in for our reading today? Enjoy the read!

Caught in my Own Trap Special: Life After Marriage – Part 3

Part 6:

When He He was once again ‘wrestling’ with her daughter, she angrily went for a haircut.

The hairdresser just had a heartbreak. In the lovelorn eyes, the whole world will suffer heartbreaks.

And he thought that He He because of failed love affair, went to take a haircut. And because of that, the long hair that He He kept for so many years were accidentally cut.

He He was in tears.

Later, the hairdresser finally ended up cutting her hair just like Audrey Hepburn. He He already is petite in her physique. And she likes to dress in shirt, jeans and sneakers. Now, looking into the mirror, she looks like a small boy.

Fortunately, Zheng Xie was away on a business trip and would only return tomorrow night. He He had a day or two to adapt to her new hairstyle.

The next night, when Zheng Xie got home, He He had long ago fell asleep.

She stumbled to get up, rubbed her eyes and said: “You are back. Are you tired from your travel?”

“Exhausted. Over the past fourteen hours, rushing from one place to another.”

“I will prepare the bath water for you. Do you want some supper? I will heat up food for you.”

Zheng Xie finally saw He He: “Hey”. He exclaimed before saying: “No, I will do it

myself. You continue with your sleep.”

He He very obedient lie down to sleep.

But when she fell asleep, she was again woken up.

The claimed earlier Zheng Xie now look not the least bit tired. Throughout the night, he turned He He over and over again just like a pancake. He bent her and folded her over and then do the twist. Until He He struggling for mercy, then he let go of her.

He He in her unclear and asleep preconscious mind kindly reminded him: “You seems to forget the measure today.”

“Well, is not it?”

Men and women married for a while, most of them are: when the woman walked naked in front of the men, the man will not take much notice. Moreover with someone like Zheng Xie whom have superior self-control. He He is long already accustomed to it.

But she did not understand what the reasons was. Zheng Xie suddenly sprout like an adolescent boy. He had unparalleled interest in her body.

He He lying on the floor while rolled into the bed with her titled ass to find something. Zheng Xie whom just came into the room, suddenly will raised her waist up and throw her onto the bed.....

He He with a snacks on her legs watching the TV while laughing her head off. Zheng Xie would suddenly pinned her on the sofa.....

.....

So with no plan to toss back and forth, as a result, He He got her wish and became pregnant.

With the success that came so easily, He He is confused and is very disturbed. She always think about it but could not think why.

Until her stomach is so large to the extend where her foot becomes invisible from her sight and she is inactive like an elephants she finally understood why.

That day, Zheng Xie helped her with washing her hair suddenly said: “He He,

your hair is growing long. It is blocking your line of sight now. For your convenient, go and get it cut.”

He He said: “It is not long. It had not reached the shoulder.”

“The original hairstyle is much better.”

“That kind of hairstyle is very difficult to maintain. Everyday need to style it.”

“I can help you style it.”

“Looks like a boy.”

“Don’t you like little boy?”

He He finally understand. “You better confessed. In your heart, you like man. No, small boy?”

Zheng Xie: “.....”

“So you actually is a GAY! You cheated my youth!

Zheng Xie: “.....”

“I don’t want to cut my hair anymore. I want to keep my hair long till my heel.”

||

Caught in my Own Trap Special: Life After Marriage – Part 4 (FINAL)

The final part of Caught in my Own Trap Special. It is really time to say goodbye to Xiao He He and Zheng Xie.

Enjoy the read today!

Caught in my Own Trap Special: Life After Marriage – Part 4 (FINAL)

Part 7

This round of pregnancy for He He, from conception to the birth was surprisingly smooth.

It is a very healthy boy. The day when he was born, everyone can finally say: “Yo, this little mouth looks like He He. The smaller nose is quite alike.”

He He is very pleased. Although they went on to say: “Of course, in more than seventy percent of him still look like Xiao Xie when he was a child.”

At home the most authoritative is Father Zheng, Zheng Xie’s father. The glorious task of naming the grandson was entrusted to him and He He’s mother. “Last time, I named Yao Yao. This time, let the grandmother name him, okay?”

He He’s mother in her academic fields had many achievements. Professor moter said: “The more simple the child’s name is, the smoother life would be for him.”

Zheng Xie and his father said: “Yes, for example, the name you gave He He is very good. Out of all the children I know, her name is one of the best.”

He He’s mother thought for a while and said: “Otherwise..... Xiao Xiao? Le Le? Huan Huan? Xiao Xie, which one do you think is better?”

He He was almost in tears as she listen gravely to what Zheng Xie said: “All seems good to me. Dad, what do you think?”

After several discussion, Zheng Grandson, at last, four votes were in favor with one abstention absolute advantage, was named Zheng Le Le. The votes are: Zheng Father, He He’s mother, Zheng Xie and Zheng Zhu You.

And because He He's voice was missing, so her precious child born had to suffer such a tragic. So when she was again authorized to take the pet name for the child, she had to say: "This child from the beginning in my stomach is particularly well-behaved. After birth, do not cry nor give any trouble anyone. Let's just call him "Guai Guai"."

Her request was approved.

When Guai Guai was slightly bigger, the name given finally found the problem.

Zheng Father shouted: "Yao Yao, Guai Guai, come, Grandpa take you out to play."

He He's mother shouted: "Yao Yao, Guai Guai, come back to study."

The confused pedestrians talked about it:

"How these children are named ah? Yao Yao Guai Guai?"

妖怪怪怪 (*pin ying: Yāo yāoguài guài*) – the guai guai after Yao Yao in mandarin, sound like Yao Yao is strange

"The child is so cute, why are they called monster?"

"Nowadays these parents ah, just for themselves, there is really no responsibility for the children. Really no morale."

THE END

|

I hope that everyone had enjoyed this bonus on Xiao He He and Zheng Xie. I had enjoyed translating while reading them. It is indeed very entertaining. Especially the last part today where the naming of the poor boy. So, in the end, He He did get her wish to have another child and it is a boy! Completing the set of a girl and a boy for the Zheng's family.

Hopefully once I am back from my vacation, come September, I would be back with another new novel for everyone. Have a great month of August everyone! I am sure I will miss translation as much as most of you would miss the daily read. Stay healthy and safe.